368

THE NEW

TESTAMENT

OF OUR

LORD AND SAVIOUR

JESUS CHRIST.

TRANSLATED OUT OF THE

ORIGINAL GREEK,

AND

With the former TRANSLATIONS
diligently compared and revised,

By His Majesty's special Command.

Appointed to be read in CHURCHES.

CAMBRIDGE,
Printed by *John Archdeacon* Printer to the UNIVER[illegible]
And sold by *John, Francis & Charles* Kn[illegible]
White, and *Charles Dilly*, in London; [illegible]
Merrill, in Cambridge. [illegible]

CUM PRIVILEGIO.

Price 8*d.* unbound

The Order of all the Books of the New Testament, with their proper Names, and Number of Chapters.

Book	Chapters
MATTHEW hath Chapters	28
Mark	16
Luke	24
John	21
The Acts	28
The Epistle to the Romans	16
I. Corinthians	16
II. Corinthians	13
Galatians	6
Ephesians	6
Philippians	4
Colossians	4
I. Thessalonians	5
II. Thessalonians hath Chap.	3
I. Timothy	6
II. Timothy	4
Titus	3
Philemon	1
To the Hebrews	13
The Epistle of James	5
I. Peter	5
II. Peter	3
I. John	5
II. John	1
III. John	1
Jude	1
Revelation	22

CHAP. I.

The genealogy of Christ.

THE book of the generation of Jeſus Chriſt, the ſon of David, the ſon of Abraham.

2 Abraham begat Iſaac; and Iſaac begat Jacob; and Jacob begat Judas and his brethren;

3 And Judas begat Phares and Zara of Thamar; and Phares begat Eſrom; and Eſrom begat Aram;

4 And Aram begat Aminadab; and Aminadab begat Naaſſon; and Naaſſon begat Salmon;

5 And Salmon begat Booz of Rachab; and Booz begat Obed of Ruth; and Obed begat Jeſſe;

6 And Jeſſe begat David the king; and David the king begat Solomon of her *that had been the wife* of Urias;

7 And Solomon begat Roboam; and Roboam begat Abia; and Abia begat Aſa;

8 And Aſa begat Joſaphat; and Joſaphat begat Joram; and Joram begat Ozias;

9 And Ozias begat Joatham; and Joatham begat Achaz; and Achaz begat Ezekias;

10 And Ezekias begat Manaſſes; and Manaſſes begat Amon; and Amon begat Joſias;

11 And Joſias begat Jechonias and his brethren, about the time they were carried away to Babylon:

12 And after they were brought to Babylon, Jechonias begat Salathiel; and Salathiel begat Zorobabel;

13 And Zorobabel begat Abiud; and Abiud begat Eliakim; and Eliakim begat Azor;

14 And Azor begat Sadoc; and Sadoc begat Achim; and Achim begat Eliud;

15 And Eliud begat Eleazar; and Eleazar begat Matthan; and Matthan begat Jacob;

16 And Jacob begat Joſeph the huſband of Mary, of whom was born Jeſus, who is called Chriſt.

17 So all the generations from Abraham to David *are* fourteen generations; and from David until the carrying away into Babylon *are* fourteen generations; and from the carrying away into Babylon unto Chriſt *are* fourteen generations.

18 ¶ Now the birth of Jeſus Chriſt was on this wiſe: When as his mother Mary was eſpouſed to Joſeph, before they came together, ſhe was found with child of the Holy Ghoſt.

19 Then Joſeph her huſband, being a juſt *man*, and not willing to make her a publick example, was minded to put her away privily.

20 But while he thought on theſe things, behold, the angel of the Lord appeared unto him in a dream, ſaying, Joſeph, thou ſon of David, fear not to take unto thee Mary thy wife; for that which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghoſt.

21 And ſhe ſhall bring forth a ſon, and thou ſhalt call his name JESUS: for he ſhall ſave his people from their ſins.

22 Now all this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was ſpoken of the Lord by the prophet, ſaying,

23 Behold, a virgin ſhall be with child, and ſhall bring forth

a ſon, and they ſhall call his
name Emmanuel, which being
interpreted, is, God with us.
24 Then Joſeph being raiſed
from ſleep, did as the angel of
the Lord had bidden him, and
took unto him his wife:
25 And knew her not, till
ſhe had brought forth her firſt-
born ſon; and he called his
name JESUS.

CHAP. II.

The eaſtern Magi worſhip Chriſt.

NOW when Jeſus was born
in Bethlehem of Judea,
in the days of Herod the king,
behold, there came wiſe men
from the eaſt to Jeruſalem,
2 Saying, Where is he that is
born King of the Jews; for we
have ſeen his ſtar in the eaſt,
and are come to worſhip him.
3 When Herod the king had
heard *theſe things*, he was troub-
led, and all Jeruſalem with him.
4 And when he had gathered
all the chief prieſts and ſcribes
of the people together, he de-
manded of them where Chriſt
ſhould be born.
5 And they ſaid unto him, In
Bethlehem of Judea: for thus
it is written by the prophet,
6 And thou, Bethlehem, *in*
the land of Juda, art not the
leaſt among the princes of
Juda: for out of thee ſhall
come a Governor that ſhall
rule my people Iſrael.
7 Then Herod, when he had
privily called the wiſe men,
enquired of them diligently
what time the ſtar appeared.
8 And he ſent them to Beth-
lehem, and ſaid, Go, and ſearch
diligently for the young child;
and when ye have found *him*,
bring me word again, that I
may come and worſhip him alſo.
9 When they had heard the
king, they departed; and, lo,
the ſtar which they ſaw in the
eaſt, went before them, till it
came and ſtood over where the
young child was.
10 When they ſaw the ſtar,
they rejoiced with exceeding
great joy.
11 ¶ And when they were
come into the houſe, they ſaw
the young child with Mary his
mother, and fell down and wor-
ſhipped him: and when they
had opened their treaſures, they
preſented unto him gifts; gold,
and frankincenſe, and myrrh.
12 And being warned of God
in a dream, that they ſhould
not return to Herod, they de-
parted into their own country
another way.
13 And when they were de-
parted, behold, the angel of the
Lord appeareth to Joſeph in a
dream, ſaying, Ariſe, and take
the young child and his mother,
and flee into Egypt, and be thou
there until I bring thee word:
for Herod will ſeek the young
child to deſtroy him.
14 When he aroſe, he took the
young child and his mother by
night, and departed into Egypt:
15 And was there until the
death of Herod: that it might
be fulfilled which was ſpoken
of the Lord by the prophet,
ſaying, Out of Egypt have I
called my ſon.
16 ¶ Then Herod, when he
ſaw that he was mocked of
the wiſe men, was exceeding
wroth, and ſent forth, and ſlew
all the children that were in
Bethlehem, and in all the coaſts
thereof, from two years old and
under, according to the time
which he had diligently en-
quired of the wiſe men.
17 Then was fulfilled that

which was ſpoken by Jeremy
the prophet, ſaying,
18 In Rama was there a voice
heard, lamentation, and weep-
ing, and great mourning, Ra-
chel weeping *for* her children;
and would not be comforted,
becauſe they are not.
19 ¶ But when Herod was
dead, behold, an angel of the
Lord appeareth in a dream to
Joſeph in Egypt,
20 Saying, Ariſe, and take the
young child and his mother,
and go into the land of Iſrael;
for they are dead which ſought
the young child's life.
21 And he aroſe, and took
the young child and his mother,
and came into the land of Iſrael.
22 But when he heard that
Archelaus did reign in Judea,
in the room of his father He-
rod, he was afraid to go thi-
ther: notwithſtanding, being
warned of God in a dream, he
turned aſide into the parts of
Galilee:
23 And he came and dwelt
in a city called Nazareth: that
it might be fulfilled which was
ſpoken by the prophets, He
ſhall be called a Nazarene.

CHAP. III.

Preaching of John the Baptiſt.

IN thoſe days came John the
Baptiſt, preaching in the
wilderneſs of Judea,
2 And ſaying, Repent ye:
for the kingdom of heaven is
at hand.
3 For this is he that was
ſpoken of by the prophet
Eſaias, ſaying, The voice of one
crying in the wilderneſs, Pre-
pare ye the way of the Lord,
make his paths ſtraight.
4 And the ſame John had his
raiment of camel's hair, and a
leathern girdle about his loins;
and his meat was locuſts and
wild honey.
5 Then went out to him Je-
ruſalem, and all Judea, and all
the region round about Jordan,
6 And were baptized of him
in Jordan, confeſſing their ſins.
7 ¶ But when he ſaw many
of the Phariſees and Sadducees
come to his baptiſm, he ſaid
unto them, O generation of vi-
pers, who hath warned you to
flee from the wrath to come?
8 Bring forth therefore fruits
meet for repentance:
9 And think not to ſay with-
in yourſelves, We have Abra-
ham to *our* father: for I ſay
unto you, That God is able of
theſe ſtones to raiſe up child-
ren unto Abraham.
10 And now alſo the ax is
laid unto the root of the trees:
therefore every tree which
bringeth not forth good fruit
is hewn down, and caſt into
the fire.
11 I indeed baptize you with
water unto repentance; but he
that cometh after me is migh-
tier than I, whoſe ſhoes I am
not worthy to bear: he ſhall
baptize you with the Holy
Ghoſt, and *with* fire:
12 Whoſe fan *is* in his hand,
and he will throughly purge
his floor, and gather his wheat
into the garner: but he will
burn up the chaff with un-
quenchable fire.
13 ¶ Then cometh Jeſus from
Galilee to Jordan unto John,
to be baptized of him.
14 But John forbad him,
ſaying, I have need to be bap-
tized of thee, and comeſt thou
to me?
15 And Jeſus anſwering ſaid
unto him, Suffer *it to be ſo* now;
for thus it becometh us to fulfil

all righteouſneſs. Then he ſuf-
fered him.
16 And Jeſus, when he was
baptized, went up ſtraightway
out of the water: and, lo, the
heavens were opened unto him,
and he ſaw the Spirit of God
deſcending like a dove, and
lighting upon him:
17 And, lo, a voice from hea-
ven, ſaying, This is my beloved
Son, in whom I am well pleaſed.

CHAP. IV.

Chriſt's faſting and temptation.

THEN was Jeſus led up of
the ſpirit into the wilder-
neſs, to be tempted of the devil.
2 And when he had faſted
forty days and forty nights, he
was afterward an hungred.
3 And when the tempter
came to him, he ſaid, If thou be
the Son of God, command that
theſe ſtones be made bread.
4 But he anſwered and ſaid,
It is written, Man ſhall not live
by bread alone, but by every
word that proceedeth out of
the mouth of God.
5 Then the devil taketh him
up into the holy city, and ſet-
teth him on a pinnacle of the
temple,
6 And ſaith unto him, If
thou be the Son of God, caſt
thyſelf down: for it is written,
He ſhall give his angels charge
concerning thee, and in *their*
hands they ſhall bear thee up,
leſt at any time thou daſh thy
foot againſt a ſtone.
7 Jeſus ſaid unto him, It is
written again, Thou ſhalt not
tempt the Lord thy God.
8 Again the devil taketh him
up into an exceeding high
mountain, and ſheweth him all
the kingdoms of the world, and
the glory of them;
9 And ſaith unto him, All
theſe things will I give thee,
if thou wilt fall down and
worſhip me.
10 Then ſaith Jeſus unto
him, Get thee hence, Satan:
for it is written, Thou ſhalt
worſhip the Lord thy God, and
him only ſhalt thou ſerve.
11 Then the devil leaveth
him, and, behold, angels came
and miniſtered unto him.
12 ¶ Now when Jeſus had
heard that John was caſt into
priſon, he departed into Galilee;
13 And leaving Nazareth, he
came and dwelt in Capernaum,
which is upon the ſea coaſt, in
the borders of Zabulon and
Nephthalim:
14 That it might be fulfilled
which was ſpoken by Eſaias the
prophet, ſaying,
15 The land of Zabulon, and
the land of Nephthalim, *by* the
way of the ſea, beyond Jordan,
Galilee of the Gentiles;
16 The people which ſat in
darkneſs ſaw great light; and
to them which ſat in the region
and ſhadow of death, light is
ſprung up.
17 ¶ From that time Jeſus
began to preach, and to ſay,
Repent: for the kingdom of
heaven is at hand.
18 ¶ And Jeſus walking by
the ſea of Galilee, ſaw two
brethren, Simon called Peter,
and Andrew his brother, caſt-
ing a net into the ſea: for
they were fiſhers.
19 And he ſaith unto them,
Follow me, and I will make
you fiſhers of men.
20 And they ſtraightway left
their nets, and followed him.
21 And going on from thence,
he ſaw other two brethren,
James *the ſon* of Zebedee, and
John his brother, in a ſhip
with

with Zebedee their father,
mending their nets: and he
called them.
22 And they immediately
left the ſhip and their father,
and followed him.
23 ¶ And Jeſus went about
all Galilee, teaching in their
ſynagogues, and preaching the
goſpel of the kingdom, and
healing all manner of ſickneſs,
and all manner of diſeaſe
among the people.
24 And his fame went
throughout all Syria: and they
brought unto him all ſick peo-
ple that were taken with divers
diſeaſes and torments, and
thoſe which were poſſeſſed with
devils, and thoſe which were
lunatick, and thoſe that had
the palſy; and he healed them.
25 And there followed him
great multitudes of people from
Galilee, and *from* Decapolis,
and *from* Jeruſalem, and *from*
Judea, and *from* beyond Jordan.

CHAP. V.

Who are bleſſed.

AND ſeeing the multitudes,
he went up into a moun-
tain: and when he was ſet, his
diſciples came unto him:
2 And he opened his mouth,
and taught them, ſaying,
3 ¶ Bleſſed *are* the poor in
ſpirit: for their's is the king-
dom of heaven.
4 Bleſſed *are* they that
mourn: for they ſhall be com-
forted.
5 Bleſſed *are* the meek: for
they ſhall inherit the earth.
6 Bleſſed *are* they which do
hunger and thirſt after righte-
ouſneſs: for they ſhall be filled.
7 Bleſſed *are* the merciful:
for they ſhall obtain mercy.
8 Bleſſed *are* the pure in
heart: for they ſhall ſee God.
9 Bleſſed *are* the peace-
makers: for they ſhall be
called the children of God.
10 Bleſſed *are* they which
are perſecuted for righteouſ-
neſs' ſake: for their's is the
kingdom of heaven.
11 Bleſſed are ye when *men*
ſhall revile you, and perſecute
you, and ſhall ſay all manner
of evil againſt you falſely for
my ſake.
12 Rejoice, and be exceed-
ing glad: for great *is* your re-
ward in heaven: for ſo perſe-
cuted they the prophets which
were before you.
13 ¶ Ye are the ſalt of the
earth: but if the ſalt have loſt
his ſavour, wherewith ſhall it
be ſalted? it is thenceforth
good for nothing, but to be
caſt out, and to be trodden un-
der foot of men.
14 Ye are the light of the
world. A city that is ſet on an
hill cannot be hid.
15 Neither do men light a
candle, and put it under a
buſhel, but on a candleſtick;
and it giveth light unto all
that are in the houſe.
16 Let your light ſo ſhine
before men, that they may ſee
your good works, and glorify
your Father which is in heaven.
17 ¶ Think not that I am
come to deſtroy the law, or
the prophets: I am not come
to deſtroy, but to fulfil.
18 For verily I ſay unto you,
Till heaven and earth paſs, one
jot or one tittle ſhall in no wiſe
paſs from the law, till all be
fulfilled.
19 Whoſoever therefore ſhall
break one of theſe leaſt com-
mandments, and ſhall teach
men ſo, he ſhall be called the
leaſt in the kingdom of heaven:

but whoſoever ſhall do, and
teach *them*, the ſame ſhall be
called great in the kingdom of
heaven.
20 For I ſay unto you, That
except your righteouſneſs ſhall
exceed *the righteouſneſs* of the
ſcribes and Phariſees, ye ſhall
in no caſe enter into the king-
dom of heaven.
21 ¶ Ye have heard that it
was ſaid by them of old time,
Thou ſhalt not kill; and who-
ſoever ſhall kill, ſhall be in dan-
ger of the judgement:
22 But I ſay unto you, That
whoſoever is angry with his
brother without a cauſe, ſhall
be in danger of the judgement:
and whoſoever ſhall ſay to his
brother, Raca, ſhall be in dan-
ger of the council: but who-
ſoever ſhall ſay, Thou fool,
ſhall be in danger of hell fire.
23 Therefore, if thou bring
thy gift to the altar, and there
remembereſt that thy brother
hath ought againſt thee;
24 Leave there thy gift be-
fore the altar, and go thy way;
firſt be reconciled to thy bro-
ther, and then come and offer
thy gift.
25 Agree with thine adver-
ſary quickly, whiles thou art
in the way with him: leſt at
any time the adverſary deliver
thee to the judge, and the
judge deliver thee to the
officer, and thou be caſt into
priſon.
26 Verily I ſay unto thee,
Thou ſhalt by no means come
out thence, till thou haſt paid
the uttermoſt farthing.
27 ¶ Ye have heard that it
was ſaid by them of old time,
Thou ſhalt not commit adul-
tery:
28 But I ſay unto you, That
whoſoever looketh on a wo-
man to luſt after her, hath
committed adultery with her
already in his heart.
29 And if thy right eye of-
fend thee, pluck it out, and
caſt *it* from thee: for it is pro-
fitable for thee that one of thy
members ſhould periſh, and
not *that* thy whole body ſhould
be caſt into hell.
30 And if thy right hand of-
fend thee, cut it off, and caſt *it*
from thee: for it is profitable
for thee that one of thy mem-
bers ſhould periſh, and not
that thy whole body ſhould be
caſt into hell.
31 It hath been ſaid, Whoſo-
ever ſhall put away his wife, let
him give her a writing of di-
vorcement:
32 But I ſay unto you, That
whoſoever ſhall put away his
wife, ſaving for the cauſe of
fornication, cauſeth her to com-
mit adultery: and whoſoever
ſhall marry her that is divorc-
ed, committeth adultery.
33 ¶ Again, ye have heard
that it hath been ſaid by them
of old time, Thou ſhalt not
forſwear thyſelf, but ſhalt per-
form unto the Lord thine
oaths:
34 But I ſay unto you, Swear
not at all; neither by heaven,
for it is God's throne:
35 Nor by the earth, for it is
his footſtool: neither by Jeru-
ſalem, for it is the city of the
great King.
36 Neither ſhalt thou ſwear
by thy head, becauſe thou
canſt not make one hair white
or black.
37 But let your communica-
tion be, Yea, yea, Nay, nay;
for whatſoever is more than
theſe cometh of evil.

38 ¶ Ye have heard that it
hath been ſaid, An eye for an
eye, and a tooth for a tooth:
39 But I ſay unto you, That
ye reſiſt not evil: but whoſo-
ever ſhall ſmite thee on thy
right cheek, turn to him the
other alſo.
40 And if any man will ſue
thee at the law, and take away
thy coat, let him have *thy* cloke
alſo.
41 And whoſoever ſhall com-
pel thee to go a mile, go with
him twain.
42 Give to him that aſketh
thee; and from him that would
borrow of thee turn not thou
away.
43 ¶ Ye have heard that it
hath been ſaid, Thou ſhalt
love thy neighbour, and hate
thine enemy.
44 But I ſay unto you, Love
your enemies, bleſs them that
curſe you, do good to them that
hate you, and pray for them
which deſpitefully uſe you,
and perſecute you;
45 That ye may be the chil-
dren of your Father which is
in heaven: for he maketh his
ſun to riſe on the evil and on
the good, and ſendeth rain on
the juſt and on the unjuſt.
46 For if ye love them which
love you, what reward have
ye? do not even the publicans
the ſame?
47 And if ye ſalute your bre-
thren only, what do ye more
than others? do not even the
publicans ſo?
48 Be ye therefore perfect,
even as your Father which is
in heaven is perfect.

CHAP. VI.

Of almſgiving and prayer.

TAKE heed that ye do not
your alms before men, to
be ſeen of them: otherwiſe ye
have no reward of your Father
which is in heaven.
2 Therefore when thou doeſt
thine alms, do not ſound a
trumpet before thee, as the
hypocrites do, in the ſyna-
gogues, and in the ſtreets, that
they may have glory of men.
Verily I ſay unto you, They
have their reward.
3 But when thou doeſt alms,
let not thy left hand know
what thy right hand doeth:
4 That thine alms may be in
ſecret: and thy Father which
ſeeth in ſecret himſelf ſhall
reward thee openly.
5 ¶ And when thou prayeſt,
thou ſhalt not be as the hypo-
crites *are:* for they love to
pray ſtanding in the ſynagogues,
and in the corners of the
ſtreets, that they may be ſeen
of men. Verily I ſay unto you,
They have their reward.
6 But thou, when thou pray-
eſt, enter into thy cloſet, and
when thou haſt ſhut thy door,
pray to thy Father which is in
ſecret; and thy Father which
ſeeth in ſecret ſhall reward
thee openly.
7 But when ye pray, uſe not
vain repetitions, as the heathen
do: for they think that they
ſhall be heard for their much
ſpeaking.
8 Be not ye therefore like
unto them: for your Father
knoweth what things ye have
need of before ye aſk him.
9 After this manner therefore
pray ye: Our Father which art in
heaven, Hallowed be thy name.
10 Thy kingdom come. Thy
will be done in earth as *it is* in
heaven.
11 Give us this day our daily
bread.

12 And forgive us our debts,
as we forgive our debtors.
13 And lead us not into
temptation, but deliver us from
evil: For thine is the kingdom,
and the power, and the glory,
for ever. Amen.
14 ¶ For, if ye forgive men
their treſpaſſes, your heavenly
Father will alſo forgive you:
15 But if ye forgive not men
their treſpaſſes, neither will
your Father forgive your treſ-
paſſes.
16 ¶ Moreover, when ye
faſt, be not as the hypocrites,
of a ſad countenance: for they
disfigure their faces, that they
may appear unto men to faſt.
Verily I ſay unto you, They
have their reward.
17 But thou, when thou
faſteſt, anoint thine head, and
waſh thy face;
18 That thou appear not unto
men to faſt, but unto thy Fa-
ther which is in ſecret: and thy
Father, which ſeeth in ſecret,
ſhall reward thee openly.
19 ¶ Lay not up for your-
ſelves treaſures upon earth,
where moth and ruſt doth
corrupt, and where thieves
break through and ſteal:
20 But lay up for yourſelves
treaſures in heaven, where nei-
ther moth nor ruſt doth cor-
rupt, and where thieves do not
break through nor ſteal:
21 For where your treaſure
is, there will your heart be alſo.
22 The light of the body is
the eye: if therefore thine eye
be ſingle, thy whole body ſhall
be full of light.
23 But if thine eye be evil,
thy whole body ſhall be full of
darkneſs. If therefore the light
that is in thee be darkneſs, how
great *is* that darkneſs!
24 ¶ No man can ſerve two
maſters: for either he will
hate the one, and love the
other; or elſe he will hold to
the one, and deſpiſe the other.
Ye cannot ſerve God and
mammon.
25 Therefore I ſay unto you,
Take no thought for your
life, what ye ſhall eat, or what
ye ſhall drink; nor yet for
your body, what ye ſhall put
on: Is not the life more than
meat, and the body than rai-
ment?
26 Behold the fowls of the
air: for they ſow not, neither
do they reap, nor gather into
barns; yet your heavenly Fa-
ther feedeth them. Are ye not
much better than they?
27 Which of you by taking
thought can add one cubit
unto his ſtature?
28 And why take ye thought
for raiment? Conſider the li-
lies of the field, how they grow;
they toil not, neither do they
ſpin:
29 And yet I ſay unto you,
That even Solomon in all his
glory was not arrayed like one
of theſe.
30 Wherefore, if God ſo
clothe the graſs of the field,
which to day is, and to mor-
row is caſt into the oven, *ſhall
be* not much more *clothe* you,
O ye of little faith?
31 Therefore take no thought,
ſaying, What ſhall we eat? or
what ſhall we drink? or where-
withal ſhall we be clothed?
32 (For after all theſe things
do the Gentiles ſeek:) for
your heavenly Father knoweth
that ye have need of all theſe
things.
33 But ſeek ye firſt the king-
dom of God, and his righteouſ-
neſs,

ness, and all these things shall
be added unto you.
34 Take therefore no thought
for the morrow: for the morrow
shall take thought for the
things of itself. Sufficient unto
the day *is* the evil thereof.

CHAP. VII.

Christ endeth his sermon.

JUDGE not, that ye be not
judged.
2 For with what judgement
ye judge, ye shall be judged;
and with what measure ye mete,
it shall be measured to you
again.
3 And why beholdest thou
the mote that is in thy brother's
eye, but considerest not
the beam that is in thine own
eye?
4 Or how wilt thou say to
thy brother, Let me pull out
the mote out of thine eye; and,
behold, a beam *is* in thine own
eye?
5 Thou hypocrite, first cast
out the beam out of thine own
eye; and then shalt thou see
clearly to cast out the mote
out of thy brother's eye.
6 ¶ Give not that which is
holy unto the dogs, neither cast
ye your pearls before swine;
lest they trample them under
their feet, and turn again and
rend you.
7 ¶ Ask, and it shall be given
you; seek, and ye shall
find; knock, and it shall be
opened unto you:
8 For every one that asketh,
receiveth; and he that seeketh,
findeth; and to him that knocketh,
it shall be opened.
9 Or what man is there of
you, whom if his son ask bread,
will he give him a stone?
10 Or if he ask a fish, will he
give him a serpent?
11 If ye then being evil,
know how to give good gifts
unto your children, how much
more shall your Father which
is in heaven give good things
to them that ask him?
12 Therefore all things whatsoever
ye would that men
should do to you, do ye even
so to them: for this is the law
and the prophets.
13 ¶ Enter ye in at the strait
gate; for wide *is* the gate, and
broad *is* the way that leadeth
to destruction, and many there
be which go in thereat:
14 Because strait *is* the gate,
and narrow *is* the way which
leadeth unto life, and few there
be that find it.
15 ¶ Beware of false prophets,
which come to you in
sheep's clothing, but inwardly
they are ravening wolves.
16 Ye shall know them by their
fruits: Do men gather grapes
of thorns, or figs of thistles?
17 Even so every good tree
bringeth forth good fruit; but
a corrupt tree bringeth forth
evil fruit.
18 A good tree cannot bring
forth evil fruit; neither *can* a
corrupt tree bring forth good
fruit.
19 Every tree that bringeth
not forth good fruit, is hewn
down, and cast into the fire.
20 Wherefore by their fruits
ye shall know them.
21 ¶ Not every one that saith
unto me, Lord, Lord, shall
enter into the kingdom of heaven;
but he that doeth the
will of my Father which is in
heaven.
22 Many will say to me in
that day, Lord, Lord, have we
not prophesied in thy name?
and in thy name have cast out
devils?

devils? and in thy name done
many wonderful works?
23 And then will I profeſs
unto them, I never knew you:
depart from me, ye that work
iniquity.
24 ¶ Therefore, whoſoever
heareth theſe ſayings of mine,
and doeth them, I will liken
him unto a wiſe man which
built his houſe upon a rock:
25 And the rain deſcended,
and the floods came, and the
winds blew, and beat upon that
houſe; and it fell not: for it
was founded upon a rock.
26 And every one that hear-
eth theſe ſayings of mine, and
doeth them not, ſhall be liken-
ed unto a fooliſh man which
built his houſe upon the ſand:
27 And the rain deſcended,
and the floods came, and the
winds blew, and beat upon that
houſe; and it fell: and great
was the fall of it.
28 And it came to paſs, when
Jeſus had ended theſe ſayings,
the people were aſtoniſhed at
his doctrine:
29 For he taught them as *one*
having authority, and not as
the ſcribes.

CHAP. VIII.

Chriſt's miracles.

WHEN he was come
down from the moun-
tain, great multitudes followed
him.
2 And, behold, there came a
leper and worſhipped him, ſay-
ing, Lord, if thou wilt, thou
canſt make me clean.
3 And Jeſus put forth *his*
hand, and touched him, ſay-
ing, I will; be thou clean. And
immediately his leproſy was
cleanſed.
4 And Jeſus ſaith unto him,
See thou tell no man; but go
thy way, ſhew thyſelf to the
prieſt, and offer the gift that
Moſes commanded, for a teſti-
mony unto them.
5 ¶ And when Jeſus was en-
tered into Capernaum, there
came unto him a centurion,
beſeeching him,
6 And ſaying, Lord, my ſer-
vant lieth at home ſick of the
palſy, grievouſly tormented.
7 And Jeſus ſaith unto him,
I will come and heal him.
8 The centurion anſwered
and ſaid, Lord, I am not wor-
thy that thou ſhouldeſt come
under my roof: but ſpeak the
word only, and my ſervant
ſhall be healed.
9 For I am a man under au-
thority, having ſoldiers under
me: and I ſay to this *man*, Go,
and he goeth; and to another,
Come, and he cometh; and to
my ſervant, Do this, and he
doeth *it*.
10 When Jeſus heard *it*, he
marvelled, and ſaid to them
that followed, Verily I ſay unto
you, I have not found ſo great
faith, no, not in Iſrael.
11 And I ſay unto you, That
many ſhall come from the eaſt
and weſt, and ſhall ſit down
with Abraham, and Iſaac, and
Jacob, in the kingdom of heaven.
12 But the children of the
kingdom ſhall be caſt out into
outer darkneſs: there ſhall be
weeping and gnaſhing of teeth.
13 And Jeſus ſaid unto the
centurion, Go thy way; and
as thou haſt believed, ſo be it
done unto thee. And his ſer-
vant was healed in the ſelf-
ſame hour.
14 ¶ And when Jeſus was
come into Peter's houſe, he ſaw
his wife's mother laid, and ſick
of a fever.

15 And

15 And he touched her hand,
and the fever left her: and ſhe
aroſe and miniſtered unto them.
16 ¶ When the even was
come, they brought unto him
many that were poſſeſſed with
devils: and he caſt out the ſpi-
rits with *his* word, and healed
all that were ſick:
17 That it might be fulfilled
which was ſpoken by Eſaias
the prophet, ſaying, Himſelf
took our infirmities, and bare
our ſickneſſes.
18 Now when Jeſus ſaw great
multitudes about him, he gave
commandment to depart unto
the other ſide.
19 And a certain ſcribe came,
and ſaid unto him, Maſter, I
will follow thee whitherſoever
thou goeſt.
20 And Jeſus ſaith unto him,
The foxes have holes, and the
birds of the air *have* neſts; but
the Son of man hath not where
to lay *his* head.
21 And another of his diſci-
ples ſaid unto him, Lord, ſuf-
fer me firſt to go and bury my
father.
22 But Jeſus ſaid unto him,
Follow me, and let the dead
bury their dead.
23 ¶ And when he was en-
tered into a ſhip, his diſciples
followed him.
24 And, behold, there aroſe
a great tempeſt in the ſea, inſo-
much that the ſhip was cover-
ed with the waves: but he was
aſleep.
25 And his diſciples came to
him, and awoke him, ſaying,
Lord, ſave us; we periſh.
26 And he ſaith unto them,
Why are ye fearful, O ye of
little faith? Then he aroſe and
rebuked the winds and the ſea;
and there was a great calm.
27 But the men marvelled,
ſaying, What manner of man is
this, that even the winds and
the ſea obey him!
28 ¶ And when he was come
to the other ſide, into the coun-
try of the Gergeſenes, there
met him two poſſeſſed with de-
vils, coming out of the tombs,
exceeding fierce, ſo that no man
might paſs by that way.
29 And, behold, they cried
out, ſaying, What have we to
do with thee, Jeſus, thou Son of
God? art thou come hither to
torment us before the time?
30 And there was a good
way off from them an herd of
many ſwine feeding.
31 So the devils beſought
him, ſaying, If thou caſt us
out, ſuffer us to go away into
the herd of ſwine.
32 And he ſaid unto them,
Go. And when they were
come out, they went into the
herd of ſwine: and, behold, the
whole herd of ſwine ran vio-
lently down a ſteep place into
the ſea, and periſhed in the
waters.
33 And they that kept them
fled, and went their ways into
the city, and told every thing,
and what was befallen to the
poſſeſſed of the devils.
34 And, behold, the whole
city came out to meet Jeſus:
and when they ſaw him, they
beſought *him* that he would
depart out of their coaſts.

CHAP. IX.

Matthew, the apoſtle called.

AND he entered into a ſhip,
and paſſed over, and came
into his own city.
2 And, behold, they brought
to him a man ſick of the palſy,
lying on a bed: and Jeſus, ſeeing
their faith, ſaid unto the ſick of
the

the palſy, Son, be of good cheer,
thy ſins be forgiven thee.
3 And, behold, certain of the
ſcribes ſaid within themſelves,
This *man* blaſphemeth.
4 And Jeſus knowing their
thoughts, ſaid, Wherefore think
ye evil in your hearts?
5 For whether is eaſier, to ſay,
Thy ſins be forgiven thee; or
to ſay, Ariſe, and walk?
6 But that ye may know that
the Son of man hath power on
earth to forgive ſins, (then
ſaith he to the ſick of the palſy,)
Ariſe, take up thy bed, and go
unto thine houſe.
7 And he aroſe and depart-
ed to his houſe.
8 But when the multitudes
ſaw *it*, they marvelled, and
glorified God, which had given
ſuch power unto men.
9 ¶ And as Jeſus paſſed
forth from thence, he ſaw a man,
named Matthew, ſitting at the
receipt of cuſtom: and he ſaith
unto him, Follow me. And
he aroſe, and followed him.
10 ¶ And it came to paſs, as
Jeſus ſat at meat in the houſe,
behold, many publicans and
ſinners came and ſat down
with him and his diſciples.
11 And when the Phariſees
ſaw *it*, they ſaid unto his diſci-
ples, Why eateth your Maſter
with publicans and ſinners?
12 But when Jeſus heard
that, he ſaid unto them, They
that be whole need not a phy-
ſician, but they that are ſick.
13 But go ye and learn what
that meaneth, I will have mer-
cy, and not ſacrifice; for I am
not come to call the righteous,
but ſinners to repentance.
14 ¶ Then came to him the
diſciples of John, ſaying, Why
do we and the Phariſees faſt
oft, but thy diſciples faſt not?
15 And Jeſus ſaid unto them,
Can the children of the bride-
chamber mourn as long as the
bridegroom is with them? but
the days will come when the
bridegroom ſhall be taken from
them, and then ſhall they faſt.
16 No man putteth a piece
of new cloth unto an old gar-
ment: for that which is put in
to fill it up, taketh from the
garment, and the rent is made
worſe.
17 Neither do men put new
wine into old bottles: elſe the
bottles break, and the wine
runneth out, and the bottles
periſh: but they put new wine
into new bottles, and both are
preſerved.
18 ¶ While he ſpake theſe
things unto them, behold, there
came a certain ruler, and wor-
ſhipped him, ſaying, My daugh-
ter is even now dead: but come
and lay thy hand upon her, and
ſhe ſhall live.
19 And Jeſus aroſe, and fol-
lowed him, and *ſo did* his diſ-
ciples.
20 ¶ And, behold, a woman
which was diſeaſed with an iſ-
ſue of blood twelve years, came
behind *him*, and touched the
hem of his garment:
21 For ſhe ſaid within her-
ſelf, If I may but touch his
garment, I ſhall be whole.
22 But Jeſus turned him
about, and when he ſaw her, he
ſaid, Daughter, be of good
comfort; thy faith hath made
thee whole. And the woman
was made whole from that
hour.
23 And when Jeſus came in-
to the ruler's houſe, and ſaw
the minſtrels, and the people
making a noiſe,

24 He ſaid unto them, Give
place; for the maid is not dead,
but ſleepeth. And they laugh-
ed him to ſcorn.
25 But when the people were
put forth, he went in, and took
her by the hand, and the maid
aroſe.
26 And the fame hereof went
abroad into all that land.
27 ¶ And when Jeſus depart-
ed thence, two blind men fol-
lowed him, crying, and ſaying,
Thou ſon of David, have mer-
cy on us.
28 And when he was come
into the houſe, the blind men
came to him: and Jeſus ſaith
unto them, Believe ye that I
am able to do this? They ſaid
unto him, Yea, Lord.
29 Then touched he their
eyes, ſaying, According to your
faith be it unto you.
30 And their eyes were open-
ed: and Jeſus ſtraitly charged
them, ſaying, See *that* no man
know *it*.
31 But they, when they were
departed, ſpread abroad his
fame in all that country.
32 ¶ As they went out, be-
hold, they brought to him a
dumb man poſſeſſed with a
devil.
33 And when the devil was
caſt out, the dumb ſpake: and
the multitudes marvelled, ſay-
ing, It was never ſo ſeen in Iſ-
rael.
34 But the Phariſees ſaid, He
caſteth out devils through the
prince of the devils.
35 And Jeſus went about all
the cities and villages, teach-
ing in their ſynagogues, and
preaching the goſpel of the
kingdom, and healing every
ſickneſs and every diſeaſe
among the people.
36 ¶ But when he ſaw the
multitudes, he was moved with
compaſſion on them, becauſe
they fainted, and were ſcatter-
ed abroad, as ſheep having no
ſhepherd.
37 Then ſaith he unto his
diſciples, The harveſt truly *is*
plenteous, but the labourers
are few;
38 Pray ye therefore the Lord
of the harveſt, that he will ſend
forth labourers into his harveſt.

CHAP. X.

The apoſtles ſent to do miracles.

AND when he had called
unto *him* his twelve diſ-
ciples, he gave them power
againſt unclean ſpirits, to caſt
them out, and to heal all man-
ner of ſickneſs, and all manner
of diſeaſe.
2 Now the names of the
twelve apoſtles are theſe; The
firſt, Simon, who is called Pe-
ter, and Andrew his brother;
James *the ſon* of Zebedee, and
John his brother;
3 Philip, and Bartholomew;
Thomas, and Matthew the
publican: James *the ſon* of Al-
pheus, and Lebbeus, whoſe
ſurname was Thaddeus;
4 Simon the Canaanite, and
Judas Iſcariot, who alſo be-
trayed him.
5 Theſe twelve Jeſus ſent
forth, and commanded them,
ſaying, Go not into the way of
the Gentiles, and into *any* city
of the Samaritans enter ye not:
6 But go rather to the loſt
ſheep of the houſe of Iſrael.
7 And as ye go, preach, ſay-
ing, The kingdom of heaven
is at hand.
8 Heal the ſick, cleanſe the
lepers, raiſe the dead, caſt out
devils: freely ye have received,
freely give.

9 Provide

9 Provide neither gold, nor
ſilver, nor braſs in your purſes,
10 Nor ſcrip for *your* journey,
neither two coats, neither ſhoes,
nor yet ſtaves: for the work-
man is worthy of his meat.
11 And into whatſoever city
or town ye ſhall enter, enquire
who in it is worthy; and there
abide till ye go thence.
12 And when ye come into
an houſe ſalute it.
13 And if the houſe be wor-
thy, let your peace come upon
it: but if it be not worthy, let
your peace return to you.
14 And whoſoever ſhall not
receive you, nor hear your
words; when ye depart out of
that houſe or city, ſhake off
the duſt of your feet.
15 Verily I ſay unto you, It
ſhall be more tolerable for the
land of Sodom and Gomorrha,
in the day of judgement, than
for that city.
16 ¶ Behold, I ſend you
forth as ſheep in the midſt of
wolves: be ye therefore wiſe
as ſerpents, and harmleſs as
doves.
17 But beware of men: for
they will deliver you up to the
councils, and they will ſcourge
you in their ſynagogues;
18 And ye ſhall be brought
before governors and kings for
my ſake, for a teſtimony againſt
them and the Gentiles.
19 But when they deliver you
up, take no thought how or
what ye ſhall ſpeak: for it ſhall
be given you in that ſame hour
what ye ſhall ſpeak.
20 For it is not ye that ſpeak,
but the Spirit of your Father
which ſpeaketh in you.
21 And the brother ſhall de-
liver up the brother to death,
and the father the child: and
the children ſhall riſe up
againſt *their* parents, and cauſe
them to be put to death.
22 And ye ſhall be hated of
all *men* for my name's ſake:
but he that endureth to the
end ſhall be ſaved.
23 But when they perſecute
you in this city, flee ye into
another: for verily I ſay unto
you, Ye ſhall not have gone
over the cities of Iſrael till the
Son of man be come.
24 The diſciple is not above
his maſter, nor the ſervant
above his lord.
25 It is enough for the diſ-
ciple that he be as his maſter,
and the ſervant as his lord. If
they have called the maſter of
the houſe Beelzebub, how
much more *ſhall they call* them
of his houſhold?
26 Fear them not therefore:
for there is nothing covered,
that ſhall not be revealed; and
hid, that ſhall not be known.
27 What I tell you in dark-
neſs, *that* ſpeak ye in light;
and what ye hear in the ear,
that preach ye upon the houſe-
tops.
28 And fear not them which
kill the body, but are not able
to kill the ſoul: but rather fear
him which is able to deſtroy
both ſoul and body in hell.
29 Are not two ſparrows ſold
for a farthing? and one of them
ſhall not fall on the ground
without your Father.
30 But the very hairs of your
head are all numbered.
31 Fear ye not therefore, ye
are of more value than many
ſparrows.
32 Whoſoever therefore ſhall
confeſs me before men, him
will I confeſs alſo before my
Father which is in heaven.

33 But whoſoever ſhall deny
me before men, him will I alſo
deny before my Father which
is in heaven.
34 Think not that I am come
to ſend peace on earth: I came
not to ſend peace, but a ſword.
35 For I am come to ſet a
man at variance againſt his fa-
ther, and the daughter againſt
her mother, and the daughter
in law againſt her mother in
law.
36 And a man's foes *ſhall be*
they of his own houſhold.
37 He that loveth father or
mother more than me is not
worthy of me: and he that lov-
eth ſon or daughter more than
me is not worthy of me.
38 And he that taketh not
his croſs, and followeth after
me, is not worthy of me.
39 He that findeth his life
ſhall loſe it: and he that loſeth
his life for my ſake ſhall find it.
40 ¶ He that receiveth you
receiveth me, and he that re-
ceiveth me receiveth him that
ſent me.
41 He that receiveth a pro-
phet in the name of a prophet
ſhall receive a prophet's reward;
and he that receiveth a righ-
teous man in the name of a
righteous man ſhall receive a
righteous man's reward.
42 And whoſoever ſhall give
to drink unto one of theſe little
ones a cup of cold *water* only
in the name of a diſciple, verily
I ſay unto you, he ſhall in no
wiſe loſe his reward.

CHAP. XI.

John ſends his diſciples to Chriſt.

AND it came to paſs, when
Jeſus had made an end of
commanding his twelve diſci-
ples, he departed thence to teach
and to preach in their cities.
2 Now when John had heard
in the priſon the works of
Chriſt, he ſent two of his diſ-
ciples,
3 And ſaid unto him, Art
thou he that ſhould come, or
do we look for another?
4 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid
unto them, Go and ſhew John
again thoſe things which ye do
hear and ſee:
5 The blind receive their
ſight, and the lame walk, the
lepers are cleanſed, and the
deaf hear, the dead are raiſed
up, and the poor have the goſ-
pel preached to them.
6 And bleſſed is *he*, whoſoever
ſhall not be offended in me.
7 ¶ And as they departed,
Jeſus began to ſay unto the
multitudes concerning John,
What went ye out into the
wilderneſs to ſee? A reed
ſhaken with the wind?
8 But what went ye out for
to ſee? A man clothed in ſoft
raiment? behold, they that wear
ſoft *clothing* are in kings' houſes.
9 But what went ye out for
to ſee? A prophet? yea, I ſay
unto you, and more than a
prophet.
10 For this is *he*, of whom it
is written, Behold, I ſend my
meſſenger before thy face,
which ſhall prepare thy way
before thee.
11 Verily I ſay unto you,
Among them that are born of
women there hath not riſen a
greater than John the Baptiſt:
notwithſtanding he that is leaſt
in the kingdom of heaven is
greater than he.
12 And from the days of
John the Baptiſt until now the
kingdom of heaven ſuffereth
violence, and the violent take
it by force.

13 For all the prophets and
the law propheſied until John.
14 And if ye will receive *it*,
this is Elias, which was for to
come.
15 He that hath ears to hear,
let him hear.
16 ¶ But whereunto ſhall I
liken this generation? It is like
unto children ſitting in the
markets, and calling unto their
fellows,
17 And ſaying, We have pip-
ed unto you, and ye have not
danced; we have mourned unto
you, and ye have not lamented.
18 For John came neither
eating nor drinking, and they
ſay, He hath a devil.
19 The Son of man came
eating and drinking, and they
ſay, Behold a man gluttonous,
and a winebibber, a friend of
publicans and ſinners. But
wiſdom is juſtified of her chil-
dren.
20 ¶ Then began he to up-
braid the cities wherein moſt of
his mighty works were done,
becauſe they repented not:
21 Woe unto thee, Chorazin!
woe unto thee, Bethſaida! for
if the mighty works, which
were done in you, had been
done in Tyre and Sidon, they
would have repented long ago
in ſackcloth and aſhes.
22 But I ſay unto you, It ſhall
be more tolerable for Tyre and
Sidon at the day of judgement,
than for you.
23 And thou, Capernaum,
which art exalted unto heaven,
ſhalt be brought down to hell:
for if the mighty works, which
have been done in thee, had
been done in Sodom, it would
have remained until this day.
24 But I ſay unto you, That
it ſhall be more tolerable for
the land of Sodom in the day
of judgement, than for thee.
25 ¶ At that time Jeſus an-
ſwered and ſaid, I thank thee,
O Father, Lord of heaven and
earth, becauſe thou haſt [illegible]
theſe things from the wiſe [illegible]
prudent, and haſt revealed them
unto babes.
26 Even ſo, Father: for ſo it
ſeemed good in thy ſight.
27 All things are delivered
unto me of my Father: and no
man knoweth the Son, but the
Father; neither knoweth any
man the Father, ſave the Son,
and *he* to whomſoever the Son
will reveal *him*.
28 ¶ Come unto me, all *ye*
that labour and are heavy laden,
and I will give you reſt.
29 Take my yoke upon you,
and learn of me; for I am meek
and lowly in heart: and ye ſhall
find reſt unto your ſouls.
30 For my yoke *is* eaſy, and
my burden is light.

CHAP. XII.

Of blaſphemy.

AT that time Jeſus went on
the ſabbath day through
the corn; and his diſciples were
an hungred, and began to pluck
the ears of corn, and to eat.
2 But when the Phariſees ſaw
it, they ſaid unto him, Behold,
thy diſciples do that which is
not lawful to do upon the ſab-
bath day.
3 But he ſaid unto them,
Have ye not read what David
did, when he was an hungred,
and they that were with him;
4 How he entered into the
houſe of God, and did eat the
ſhewbread, which was not law-
ful for him to eat, neither for
them which were with him, but
only for the prieſts?
5 Or have ye not read in the
law,

law, how that on the ſabbath
days the prieſts in the temple
profane the ſabbath, and are
blameleſs?
6 But I ſay unto you, That
in this place is *one* greater than
the temple.
7 But if ye had known what
this meaneth, I will have mercy,
and not ſacrifice, ye would not
have condemned the guiltleſs.
8 For the Son of man is Lord
even of the ſabbath day.
9 And when he was departed
thence, he went into their ſy-
nagogue:
10 ¶ And, behold, there was
a man which had *his* hand wi-
thered. And they aſked him,
ſaying, Is it lawful to heal on
the ſabbath days? that they
might accuſe him.
11 And he ſaid unto them,
What man ſhall there be among
you, that ſhall have one ſheep,
and if it fall into a pit on the
ſabbath day, will he not lay
hold on it, and lift *it* out?
12 How much then is a man
better than a ſheep? Wherefore
it is lawful to do well on the
ſabbath days.
13 Then ſaith he to the man,
Stretch forth thine hand. And
he ſtretched *it* forth; and it
was reſtored whole, like as the
other.
14 ¶ Then the Phariſees went
out, and held a council againſt
him, how they might deſtroy
him.
15 But when Jeſus knew *it*, he
withdrew himſelf from thence:
and great multitudes followed
him, and he healed them all;
16 And charged them that
they ſhould not make him
known:
17 That it might be fulfilled
which was ſpoken by Eſaias
the prophet, ſaying,
18 Behold my ſervant, whom
I have choſen; my beloved, in
whom my ſoul is well pleaſed:
I will put my ſpirit upon him,
and he ſhall ſhew judgement to
the Gentiles.
19 He ſhall not ſtrive, nor
cry; neither ſhall any man hear
his voice in the ſtreets.
20 A bruiſed reed ſhall he not
break, and ſmoking flax ſhall he
not quench, till he ſend forth
judgement unto victory.
21 And in his name ſhall the
Gentiles truſt.
22 ¶ Then was brought unto
him one poſſeſſed with a devil,
blind, and dumb: and he healed
him, inſomuch that the blind
and dumb both ſpake and ſaw.
23 And all the people were
amazed, and ſaid, Is not this
the ſon of David?
24 But when the Phariſees
heard *it*, they ſaid, This *fellow*
doth not caſt out devils, but
by Beelzebub the prince of the
devils.
25 And Jeſus knew their
thoughts, and ſaid unto them,
Every kingdom divided againſt
itſelf is brought to deſolation;
and every city or houſe divided
againſt itſelf ſhall not ſtand:
26 And if Satan caſt out Sa-
tan, he is divided againſt him-
ſelf; how ſhall then his king-
dom ſtand?
27 And if I by Beelzebub caſt
out devils, by whom do your
children caſt *them* out? there-
fore they ſhall be your judges.
28 But if I caſt out devils by
the Spirit of God, then the king-
dom of God is come unto you.
29 Or elſe how can one enter
into a ſtrong man's houſe, and
ſpoil his goods, except he firſt
bind the ſtrong man? and then
he

he will ſpoil his houſe.

30 He that is not with me is againſt me; and he that gathereth not with me ſcattereth abroad.

31 ¶ Wherefore I ſay unto you, All manner of ſin and blaſphemy ſhall be forgiven unto men: but the blaſphemy *againſt* the *Holy* Ghoſt ſhall not be forgiven unto men.

32 And whoſoever ſpeaketh a word againſt the Son of man, it ſhall be forgiven him: but whoſoever ſpeaketh againſt the Holy Ghoſt, it ſhall not be forgiven him, neither in this world, neither in the *world* to come.

33 Either make the tree good, and his fruit good; or elſe make the tree corrupt, and his fruit corrupt: for the tree is known by *his* fruit.

34 O generation of vipers, how can ye, being evil, ſpeak good things? for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth ſpeaketh.

35 A good man out of the good treaſure of the heart bringeth forth good things: and an evil man out of the evil treaſure bringeth forth evil things.

36 But I ſay unto you, That every idle word that men ſhall ſpeak, they ſhall give account thereof in the day of judgement.

37 For by thy words thou ſhalt be juſtified, and by thy words thou ſhalt be condemned.

38 ¶ Then certain of the ſcribes and of the Phariſees anſwered, ſaying, Maſter, we would ſee a ſign from thee.

39 But he anſwered and ſaid unto them, An evil and adulterous generation ſeeketh after a ſign; and there ſhall no ſign be given to it, but the ſign of the prophet Jonas:

40 For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly: ſo ſhall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.

41 The men of Nineveh ſhall riſe in judgement with this generation, and ſhall condemn it: becauſe they repented at the preaching of Jonas; and, behold, a greater than Jonas *is* here.

42 The queen of the ſouth ſhall riſe up in the judgement with this generation, and ſhall condemn it: for ſhe came from the uttermoſt parts of the earth to hear the wiſdom of Solomon; and, behold, a greater than Solomon *is* here.

43 When the unclean ſpirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, ſeeking reſt, and findeth none.

44 Then he ſaith, I will return into my houſe from whence I came out; and when he is come, he findeth *it* empty, ſwept, and garniſhed.

45 Then goeth he, and taketh with himſelf ſeven other ſpirits more wicked than himſelf, and they enter in and dwell there: and the laſt *ſtate* of that man is worſe than the firſt. Even ſo ſhall it be alſo unto this wicked generation.

46 ¶ While he yet talked to the people, behold, *his* mother and his brethren ſtood without, deſiring to ſpeak with him.

47 Then one ſaid unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren ſtand without, deſiring to ſpeak with thee.

48 But he anſwered and ſaid unto him that told him, Who is

my mother? and who are my brethren?

49 And he stretched forth his hand toward his disciples, and said, Behold my mother and my brethren!

50 For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister, and mother.

C H A P. XIII.

Of the sower and seed.

THE same day went Jesus out of the house, and sat by the sea side.

2 And great multitudes were gathered together unto him, so that he went into a ship, and sat; and the whole multitude stood on the shore.

3 And he spake many things unto them in parables, saying, Behold a sower went forth to sow;

4 And when he sowed, some *seeds* fell by the way side; and the fowls came and devoured them up:

5 Some fell upon stony places, where they had not much earth: and forthwith they sprung up, because they had no deepness of earth:

6 And when the sun was up, they were scorched; and because they had no root, they withered away.

7 And some fell among thorns; and the thorns sprung up, and choked them:

8 But other fell into good ground, and brought forth fruit, some an hundredfold, some sixtyfold, some thirtyfold.

9 Who hath ears to hear, let him hear.

10 And the disciples came, and said unto him, Why speakest thou unto them in parables?

11 He answered and said unto them, Because it is given unto you to know the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven, but to them it is not given.

12 For whosoever hath, to him shall be given, and he shall have more abundance: but whosoever hath not, from him shall be taken away even that he hath.

13 Therefore speak I to them in parables: because they seeing, see not; and hearing, they hear not, neither do they understand.

14 And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Esaias, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive:

15 For this people's heart is waxed gross, and *their* ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest at any time they should see with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and should understand with *their* heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.

16 But blessed *are* your eyes, for they see; and your ears, for they hear.

17 For verily I say unto you, That many prophets and righteous *men* have desired to see *those things* which ye see, and have not seen *them;* and to hear *those things* which ye hear, and have not heard *them.*

18 ¶ Hear ye therefore the parable of the sower.

19 When any one heareth the word of the kingdom, and understandeth *it* not, then cometh the wicked *one,* and catcheth away that which was sown in his heart: this is he which received seed by the way side.

20 But he that received the seed

ſeed into ſtony places, the ſame is he that heareth the word, and anon with joy receiveth it;

21 Yet hath he not root in himſelf, but dureth for a while: for when tribulation or perſecution ariſeth becauſe of the word, by and by he is offended.

22 He alſo that received ſeed among the thorns, is he that heareth the word: and the care of this world, and the deceitfulneſs of riches, choke the word, and he becometh unfruitful.

23 But he that received ſeed into the good ground, is he that heareth the word and underſtandeth *it;* which alſo beareth fruit, and bringeth forth, ſome an hundredfold, ſome ſixty, ſome thirty.

24 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, ſaying, The kingdom of heaven is likened unto a man which ſowed good ſeed in his field:

25 But while men ſlept, his enemy came and ſowed tares among the wheat, and went his way.

26 But when the blade was ſprung up, and brought forth fruit, then appeared the tares alſo.

27 So the ſervants of the houſholder came, and ſaid unto him, Sir, didſt not thou ſow good ſeed in thy field? from whence then hath it tares?

28 He ſaid unto them, An enemy hath done this. The ſervants ſaid unto him, Wilt thou then that we go and gather them up?

29 But he ſaid, Nay; leſt while ye gather up the tares, ye root up alſo the wheat with them.

30 Let both grow together until the harveſt: and in the time of harveſt I will ſay to the reapers, Gather ye together firſt the tares, and bind them in bundles to burn them: but gather the wheat into my barn.

31 ¶ Another parable put he forth unto them, ſaying, The kingdom of heaven is like to a grain of muſtard ſeed, which a man took and ſowed in his field:

32 Which indeed is the leaſt of all ſeeds: but when it is grown, it is the greateſt among herbs, and becometh a tree, ſo that the birds of the air come and lodge in the branches thereof.

33 Another parable ſpake he unto them; The kingdom of heaven is like unto leaven, which a woman took and hid in three meaſures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

34 ¶ All theſe things ſpake Jeſus unto the multitude in parables; and without a parable ſpake he not unto them:

35 That it might be fulfilled which was ſpoken by the prophet, ſaying, I will open my mouth in parables; I will utter things which have been kept ſecret from the foundation of the world.

36 Then Jeſus ſent the multitude away, and went into the houſe: and his diſciples came unto him, ſaying, Declare unto us the parable of the tares of the field.

37 He anſwered and ſaid unto them, He that ſoweth the good ſeed is the Son of man;

38 The field is the world; the good ſeed are the children of the kingdom; but the tares are the children of the wicked *one;*

39 The enemy that ſowed them is the devil; the harveſt

is the end of the world; and
the reapers are the angels.
40 As therefore the tares
are gathered and burned in the
fire; ſo ſhall it be in the end
of this world.
41 The Son of man ſhall ſend
forth his angels, and they ſhall
gather out of his kingdom all
things that offend, and them
which do iniquity;
42 And ſhall caſt them into a
furnace of fire: there ſhall be
wailing and gnaſhing of teeth.
43 Then ſhall the righteous
ſhine forth as the ſun in the
kingdom of their Father. Who
hath ears to hear, let him hear.
44 Again, the kingdom of
heaven is like unto treaſure
hid in a field; the which when
a man hath found, he hideth,
and for joy thereof goeth and
ſelleth all that he hath, and
buyeth that field.
45 Again, the kingdom of
heaven is like unto a merchant
man ſeeking goodly pearls:
46 Who, when he had found
one pearl of great price, went
and ſold all that he had, and
bought it.
47 Again, the kingdom of
heaven is like unto a net that
was caſt into the ſea, and gathered of every kind:
48 Which, when it was full,
they drew to ſhore, and ſat
down, and gathered the good
into veſſels, but caſt the bad
away.
49 So ſhall it be at the end
of the world: the angels ſhall
come forth, and ſever the wicked from among the juſt,
50 And ſhall caſt them into
the furnace of fire: there
ſhall be wailing and gnaſhing
of teeth.
51 Jeſus ſaith unto them,
Have ye underſtood all theſe
things? They ſay unto him,
Yea, Lord.
52 Then ſaid he unto them,
Therefore every ſcribe *which
is* inſtructed unto the kingdom
of heaven, is like unto a man
that is an houſholder, which
bringeth forth out of his treaſure *things* new and old.
53 And it came to paſs,
that when Jeſus had finiſhed
theſe parables, he departed
thence.
54 And when he was come
into his own country, he
taught them in their ſynagogue, inſomuch that they
were aſtoniſhed, and ſaid,
Whence hath this *man* this
wiſdom, and *theſe* mighty
works?
55 Is not this the carpenter's
ſon? is not his mother called
Mary? and his brethren, James,
and Joſes, and Simon, and Judas?
56 And his ſiſters, are they
not all with us? whence then
hath this *man* all theſe things?
57 And they were offended
in him. But Jeſus ſaid unto
them, A prophet is not without
honour, ſave in his own country, and in his own houſe.
58 And he did not many
mighty works there, becauſe
of their unbelief.

CHAP. XIV.

Herod's opinion of Chriſt.

AT that time Herod the
tetrarch heard of the
fame of Jeſus,
2 And ſaid unto his ſervants,
This is John the Baptiſt: he is
riſen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do ſhew
forth themſelves in him.
3 For Herod had laid hold
on John, and bound him, and
put *him* in priſon for Herodias'

ſake, his brother Philip's wife.
4 For John ſaid unto him,
It is not lawful for thee to
have her.
5 And when he would have
put him to death, he feared the
multitude, becauſe they count-
ed him as a prophet.
6 But when Herod's birth-
day was kept, the daughter of
Herodias danced before them,
and pleaſed Herod.
7 Whereupon he promiſed
with an oath, to give her what-
ſoever ſhe would aſk.
8 And ſhe being before in-
ſtructed of her mother, ſaid,
Give me here John Baptiſt's
head in a charger.
9 And the king was ſorry:
nevertheleſs for the oath's
ſake, and them which ſat with
him at meat, he commanded
it to be given *her*.
10 And he ſent, and behead-
ed John in the priſon.
11 And his head was brought
in a charger, and given to the
damſel: and ſhe brought *it* to
her mother
12 And his diſciples came,
and took up the body, and bu-
ried it, and went and told Jeſus.
13 When Jeſus heard *of it*,
he departed thence by ſhip in-
to a deſert place apart: and
when the people had heard
thereof, they followed him on
foot out of the cities.
14 And Jeſus went forth, and
ſaw a great multitude, and was
moved with compaſſion toward
them, and he healed their ſick.
15 And when it was even-
ing, his diſciples came to him,
ſaying, This is a deſert place,
and the time is now paſt; ſend
the multitude away, that they
may go into the villages, and
buy themſelves victuals.
16 But Jeſus ſaid unto them,
They need not depart; give
ye them to eat.
17 And they ſay unto him,
We have here but five loaves
and two fiſhes.
18 He ſaid, Bring them hi-
ther to me.
19 And he commanded the
multitude to ſit down on the
graſs, and took the five loaves
and the two fiſhes, and looking
up to heaven, he bleſſed and
brake, and gave the loaves to
his diſciples, and the diſciples
to the multitude.
20 And they did all eat, and
were filled: and they took up
of the fragments that remain-
ed twelve baſkets full.
21 And they that had eaten
were about five thouſand men,
beſide women and children.
22 ¶ And ſtraightway Jeſus
conſtrained his diſciples to get
into a ſhip, and to go before
him unto the other ſide, while
he ſent the multitudes away.
23 And when he had ſent
the multitudes away, he went
up into a mountain apart to
pray: and when the evening
was come, he was there alone.
24 But the ſhip was now in
the midſt of the ſea, toſſed with
waves: for the wind was con-
trary.
25 And in the fourth watch
of the night Jeſus went unto
them, walking on the ſea.
26 And when the diſciples
ſaw him walking on the ſea,
they were troubled, ſaying, It
is a ſpirit. And they cried out
for fear.
27 But ſtraightway Jeſus
ſpake unto them, ſaying, Be of
good cheer; It is I; be not
afraid.
28 And Peter anſwered him,
and

and ſaid, Lord, if it be thou,
bid me come unto thee on the
water.
29 And he ſaid, Come. And
when Peter was come down
out of the ſhip, he walked on
the water to go to Jeſus.
30 But when he ſaw the
wind boiſterous, he was afraid;
and beginning to ſink, he cried,
ſaying, Lord, ſave me.
31 And immediately Jeſus
ſtretched forth *his* hand, and
caught him, and ſaid unto him,
O thou of little faith, where-
fore didſt thou doubt?
32 And when they were
come into the ſhip, the wind
ceaſed.
33 Then they that were in
the ſhip came and worſhipped
him, ſaying, Of a truth thou
art the Son of God.
34 And when they were
gone over, they came into the
land of Genneſaret.
35 And when the men of
that place had knowledge of
him, they ſent out into all that
country round about, and
brought unto him all that were
diſeaſed;
36 And beſought him that
they might only touch the hem
of his garment: and as many
as touched were made perfectly
whole.

CHAP. XV.

Of God's commandments.

THEN came to Jeſus ſcribes
and Phariſees which were
of Jeruſalem, ſaying,
2 Why do thy diſciples
tranſgreſs the tradition of the
elders? for they waſh not their
hands when they eat bread.
3 But he anſwered and ſaid
unto them, Why do ye alſo
tranſgreſs the commandment
of God by your tradition?
4 For God commanded, ſay-
ing, Honour thy father and
mother: and, He that curſeth
father or mother, let him die
the death.
5 But ye ſay, Whoſoever
ſhall ſay to *his* father or *his*
mother, *It is* a gift, by what-
ſoever thou mighteſt be profit-
ed by me;
6 And honour not his father
or his mother, *he ſhall be free.*
Thus have ye made the com-
mandment of God of none
effect by your tradition.
7 *Ye* hypocrites, well did
Eſaias prophecy of you, ſay-
ing,
8 This people draweth nigh
unto me with their mouth, and
honoureth me with *their* lips,
but their heart is far from me.
9 But in vain they do wor-
ſhip me, teaching *for* doctrines
the commandments of men.
10 ¶ And he called the mul-
titude, and ſaid unto them,
Hear, and underſtand:
11 Not that which goeth in-
to the mouth defileth a man;
but that which cometh out of
the mouth, this defileth a man.
12 Then came his diſciples,
and ſaid unto him, Knoweſt
thou that the Phariſees were
offended after they heard this
ſaying?
13 But he anſwered and ſaid,
Every plant, which my heavenly
Father hath not planted, ſhall
be rooted up.
14 Let them alone: they be
blind leaders of the blind. And
if the blind lead the blind both
ſhall fall into the ditch.
15 Then anſwered Peter, and
ſaid unto him, Declare unto us
this parable.
16 And Jeſus ſaid, Are ye alſo
yet without underſtanding?

17 Do not ye yet under-
ſtand, that whatſoever entereth
in at the mouth goeth into the
belly, and is caſt out into the
draught?
18 But thoſe things which
proceed out of the mouth come
forth from the heart, and they
defile the man.
19 For out of the heart pro-
ceed evil thoughts, murders,
adulteries, fornications, thefts,
falſe witneſs, blaſphemies:
20 Theſe are *the things* which
defile a man: but to eat with
unwaſhen hands defileth not
a man.
21 ¶ Then Jeſus went thence
and departed into the coaſts
of Tyre and Sidon.
22 And, behold, a woman of
Canaan came out of the ſame
coaſts, and cried unto him,
ſaying, Have mercy on me, O
Lord, *thou* Son of David; my
daughter is grievouſly vexed
with a devil.
23 But he anſwered her not
a word. And his diſciples came
and beſought him, ſaying, Send
her away; for ſhe crieth after us.
24 But he anſwered and
ſaid, I am not ſent but unto
the loſt ſheep of the houſe of
Iſrael.
25 Then came ſhe and wor-
ſhipped him, ſaying, Lord,
help me.
26 But he anſwered and ſaid,
It is not meet to take the chil-
dren's bread, and to caſt *it* to
dogs.
27 And ſhe ſaid, Truth,
Lord: yet the dogs eat of the
crumbs which fall from their
maſters' table.
28 Then Jeſus anſwered and
ſaid unto her, O woman, great
is thy faith: be it unto thee
even as thou wilt. And her
daughter was made whole from
that very hour.
29 ¶ And Jeſus departed from
thence, and came nigh unto
the ſea of Galilee; and went up
into a mountain, and ſat down
there.
30 And great multitudes
came unto him, having with
them *thoſe that were* lame,
blind, dumb, maimed, and
many others, and caſt them
down at Jeſus' feet; and he
healed them:
31 Inſomuch that the mul-
titude wondered when they ſaw
the dumb to ſpeak, the maimed
to be whole, the lame to walk,
and the blind to ſee: and they
glorified the God of Iſrael.
32 ¶ Then Jeſus called his
diſciples *unto him*, and ſaid, I
have compaſſion on the multi-
tude, becauſe they continue
with me now three days, and
have nothing to eat: and I
will not ſend them away faſt-
ing, leſt they faint in the way.
33 And his diſciples ſay unto
him, Whence ſhould we have
ſo much bread in the wilder-
neſs as to fill ſo great a mul-
titude?
34 And Jeſus ſaith unto
them, How many loaves have
ye? And they ſaid, Seven, and
a few little fiſhes.
35 And he commanded the
multitude to ſit down on the
ground.
36 And he took the ſeven
loaves and the fiſhes, and gave
thanks, and brake *them*, and
gave to his diſciples, and the
diſciples to the multitude.
37 And they did all eat, and
were filled: and they took up
of the broken *meat* that was
left ſeven baſkets full.
38 And they that did eat

were four thousand men, beside women and children.

39 And he sent away the multitude, and took ship, and came into the coasts of Magdala.

CHAP. XVI.

The sign of Jonas.

THE Pharisees also with the Sadducees came, and tempting, desired him that he would shew them a sign from heaven.

2 He answered and said unto them, When it is evening, ye say, *It will be* fair weather; for the sky is red.

3 And in the morning, *It will be* foul weather to day; for the sky is red and lowring. O *ye* hypocrites, ye can discern the face of the sky; but can ye not *discern* the signs of the times?

4 A wicked and adulterous generation seeketh after a sign, and there shall no sign be given unto it, but the sign of the prophet Jonas. And he left them, and departed.

5 ¶ And when his disciples were come to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread.

6 Then Jesus said unto them, Take heed, and beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

7 And they reasoned among themselves, saying, *It is* because we have taken no bread.

8 *Which* when Jesus perceived, he said unto them, O ye of little faith, why reason ye among yourselves, because ye have brought no bread?

9 Do ye not yet understand neither remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets ye took took up?

10 Neither the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets ye took up?

11 How is it that ye do not understand, that I spake *it* not to you concerning bread, that ye should beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees?

12 Then understood they how that he bade *them* not beware of the leaven of bread, but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and of the Sadducees.

13 ¶ When Jesus came into the coasts of Cesarea Philippi, he asked his disciples, saying, Whom do men say that I, the Son of man, am?

14 And they said, Some *say that thou art* John the Baptist: some, Elias; and others, Jeremias, or one of the prophets.

15 He saith unto them, But whom say ye that I am?

16 And Simon Peter answered and said, Thou art the Christ, the Son of the living God.

17 And Jesus answered and said unto him, Blessed art thou, Simon-Barjona; for flesh and blood hath not revealed *it* unto thee, but my Father which is in heaven

18 And I say also unto thee, That thou art Peter, and upon this rock I will build my church; and the gates of hell shall not prevail against it.

19 And I will give unto thee the keys of the kingdom of heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt bind on earth shall be bound in heaven: and whatsoever thou shalt loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.

20 Then charged he his disciples that they should tell no man that he was Jesus the Christ.

21 ¶ From that time forth began Jesus to shew unto his disciples how that he must go unto Jerusalem, and suffer many things of the elders and

chief prieſts and ſcribes, and
be killed, and be raiſed again
the third day.
22 Then Peter took him, and
began to rebuke him, ſaying,
Be it far from thee, Lord: this
ſhall not be unto thee.
23 But he turned, and ſaid
unto Peter, Get thee behind
me, Satan: thou art an offence
unto me: for thou ſavoureſt
not the things that be of God,
but thoſe that be of men.
24 Then ſaid Jeſus unto his
diſciples, If any *man* will come
after me, let him deny himſelf,
and take up his croſs, and fol-
low me.
25 For whoſoever will ſave
his life ſhall loſe it: and who-
ſoever will loſe his life for my
ſake, ſhall find it.
26 For what is a man pro-
fitted if he ſhall gain the whole
world, and loſe his own ſoul?
or what ſhall a man give in ex-
change for his ſoul?
27 For the Son of man ſhall
come in the glory of his Father
with his angels; and then he
ſhall reward every man accord-
ing to his works.
28 Verily I ſay unto you,
There be ſome ſtanding here
which ſhall not taſte of death
till they ſee the Son of man
coming in his kingdom.

CHAP. XVII.

The transfiguration of Chriſt.

AND after ſix days Jeſus
taketh Peter, James, and
John his brother, and bringeth
them up into an high mountain
apart,
2 And was transfigured be-
fore them: and his face did
ſhine as the ſun, and his rai
ment was white as the light.
3 And, behold, there appear-
ed unto them Moſes and Elias
talking with him.
4 Then anſwered Peter, and
ſaid unto Jeſus, Lord, it is good
for us to be here: if thou wilt
let us make here three taberna-
cles, one for thee, and one for
Moſes, and one for Elias.
5 While he yet ſpake, be-
hold, a bright cloud overſha-
dowed them: and, behold, a
voice out of the cloud, which
ſaid, This is my beloved Son,
in whom I am well pleaſed;
hear ye him.
6 And when the diſciples
heard *it*, they fell on their face,
and were ſore afraid.
7 And Jeſus came and touch-
ed them, and ſaid, Ariſe, and
be not afraid.
8 And when they had lifted
up their eyes, they ſaw no man,
ſave Jeſus only.
9 And as they came down
from the mountain, Jeſus charg-
ed them, ſaying, Tell the vi-
ſion to no man, until the Son
of man be riſen again from the
dead.
10 And his diſciples aſked
him, ſaying, Why then ſay the
ſcribes that Elias muſt firſt
come?
11 And Jeſus anſwered and
ſaid unto them, Elias truly
ſhall firſt come, and reſtore all
things.
12 But I ſay unto you, That
Elias is come already, and they
knew him not, but have done
unto him whatſoever they liſt-
ed. Likewiſe ſhall alſo the Son
of man ſuffer of them.
13 Then the diſciples under-
ſtood that he ſpake unto them
of John the Baptiſt.
14 ¶ And when they were
come to the multitude, there
came to him a *certain* man,
kneeling down to him, and
ſaying,

15 Lord, have mercy on my
ſon; for he is lunatick, and
ſore vexed: for ofttimes he
falleth into the fire, and oft in-
to the water.
16 And I brought him to thy
diſciples, and they could not
cure him.
17 Then Jeſus anſwered and
ſaid, O faithleſs and perverſe
generation, how long ſhall I
be with you? how long ſhall I
ſuffer you? bring him hither to
me.
18 And Jeſus rebuked the
devil; and he departed out of
him: and the child was cured
from that very hour.
19 Then came the diſciples
to Jeſus apart, and ſaid, Why
could not we caſt him out?
20 And Jeſus ſaid unto them,
Becauſe of your unbelief: for
verily I ſay unto you, If ye have
faith as a grain of muſtard
ſeed, ye ſhall ſay unto this
mountain, Remove hence to
yonder place, and it ſhall re-
move, and nothing ſhall be
impoſſible unto you.
21 Howbeit this kind go-
eth not out but by prayer and
faſting.
22 ¶ And while they abode
in Galilee, Jeſus ſaid unto them,
The Son of man ſhall be be-
trayed into the hands of men:
23 And they ſhall kill him,
and the third day he ſhall be
raiſed again. And they were
exceeding ſorry.
24 ¶ And when they were
come to Capernaum, they that
received tribute *money*, came to
Peter, and ſaid, Doth not your
maſter pay tribute?
25 He ſaith, Yes. And when
he was come into the houſe,
Jeſus prevented him, ſaying,
What thinkeſt thou, Simon?
Of whom do the kings of the
earth take cuſtom or tribute?
of their own children or of
ſtrangers?
26 Peter ſaith unto him, Of
ſtrangers. Jeſus ſaith unto him,
Then are the children free.
27 Notwithſtanding, leſt we
ſhould offend them, go thou
to the ſea, and caſt an hook,
and take up the fiſh that firſt
cometh up; and when thou
haſt opened his mouth, thou
ſhalt find a piece of money;
that take, and give unto them
for me and thee.

CHAP. XVIII.

Chriſt teacheth humility.

AT the ſame time came the
diſciples unto Jeſus, ſay-
ing, Who is the greateſt in the
kingdom of heaven?
2 And Jeſus called a little
child unto him, and ſet him in
the midſt of them,
3 And ſaid, Verily I ſay un-
to you, Except ye be convert-
ed, and become as little chil-
dren, ye ſhall not enter into the
kingdom of heaven.
4 Whoſoever therefore ſhall
humble himſelf as this little
child, the ſame is greateſt in
the kingdom of heaven.
5 And whoſo ſhall receive
one ſuch little child in my
name, receiveth me.
6 But whoſo ſhall offend one
of theſe little ones which be-
lieve in me, it were better for
him that a milſtone were hang-
ed about his neck, and *that* he
were drowned in the depth of
the ſea.
7 ¶ Woe unto the world be-
cauſe of offences! for it muſt
needs be that offences come:
but woe to that man by whom
the offence cometh!
8 Wherefore if thy hand or

thy foot offend thee, cut them
off, and caſt *them* from thee:
it is better for thee to enter in-
to life halt or maimed, rather
than having two hands or two
feet to be caſt into everlaſting
fire.
9 And if thine eye offend
thee, pluck it out, and caſt *it*
from thee: it is better for thee
to enter into life with one eye,
rather than having two eyes to
be caſt into hell fire.
10 Take heed that ye de-
ſpiſe not one of theſe little
ones; for I ſay unto you, That
in heaven their angels do al-
ways behold the face of my
Father which is in heaven.
11 For the Son of man is
come to ſave that which was
loſt.
12 How think ye? if a man
have an hundred ſheep, and
one of them be gone aſtray,
doth he not leave the ninety
and nine, and goeth into the
mountains, and ſeeketh that
which is gone aſtray?
13 And if ſo be that he find
it, verily I ſay unto you, he
rejoiceth more of that *ſheep*,
than of the ninety and nine
which went not aſtray.
14 Even ſo it is not the will
of your Father which is in hea-
ven, that one of theſe little ones
ſhould periſh.
15 Moreover if thy brother
ſhall treſpaſs againſt thee,
go, and tell him his fault be-
tween thee and him alone: if
he ſhall hear thee, thou haſt
gained thy brother.
16 But if he will not hear
thee, *then* take with thee one
or two more, that in the mouth
of two or three witneſſes every
word may be eſtabliſhed.
17 And if he ſhall neglect
to hear them, tell *it* unto the
church: but if he neglect to
hear the church, let him be
unto thee as an heathen man
and a publican.
18 Verily I ſay unto you,
Whatſoever ye ſhall bind on
earth ſhall be bound in heaven:
and whatſoever ye ſhall looſe
on earth ſhall be looſed in
heaven.
19 Again I ſay unto you,
That if two of you ſhall agree
on earth as touching any thing
that they ſhall aſk, it ſhall be
done for them of my Father
which is in heaven.
20 For where two or three
are gathered together in my
name, there am I in the midſt
of them.
21 ¶ Then came Peter to
him, and ſaid, Lord, how oft
ſhall my brother ſin againſt me,
and I forgive him? till ſeven
times?
22 Jeſus ſaith unto him, I
ſay not unto thee, Until ſeven
times: but, until ſeventy times
ſeven.
23 Therefore is the king-
dom of heaven likened unto a
certain king which would take
account of his ſervants.
24 And when he had begun
to reckon, one was brought
unto him which owed him ten
thouſand talents.
25 But foraſmuch as he had
not to pay, his lord command-
ed him to be ſold, and his wife,
and children, and all that he
had, and payment to be made.
26 The ſervant therefore fell
down, and worſhipped him,
ſaying, Lord, have patience with
me, and I will pay thee all.
27 Then the lord of that
ſervant was moved with com-
paſſion, and looſed him, and
forgave

forgave him the debt.

28 But the ſame ſervant went out, and found one of his fellowſervants, which owed him an hundred pence: and he laid hands on him, and took *him* by the throat, ſaying, Pay me that thou oweſt.

29 And his fellowſervant fell down at his feet, and beſought him ſaying, Have patience with me, and I will pay thee all.

30 And he would not: but went and caſt him into priſon, till he ſhould pay the debt.

31 So when his fellowſervants ſaw what was done, they were very ſorry, and came and told unto their lord all that was done.

32 Then his lord, after that he had called him, ſaid unto him, O thou wicked ſervant, I forgave thee all that debt, becauſe thou deſiredſt me:

33 Shouldeſt not thou alſo have had compaſſion on thy fellowſervant, even as I had pity on thee?

34 And his lord was wroth, and delivered him to the tormentors, till he ſhould pay all that was due unto him.

35 So likewiſe ſhall my heavenly Father do alſo unto you, if ye from your hearts forgive not every one his brother their treſpaſſes.

CHAP. XIX.

Chriſt healeth the ſick.

AND it came to paſs, *that* when Jeſus had finiſhed theſe ſayings, he departed from Galilee, and came into the coaſts of Judea, beyond Jordan;

2 And great multitudes followed him; and he healed them there.

3 ¶ The Phariſees alſo came unto him, tempting him, and ſaying unto him, Is it lawful for a man to put away his wife for every cauſe?

4 And he anſwered and ſaid unto them, Have ye not read, that he which made *them* at the beginning, made them male and female,

5 And ſaid, For this cauſe ſhall a man leave father and mother, and ſhall cleave to his wife: and they twain ſhall be one fleſh?

6 Wherefore they are no more twain, but one fleſh. What therefore God hath joined together, let not man put aſunder.

7 They ſay unto him, Why did Moſes then command to give a writing of divorcement, and to put her away?

8 He ſaith unto them, Moſes, becauſe of the hardneſs of your hearts, ſuffered you to put away your wives: but from the beginning it was not ſo.

9 And I ſay unto you, Whoſoever ſhall put away his wife, except *it be* for fornication, and ſhall marry another, committeth adultery: and whoſo marrieth her which is put away doth commit adultery.

10 His diſciples ſay unto him, If the caſe of the man be ſo with *his* wife, it is not good to marry.

11 But he ſaid unto them, All *men* cannot receive this ſaying, ſave *they* to whom it is given.

12 For there are ſome eunuchs which were ſo born from *their* mothers' womb: and there are ſome eunuchs which were made eunuchs of men; and there be eunuchs which

which have made themſelves
eunuchs for the kingdom of
heaven's ſake. He that is able
to receive *it*, let him receive *it*.
13 ¶ Then were there brought
unto him little children, that he
ſhould put *his* hands on them
and pray: and the diſciples re-
buked them.
14 But Jeſus ſaid, Suffer little
children, and forbid them not
to come unto me: for of ſuch
is the kingdom of heaven.
15 And he laid *his* hands on
them, and departed thence.
16 ¶ And, behold, one came
and ſaid unto him, Good Maſ-
ter, what good thing ſhall I do,
that I may have eternal life?
17 And he ſaid unto him,
Why calleſt thou me good?
there is none good but one, *that
is* God: but if thou wilt enter
into life, keep the command-
ments.
18 He ſaith unto him, Which?
Jeſus ſaid, Thou ſhalt do no
murder, Thou ſhalt not com-
mit adultery, Thou ſhalt not
ſteal, Thou ſhalt not bear falſe
witneſs,
19 Honour thy father and *thy*
mother; and, Thou ſhalt love
thy neighbour as thyſelf.
20 The young man ſaith un-
to him, All theſe things have
I kept from my youth up: what
lack I yet?
21 Jeſus ſaid unto him, If
thou wilt be perfect, go, *and* ſell
that thou haſt, and give to the
poor, and thou ſhalt have trea-
ſure in heaven: and come *and*
follow me.
22 But when the young man
heard that ſaying, he went away
ſorrowful: for he had great
poſſeſſions.
23 Then ſaid Jeſus unto
his diſciples, Verily I ſay unto
you, That a rich man ſhall hard-
ly enter into the kingdom of
heaven.
24 And again I ſay unto you,
It is eaſier for a camel to go
through the eye of a needle,
than for a rich man to enter
into the kingdom of God.
25 When his diſciples heard
it, they were exceedingly
amazed, ſaying, Who then can
be ſaved?
26 But Jeſus beheld *them*, and
ſaid unto them, With men this
is impoſſible; but with God all
things are poſſible.
27 Then anſwered Peter,
and ſaid unto him, Behold, we
have forſaken all, and followed
thee: what ſhall we have there-
fore?
28 And Jeſus ſaid unto them,
Verily I ſay unto you, That ye
which have followed me in the
regeneration, when the Son of
man ſhall ſit in the throne of his
glory, ye alſo ſhall ſit upon
twelve thrones, judging the
twelve tribes of Iſrael.
29 And every one that hath
forſaken houſes, or brethren, or
ſiſters, or father, or mother, or
wife, or children, or lands, for
my name's ſake, ſhall receive an
hundredfold, and ſhall inherit
everlaſting life.
30 But many *that are* firſt ſhall
be laſt, and the laſt *ſhall be* firſt.

CHAP. XX.

Parable of the vineyard.

FOR the kingdom of heaven
is like unto a man *that is* an
houſholder, which went out ear-
ly in the morning to hire la-
bourers into his vineyard.
2 And when he had agreed
with the labourers for a penny
a day, he ſent them into his
vineyard.
3 And he went out about
the

the third hour, and ſaw others ſtanding idle in the market place,

4 And ſaid unto them, Go ye alſo into the vineyard; and whatſoever is right, I will give you. And they went their way.

5 Again, he went out about the ſixth and ninth hour, and did likewiſe.

6 And about the eleventh hour he went out, and found others ſtanding idle, and ſaith unto them, Why ſtand ye here all the day idle?

7 They ſay unto him, Becauſe no man hath hired us. He ſaith unto them, Go ye alſo into the vineyard; and whatſoever is right, *that* ſhall ye receive.

8 So when even was come, the lord of the vineyard ſaid unto his ſteward, Call the labourers, and give them *their* hire, beginning from the laſt unto the firſt.

9 And when they came that *were hired* about the eleventh hour, they received every man a penny.

10 But when the firſt came, they ſuppoſed that they ſhould have received more; and they likewiſe received every man a penny.

11 And when they had received *it*, they murmured againſt the good man of the houſe,

12 Saying, Theſe laſt have wrought *but* one hour, and thou haſt made them equal unto us, which have borne the burden and heat of the day.

13 But he anſwered one of them and ſaid, Friend, I do thee no wrong: didſt not thou agree with me for a penny?

14 Take *that* thine *is*, and go thy way: I will give unto this laſt, even as unto thee.

15 Is it not lawful for me to do what I will with mine own? is thine eye evil becauſe I am good?

16 So the laſt ſhall be firſt, and the firſt laſt; for many be called, but few choſen.

17 ¶ And Jeſus going up to Jeruſalem, took the twelve diſciples apart in the way, and ſaid unto them,

18 Behold, we go up to Jeruſalem; and the Son of man ſhall be betrayed unto the chief prieſts, and unto the ſcribes, and they ſhall condemn him to death,

19 And ſhall deliver him to the Gentiles to mock, and to ſcourge, and to crucify *him*: and the third day he ſhall riſe again.

20 ¶ Then came to him the mother of Zebedee's children, with her ſons, worſhipping *him*, and deſiring a certain thing of him.

21 And he ſaid unto her, What wilt thou? She ſaith unto him, Grant that theſe my two ſons may ſit the one on thy right hand, and the other on the left, in thy kingdom.

22 But Jeſus anſwered and ſaid, Ye know not what ye aſk. Are ye able to drink of the cup that I ſhall drink of, and to be baptized with the baptiſm that I am baptized with? They ſay unto him, We are able.

23 And he ſaith unto them, Ye ſhall drink indeed of my cup, and be baptized with the baptiſm that I am baptized with: but to ſit on my right hand, and on my left, is not mine to give; but *it ſhall be given to them* for whom it is prepared of my Father.

24 And when the ten heard

it, they were moved with indignation against the two brethren.

25 But Jesus called them *unto him*, and said, Ye know that the princes of the Gentiles exercise dominion over them, and they that are great exercise authority upon them.

26 But it shall not be so among you: but whosoever will be great among you, let him be your minister;

27 And whosoever will be chief among you, let him be your servant:

28 Even as the Son of man came not to be ministered unto, but to minister, and to give his life a ransom for many.

29 And as they departed from Jericho, a great multitude followed him.

30 And, behold, two blind men sitting by the way side, when they heard that Jesus passed by, cried out, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, *thou* Son of David.

31 And the multitude rebuked them, because they should hold their peace: but they cried the more, saying, Have mercy on us, O Lord, *thou* Son of David.

32 And Jesus stood still, and called them, and said, What will ye that I shall do unto you?

33 They say unto him, Lord, that our eyes may be opened.

34 So Jesus had compassion *on them*, and touched their eyes: and immediately their eyes received sight, and they followed him.

CHAP. XXI.

Christ rideth on an ass.

AND when they drew nigh unto Jerusalem, and were come to Bethphage, unto the mount of Olives, then sent Jesus two disciples,

2 Saying unto them, Go into the village over against you, and straightway ye shall find an ass tied, and a colt with her: loose *them*, and bring *them* unto me.

3 And if any *man* say ought unto you, ye shall say, The Lord hath need of them, and straightway he will send them.

4 All this was done, that it might be fulfilled which was spoken by the prophet, saying,

5 Tell ye the daughter of Sion, Behold, thy king cometh unto thee, meek, and sitting upon an ass, and a colt the foal of an ass.

6 And the disciples went, and did as Jesus commanded them,

7 And brought the ass, and the colt, and put on them their clothes, and they set *him* thereon.

8 And a very great multitude spread their garments in the way; others cut down branches from the trees, and strawed *them* in the way.

9 And the multitudes that went before, and that followed, cried, saying, Hosanna to the son of David: Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord: Hosanna in the highest.

10 And when he was come into Jerusalem, all the city was moved, saying, Who is this?

11 And the multitude said, This is Jesus the prophet of Nazareth of Galilee.

12 ¶ And Jesus went into the temple of God, and cast out all them that sold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the seats of them that sold doves,

13 And said unto them, It is written, My house shall be called the house of prayer; but ye have made it a den of thieves.

14 And the blind and the
lame came to him in the temple,
and he healed them.
15 And when the chief priests
and scribes saw the wonderful
things that he did, and the chil-
dren crying in the temple, and
saying, Hosanna to the Son of
David; they were sore displeas-
ed,
16 And said unto him, Hear-
est thou what these say? And
Jesus saith unto them, Yea; have
ye never read, Out of the mouth
of babes and sucklings thou
hast perfected praise?
17 And he left them, and
went out of the city into Beth-
any; and he lodged there.
18 Now in the morning as he
returned into the city, he hun-
gered.
19 And when he saw a fig
tree in the way, he came to it,
and found nothing thereon, but
leaves only, and said unto it,
Let no fruit grow on thee hence-
forward for ever. And presently
the fig tree withered away.
20 And when the disciples
saw *it*, they marvelled, saying,
How soon is the fig tree wither-
ed away!
21 Jesus answered and said
unto them, Verily I say unto
you, If ye have faith, and doubt
not, ye shall not only do this
which is done to the fig tree, but
also, if ye shall say unto this
mountain, Be thou removed,
and be thou cast into the sea;
and it shall be done.
22 And all things, whatsoever
ye shall ask in prayer, believing,
ye shall receive.
23 ¶ And when he was come
into the temple, the chief
priests and the elders of the
people came unto him as he
was teaching, and said, By
what authority doest thou these
things? and who gave thee this
authority?
24 And Jesus answered and
said unto them, I also will ask
you one thing, which if ye tell
me, I in likewise will tell you
by what authority I do these
things.
25 The baptism of John,
whence was it? from heaven,
or of men? And they reasoned
with themselves, saying, If we
shall say, From heaven; he will
say unto us, Why did ye not
then believe him?
26 But if we shall say, Of
men; we fear the people: for
all hold John as a prophet.
27 And they answered Jesus,
and said, We cannot tell. And
he said unto them, Neither tell
I you by what authority I do
these things.
28 But what think ye? A
certain man had two sons; and
he came to the first, and said,
Son, go work to day in my
vineyard.
29 He answered and said,
I will not; but afterward he
repented, and went.
30 And he came to the se-
cond, and said likewise. And
he answered and said, I *go*, sir;
and went not.
31 Whether of them twain
did the will of *his* father? They
say unto him, The first. Jesus
saith unto the, Verily I say
unto you, That the publicans
and the harlots go into the
kingdom of God before you.
32 For John came unto you
in the way of righteousness, and
ye believed him not: but the
publicans and the harlots believ-
ed him. And ye, when ye had
seen *it*, repented not afterward,
that ye might believe him.

33 Hear another parable:
There was a certain housholder
which planted a vineyard, and
hedged it round about, and
digged a winepress in it, and
built a tower, and let it out to
husbandmen, and went into a
far country:
34 And when the time of the
fruit drew near, he sent his ser-
vants to the husbandmen, that
they might receive the fruits of
it.
35 And the husbandmen took
his servants, and beat one, and
killed another, and stoned an-
other.
36 Again, he sent other ser-
vants more than the first: and
they did unto them likewise.
37 But last of all he sent un-
to them his son, saying, They
will reverence my son.
38 But when the husbandmen
saw the son, they said among
themselves, This is the heir;
come, let us kill him, and let
us seize on his inheritance.
39 And they caught him, and
cast *him* out of the vineyard,
and slew *him*.
40 When the lord therefore of
the vineyard cometh, what will
he do unto those husbandmen?
41 They say unto him, He
will miserably destroy those
wicked men, and will let out
his vineyard unto other hus-
bandmen, which shall render
him their fruits in their seasons.
42 Jesus saith unto them, Did
ye never read in the scriptures,
The stone which the builders
rejected, the same is become the
head of the corner: this is the
Lord's doing, and it is mar-
vellous in our eyes?
43 Therefore say I unto you,
The kingdom of God shall be
taken from you, and given to a
nation bringing forth the fruits
thereof.
44 And whosoever shall fall
on this stone shall be broken:
but on whomsoever it shall fall,
it will grind him to powder.
45 And when the chief priests
and Pharisees had heard his pa-
rables, they perceived that he
spake of them.
46 But when they sought to
lay hands on him, they feared
the multitude, because they
took him for a prophet.

CHAP. XXII.

Parable of the king's son.

AND Jesus answered and
spake unto them again by
parables, and said,
2 The kingdom of heaven is
like unto a certain king, which
made a marriage for his son,
3 And sent forth his servants
to call them that were bidden to
the wedding: and they would
not come.
4 Again, he sent forth other
servants, saying, Tell them
which are bidden, Behold, I
have prepared my dinner; my
oxen and *my* fatlings *are* killed,
and all things *are* ready: come
unto the marriage.
5 But they made light of *it*,
and went their ways, one to
his farm, another to his mer-
chandise:
6 And the remnant took his
servants, and entreated *them*
spitefully, and slew *them*.
7 But when the king heard
thereof, he was wroth: and he
sent forth his armies, and de-
stroyed those murderers, and
burned up their city.
8 Then saith he to his ser-
vants, The wedding is ready,
but they which were bidden
were not worthy.
9 Go ye therefore into the
high-

highways, and as many as ye ſhall find, bid to the marriage.

10 So thoſe ſervants went out into the highways, and gathered together all as many as they found, both bad and good: and the wedding was furniſhed with gueſts.

11 ¶ And when the king came in to ſee the gueſts, he ſaw there a man which had not on a wedding garment:

12 And he ſaith unto him, Friend, how cameſt thou in hither, not having a wedding garment? And he was ſpeechleſs.

13 Then ſaid the king to the ſervants, Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and caſt *him* into outer darkneſs: there ſhall be weeping and gnaſhing of teeth.

14 For many are called, but few *are* choſen.

15 ¶ Then went the Phariſees, and took counſel how they might entangle him in *his* talk.

16 And they ſent out unto him their diſciples, with the Herodians, ſaying, Maſter, we know that thou art true, and teacheſt the way of God in truth, neither careſt thou for any *man:* for thou regardeſt not the perſon of men.

17 Tell us therefore, What thinkeſt thou; Is it lawful to give tribute unto Ceſar, or not?

18 But Jeſus perceived their wickedneſs, and ſaid, Why tempt ye me, *ye* hypocrites?

19 Shew me the tribute money. And they brought unto him a penny.

20 And he ſaith unto them, Whoſe *is* this image and ſuperſcription?

21 They ſay unto him, Ceſar's. Then ſaith he unto them, Render therefore unto Ceſar the things which are Ceſar's; and unto God the things that are God's.

22 When they had heard *theſe words*, they marvelled, and left him, and went their way.

23 ¶ The ſame day came to him the Sadducees, which ſay that there is no reſurrection, and aſked him,

24 Saying, Maſter, Moſes ſaid, If a man die, having no children, his brother ſhall marry his wife, and raiſe up ſeed unto his brother.

25 Now there were with us ſeven brethren: and the firſt, when he had married a wife, deceaſed, and having no iſſue, left his wife unto his brother:

26 Likewiſe the ſecond alſo, and the third, unto the ſeventh.

27 And laſt of all the woman died alſo.

28 Therefore in the reſurrection, whoſe wife ſhall ſhe be of the ſeven? for they all had her.

29 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, Ye do err, not knowing the ſcriptures nor the power of God.

30 For in the reſurrection they neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven.

31 But as touching the reſurrection of the dead, have ye not read that which was ſpoken unto you by God, ſaying,

32 I am the God of Abraham, and the God of Iſaac, and the God of Jacob? God is not the God of the dead, but of the living.

33 And when the multitude heard *this* they were aſtoniſhed at his doctrine.

34 But when the Phariſees had heard that he had put the Sadducees to ſilence, they were gathered together.

35 Then

35 Then one of them, *which was* a lawyer, asked *him a question* tempting him, and saying,
36 Master, which *is* the great commandment in the law?
37 Jesus said unto him, Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy mind.
38 This is the first and great commandment.
39 And the second *is* like unto it, Thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.
40 On these two commandments hang all the law and the prophets.
41 While the Pharisees were gathered together, Jesus asked them,
42 Saying, What think ye of Christ? whose Son is he? They say unto him, *The Son* of David.
43 He saith unto them, How then doth David in spirit call him Lord, saying,
44 The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand, till I make thine enemies thy footstool?
45 If David then call him Lord, how is he is Son?
46 And no man was able to answer him a word, neither durst any *man* from that day forth ask him any more *questions.*

CHAP. XXIII.

The Pharisees exposed.

THEN spake Jesus to the multitude, and to his disciples,
2 Saying, The scribes and the Pharisees sit in Moses' seat:
3 All therefore whatsoever they bid you observe, *that* observe and do; but do not ye after their works: for they say, and do not.
4 For they bind heavy burdens and grievous to be borne, and lay *them* on men's shoulders; but they *themselves* will not move them with one of their fingers.
5 But all their works they do for to be seen of men. They make broad their phylacteries, and enlarge the borders of their garments,
6 And love the uppermost rooms at feasts, and the chief seats in the synagogues,
7 And greetings in the markets, and to be called of men, Rabbi, Rabbi.
8 But be not ye called Rabbi: for one is your Master, *even* Christ; and all ye are brethren.
9 And call no *man* your father upon the earth: for one is your Father which is in heaven.
10 Neither be ye called masters: for one is your master, *even* Christ.
11 But he that is greatest among you shall be your servant.
12 And whosoever shall exalt himself shall be abased; and he that shall humble himself shall be exalted.
13 But woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye shut up the kingdom of heaven against men: for ye neither go in *yourselves*, neither suffer ye them that are entering to go in.
14 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye devour widow's houses, and for a pretence make long prayer: therefore ye shall receive the greater damnation.
15 Woe unto you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! for ye compass sea and land to make one proselyte, and when he is made, ye make him twofold more the child of hell than yourselves.

16 Woe unto you, *ye* blind guides, which ſay, Whoſoever ſhall ſwear by the temple, it is nothing; but whoſoever ſhall ſwear by the gold of the temple, he is a debtor!

17 *Ye* fools and blind: for whether is greater, the gold, or the temple that ſanctifieth the gold?

18 And whoſoever ſhall ſwear by the altar, it is nothing; but whoſoever ſweareth by the gift that is upon it, he is guilty.

19 *Ye* fools and blind: for whether *is* greater, the gift, or the altar that ſanctifieth the gift?

20 Whoſo therefore ſhall ſwear by the altar, ſweareth by it, and by all things thereon.

21 And whoſo ſhall ſwear by the temple, ſweareth by it, and by him that dwelleth therein.

22 And he that ſhall ſwear by heaven, ſweareth by the throne of God, and by him that ſitteth thereon.

23 Woe unto you, ſcribes and Phariſees, hypocrites! for ye pay tithe of mint, and aniſe, and cummin, and have omitted the weightier *matters* of the law; judgement, mercy, and faith: theſe ought ye to have done, and not to leave the other undone.

24 *Ye* blind guides, which ſtrain at a gnat, and ſwallow a camel.

25 Woe unto you, ſcribes and Phariſees, hypocrites! for ye make clean the outſide of the cup, and of the platter, but within they are full of extortion and exceſs.

26 *Thou* blind Phariſee, cleanſe firſt that *which is* within the cup and platter, that the outſide of them may be clean alſo.

27 Woe unto you, ſcribes and Phariſees, hypocrites! for ye are like unto whited ſepulchres, which indeed appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead *men's* bones, and of all uncleanneſs.

28 Even ſo ye alſo outwardly appear righteous unto men, but within ye are full of hypocriſy and iniquity.

29 Woe unto you, ſcribes and Phariſees, hypocrites! becauſe ye build the tombs of the prophets, and garniſh the ſepulchres of the righteous,

30 And ſay, If we had been in the days of our fathers, we would not have been partakers with them in the blood of the prophets.

31 Wherefore ye be witneſſes unto yourſelves, that ye are the children of them which killed the prophets.

32 Fill ye up then the meaſure of your fathers.

33 *Ye* ſerpents, *ye* generation of vipers, how can ye eſcape the damnation of hell?

34 ¶ Wherefore, behold, I ſend unto you prophets, and wiſe men, and ſcribes: and *ſome* of them ye ſhall kill and crucify; and *ſome* of them ſhall ye ſcourge in your ſynagogues, and perſecute *them* from city to city:

35 That upon you may come all the righteous blood ſhed upon the earth, from the blood of righteous Abel unto the blood of Zacharias ſon of Barachias, whom ye ſlew between the temple and the altar.

36 Verily I ſay unto you, All theſe things ſhall come upon this generation.

37 O Jeruſalem, Jeruſalem, *thou* that killeſt the prophets, and ſtoneſt them which are ſent unto thee, how often would I have

have gathered thy children together, even as a hen gathereth her chickens under *her* wings, and ye would not!

38 Behold, your house is left unto you desolate.

39 For I say unto you, Ye shall not see me henceforth, till ye shall say, Blessed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord.

CHAP. XXIV.

Temple's destruction foretold.

AND Jesus went out, and departed from the temple: and his disciples came to *him* for to shew him the buildings of the temple.

2 And Jesus said unto them, See ye not all these things? verily I say unto you, There shall not be left here one stone upon another, that shall not be thrown down.

3 And as he sat upon the mount of Olives, the disciples came unto him privately, saying, Tell us, when shall these things be? and what *shall be* the sign of thy coming, and of the end of the world?

4 And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you.

5 For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many.

6 And ye shall hear of wars, and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all *these things* must come to pass, but the end is not yet.

7 For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes in divers places.

8 All these *are* the beginning of sorrows.

9 Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake.

10 And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another.

11 And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many.

12 And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold

13 But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved.

14 And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations: and then shall the end come.

15 When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:)

16 Then let them which be in Judea flee into the mountains:

17 Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house:

18 Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes.

19 And woe unto them that are with child, and to them that give suck in those days!

20 But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day:

21 For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.

22 And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened.

23 Then if any man shall say unto

unto you, Lo, here *is* Chrift, or there; believe *it* not.

24 For there fhall arife falfe Chrifts, and falfe prophets, and fhall fhew great figns and wonders: infomuch that if *it were* poffible, they fhall deceive the very elect.

25 Behold, I have told you before.

26 Wherefore, if they fhall fay unto you, Behold, he is in the defert; go not forth: behold, *he is* in the fecret chambers; believe *it* not.

27 For as the lightning cometh out of the eaft, and fhineth even unto the weft; fo fhall alfo the coming of the Son of man be.

28 For wherefoever the carcafe is, there will the eagles be gathered together.

29 ¶ Immediately after the tribulation of thofe days fhall the fun be darkened, and the moon fhall not give her light, and the ftars fhall fall from heaven, and the powers of the heaven fhall be fhaken:

30 And then fhall appear the fign of the Son of man in heaven: and then fhall all the tribes of the earth mourn, and they fhall fee the Son of man coming in the clouds of heaven with power and great glory.

31 And he fhall fend his angels with a great found of a trumpet, and they fhall gather together his elect from the four winds, from one end of heaven to the other.

32 Now learn a parable of the fig tree; When his branch is yet tender, and putteth forth leaves, ye know that fummer *is* nigh:

33 So likewife ye, when ye fhall fee all thefe things, know that it is near, *even* at the doors.

34 Verily I fay unto you, This generation fhall not pafs, till all thefe things be fulfilled.

35 Heaven and earth fhall pafs away, but my words fhall not pafs away.

36 But of that day and hour knoweth no *man*, no, not the angels of heaven, but my Father only.

37 But as the days of Noe *were*, fo fhall alfo the coming of the Son of man be.

38 For as in the days that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage, until the day that Noe entered into the ark,

39 And knew not until the flood came, and took them all away; fo fhall alfo the coming of the Son of man be.

40 Then fhall two be in the field; the one fhall be taken, and the other left.

41 Two *women fhall be* grinding at the mill; the one fhall be taken, and the other left.

42 Watch therefore; for ye know not what hour your Lord doth come.

43 But know this, that if the good man of the houfe had known in what watch the thief would come, he would have watched, and would not have fuffered his houfe to be broken up.

44 Therefore be ye alfo ready: for in fuch an hour as ye think not the Son of man cometh.

45 Who then is a faithful and wife fervant, whom his lord hath made ruler over his houfhold, to give them meat in due feafon?

46 Bleffed *is* that fervant, whom his lord when he cometh fhall find fo doing.

47 Verily I fay unto you, That he

he ſhall make him ruler over
all his goods.
48 But and if that evil ſer-
vant ſhall ſay in his heart, My
lord delayeth his coming;
49 And ſhall begin to ſmite
his fellowſervants, and to eat
and drink with the drunken;
50 The lord of that ſervant
ſhall come in a day when he
looketh not for *him*, and in an
hour that he is not aware of,
51 And ſhall cut him aſunder,
and appoint *him* his portion
with the hypocrites: there ſhall
be weeping and gnaſhing of
teeth.

CHAP. XXV.

Parable of the ten virgins.

THEN ſhall the kingdom of
heaven be likened unto
ten virgins, which took their
lamps, and went forth to meet
the bridegroom.
2 And five of them were wiſe,
and five *were* fooliſh.
3 They that *were* fooliſh took
their lamps, and took no oil
with them:
4 But the wiſe took oil in
their veſſels with their lamps.
5 While the bridegroom tarri-
ed, they all ſlumbered and ſlept.
6 And at midnight there was
a cry made, Behold, the bride-
groom cometh; go ye out to
meet him
7 Then all thoſe virgins aroſe
and trimmed their lamps.
8 And the fooliſh ſaid unto
the wiſe, Give us of your oil;
for our lamps are gone out.
9 But the wiſe anſwered, ſay-
ing, *Not ſo*; leſt there be not
enough for us and you: but go
ye rather to them that ſell,
and buy for yourſelves.
10 And while they went to
buy, the bridegroom came; and
they that were ready went in
with him to the marriage: and
the door was ſhut.
11 Afterward came alſo the
other virgins, ſaying, Lord,
Lord, open to us.
12 But he anſwered and ſaid,
Verily I ſay unto you, I know
you not.
13 Watch therefore, for ye
know neither the day nor the
hour wherein the Son of man
cometh.
14 ¶ For *the kingdom of hea-
ven is* as a man travelling into a
far country, *who* called his own
ſervants, and delivered unto
them his goods.
15 And unto one he gave five
talents, to another two, and to
another one; to every man
according to his ſeveral ability;
and ſtraightway took his jour-
ney.
16 Then he that had receiv-
ed the five talents, went and
traded with the ſame, and made
them other five talents.
17 And likewiſe he that *had
received* two, he alſo gained
other two.
18 But he that had received
one, went and digged in the
earth, and hid his lord's money.
19 After a long time the
lord of thoſe ſervants cometh,
and reckoneth with them.
20 And ſo he that had receiv-
ed five talents came and brought
other five talents, ſaying, Lord,
thou deliveredſt unto me five ta-
lents: behold, I have gained be-
ſide them five talents more.
21 His lord ſaid unto him,
Well done, *thou* good and faith-
ful ſervant: thou haſt been
faithful over a few things, I
will make thee ruler over many
things: enter thou into the joy
of thy lord.
22 He alſo that had received
two

two talents came and ſaid, Lord, thou deliveredſt unto me two talents: behold, I have gained two other talents beſide them.

23 His lord ſaid unto him, Well done, good and faithful ſervant; thou haſt been faithful over a few things, I will make thee ruler over many things: enter thou into the joy of thy lord.

24 Then he which had received the one talent came and ſaid, Lord, I knew thee that thou art an hard man, reaping where thou haſt not ſown, and gathering where thou haſt not ſtrawed:

25 And I was afraid, and went and hid thy talent in the earth: lo, *there* thou haſt *that is* thine.

26 His lord anſwered and ſaid unto him, *Thou* wicked and ſlothful ſervant, thou kneweſt that I reap where I ſowed not, and gather where I have not ſtrawed:

27 Thou oughteſt therefore to have put my money to the exchangers, and *then* at my coming I ſhould have received mine own with uſury.

28 Take therefore the talent from him, and give *it* unto him which hath ten talents.

29 For unto every one that hath ſhall be given, and he ſhall have abundance: but from him that hath not ſhall be taken away even that which he hath.

30 And caſt ye the unprofitable ſervant into outer darkneſs: there ſhall be weeping and gnaſhing of teeth.

31 ¶ When the Son of man ſhall come in his glory, and all the holy angels with him, then ſhall he ſit upon the throne of his glory:

32 And before him ſhall be gathered all nations: and he ſhall ſeparate them one from another, as a ſhepherd divideth *his* ſheep from the goats:

33 And he ſhall ſet the ſheep on his right hand, but the goats on the left.

34 Then ſhall the king ſay unto them on his right hand, Come, ye bleſſed of my Father, inherit the kingdom prepared for you from the foundation of the world:

35 For I was an hungred, and ye gave me meat: I was thirſty, and ye gave me drink: I was a ſtranger, and ye took me in:

36 Naked, and ye clothed me: I was ſick, and ye viſited me: I was in priſon, and ye came unto me.

37 Then ſhall the righteous anſwer him, ſaying, Lord, when ſaw we thee an hungred, and fed *thee?* or thirſty, and gave *thee* drink?

38 When ſaw we thee a ſtranger, and took *thee* in? or naked, and clothed *thee?*

39 Or when ſaw we thee ſick, or in priſon, and came unto thee?

40 And the king ſhall anſwer and ſay unto them, Verily I ſay unto you, Inaſmuch as ye have done *it* unto one of the leaſt of theſe my brethren, ye have done *it* unto me.

41 Then ſhall he ſay alſo unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye curſed, into everlaſting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:

42 For I was an hungred, and ye gave me no meat: I was thirſty, and ye gave me no drink:

43 I was a ſtranger, and ye took me not in: naked, and ye clothed me not: ſick, and in priſon,

priſon, and ye viſited me not.
44 Then ſhall they alſo an-
ſwer him, ſaying, Lord, when
ſaw we thee an hungred, or
athirſt, or a ſtranger, or naked,
or ſick, or in priſon, and did
not miniſter unto thee?
45 Then ſhall he anſwer
them, ſaying, Verily I ſay unto
you, Inaſmuch as ye did *it* not
to one of the leaſt of theſe, ye
did *it* not to me.
46 And theſe ſhall go away in-
to everlaſting puniſhment: but
the righteous into life eternal.

CHAP. XXVI.

Conſpiracy againſt Chriſt.

AND it came to paſs, when
Jeſus had finiſhed all theſe
ſayings, he ſaid unto his diſci-
ples,
2 Ye know that after two
days is *the feaſt of* the paſſover,
and the Son of man is betray-
ed to be crucified.
3 Then aſſembled together the
chief prieſts, and the ſcribes,
and the elders of the people,
unto the palace of the high
prieſt, who was called Caiaphas,
4 And conſulted that they
might take Jeſus by ſubtilty,
and kill *him*.
5 But they ſaid, Not on the
feaſt *day*, leſt there be an up-
roar among the people.
6 Now when Jeſus was in
Bethany, in the houſe of Simon
the leper,
7 There came unto him a
woman having an alabaſter box
of very precious ointment, and
poured it on his head as he
ſat *at meat*.
8 But when his diſciples ſaw
it, they had indignation, ſaying,
To what purpoſe *is* this waſte?
9 For this ointment might
have been ſold for much, and
given to the poor.
10 When Jeſus underſtood *it*,
he ſaid unto them, Why trouble
ye the woman; for ſhe hath
wrought a good work upon me.
11 For ye have the poor al-
ways with you; but me ye have
not always.
12 For in that ſhe hath pour-
ed this ointment on my body,
ſhe did *it* for my burial.
13 Verily I ſay unto you,
Whereſoever this goſpel ſhall
be preached in the whole world,
there ſhall alſo this, that this wo-
man hath done, be told for a
memorial of her.
14 ¶ Then one of the twelve,
called Judas Iſcariot, went un-
to the chief prieſts,
15 And ſaid *unto them*, What
will ye give me, and I will de-
liver him unto you? And they
covenanted with him for thirty
pieces of ſilver.
16 And from that time he
ſought opportunity to betray
him.
17 ¶ Now the firſt *day* of the
feaſt of unleavened bread the
diſciples came to Jeſus, ſaying
unto him, Where wilt thou that
we prepare for thee to eat the
paſſover?
18 And he ſaid, Go into the
city to ſuch a man, and ſay un-
to him, The Maſter ſaith, My
time is at hand: I will keep the
paſſover at thy houſe with my
diſciples.
19 And the diſciples did as
Jeſus had appointed them; and
they made ready the paſſover.
20 Now when the even was
come, he ſat down with the
twelve.
21 And as they did eat, he
ſaid, Verily I ſay unto you, that
one of you ſhall betray me.
22 And they were exceeding
ſorrowful, and began every one
of

of them to ſay unto him, Lord,
is it I?
23 And he anſwered and ſaid,
He that dippeth *his* hand with
me in the diſh, the ſame ſhall
betray me.
24 The Son of man goeth, as
it is written of him: but woe
unto that man by whom the
Son of man is betrayed! it had
been good for that man if he
had not been born.
25 Then Judas, which be-
trayed him, anſwered and ſaid,
Maſter, is it I? He ſaid unto
him, Thou haſt ſaid.
26 And as they were eat-
ing, Jeſus took bread, and bleſſ-
ed *it*, and brake *it*, and gave *it*
to the diſciples, and ſaid, Take,
eat; this is my body.
27 And he took the cup, and
gave thanks, and gave *it* to
them, ſaying, Drink ye all of it;
28 For this is my blood of the
new teſtament, which is ſhed for
many for the remiſſion of ſins.
29 But I ſay unto you, I will
not drink henceforth of this
fruit of the vine, until that day
when I drink it new with you
in my Father's kingdom.
30 And when they had ſung
an hymn, they went out into
the mount of Olives.
31 Then ſaith Jeſus unto them,
All ye ſhall be offended becauſe
of me this night: for it is
written, I will ſmite the ſhep-
herd, and the ſheep of the flock
ſhall be ſcattered abroad.
32 But after I am riſen again,
I will go before you into Galilee.
33 Peter anſwered and ſaid
unto him, Though all *men* ſhall
be offended becauſe of thee, *yet*
will I never be offended.
34 Jeſus ſaid unto him, Ve-
rily I ſay unto thee, That this
night, before the cock crow,
thou ſhalt deny me thrice.
35 Peter ſaid unto him,
Though I ſhould die with thee,
yet will I not deny thee. Like-
wiſe alſo ſaid all the diſciples.
36 Then cometh Jeſus with
them unto a place called Geth-
ſemane, and ſaith unto the diſ-
ciples, Sit ye here, while I go
and pray yonder.
37 And he took with him Pe-
ter, and the two ſons of Zebe-
dee, and began to be ſorrowful
and very heavy.
38 Then ſaith he unto them,
My ſoul is exceeding ſorrow-
ful, even unto death: tarry ye
here, and watch with me.
39 And he went a little far-
ther, and fell on his face, and
prayed, ſaying, O my Father,
if it be poſſible, let this cup paſs
from me: nevertheleſs, not as
I will, but as thou *wilt*.
40 And he cometh unto the
diſciples, and findeth them
aſleep, and ſaith unto Peter,
What, could ye not watch with
me one hour?
41 Watch and pray, that ye
enter not into temptation. The
ſpirit indeed *is* willing, but the
fleſh *is* weak.
42 He went away again the
ſecond time and prayed, ſaying,
O my Father, if this cup may
not paſs away from me, except
I drink it, thy will be done.
43 And he came and found
them aſleep again: for their
eyes were heavy.
44 And he left them, and went
away again, and prayed the third
time, ſaying the ſame words.
45 Then cometh he to his
diſciples, and ſaith unto them,
Sleep on now, and take *your* reſt:
behold, the hour is at hand,
and the Son of man is betrayed
into the hands of ſinners.

46 Riſe, let us be going: be-
hold, he is at hand that doth
betray me.
47 ¶ And while he yet ſpake,
lo, Judas one of the twelve
came, and with him a great
multitude with ſwords and
ſtaves, from the chief prieſts
and elders of the people.
48 Now he that betrayed him
gave them a ſign, ſaying,
Whomſoever I ſhall kiſs, that
ſame is he: hold him faſt.
49 And forthwith he came to
Jeſus, and ſaid, Hail, Maſter;
and kiſſed him.
50 And Jeſus ſaid unto him,
Friend, Wherefore art thou
come? Then came they and laid
hands on Jeſus, and took him.
51 And, behold, one of them
which were with Jeſus ſtretched
out *his* hand, and drew his ſword,
and ſtruck a ſervant of the high
prieſt, and ſmote off his ear.
52 Then ſaid Jeſus unto him,
Put up again thy ſword into his
place: for all they that take
the ſword ſhall periſh with the
ſword.
53 Thinkeſt thou that I can-
not now pray to my Father, and
he ſhall preſently give me more
than twelve legions of angels?
54 But how then ſhall the
ſcriptures be fulfilled, That thus
it muſt be?
55 In that ſame hour ſaid
Jeſus to the multitudes, Are ye
come out as againſt a thief with
ſwords and ſtaves for to take
me? I ſat daily with you teach-
ing in the temple, and ye laid
no hold on me.
56 But all this was done that
the ſcriptures of the prophets
might be fulfilled. Then all the
diſciples forſook him and fled.
57 And they that had laid
hold on Jeſus led *him* away to
Caiaphas the high prieſt, where
the ſcribes and the elders were
aſſembled.
58 But Peter followed him
afar off unto the high prieſt's
palace, and went in, and ſat
with the ſervants, to ſee the end.
59 Now the chief prieſts, and
elders, and all the council,
ſought falſe witneſs againſt Je-
ſus to put him to death;
60 But found none: yea,
though many falſe witneſſes
came, *yet* found they none. At
the laſt came two falſe witneſſes,
61 And ſaid, This *fellow* ſaid,
I am able to deſtroy the temple
of God, and to build it in three
days.
62 And the high prieſt aroſe,
and ſaid unto him, Anſwereſt
thou nothing? what *is it which*
theſe witneſs againſt thee?
63 But Jeſus held his peace.
And the high prieſt anſwered,
and ſaid unto him, I adjure
thee by the living God, that
thou tell us whether thou be
the Chriſt, the Son of God.
64 Jeſus ſaith unto him,
Thou haſt ſaid. Nevertheleſs
I ſay unto you, Hereafter ſhall
ye ſee the Son of man ſitting
on the right hand of power,
and coming in the clouds of
heaven.
65 Then the high prieſt rent
his clothes, ſaying, He hath
ſpoken blaſphemy: what fur-
ther need have we of witneſſes?
behold, now ye have heard his
blaſphemy.
66 What think ye? They
anſwered and ſaid, He is guilty
of death.
67 Then did they ſpit in his
face, and buffeted him: and
others ſmote *him* with the
palms of their hands,
68 Saying, Propheſy unto us,
thou Chriſt? Who is he that
ſmote thee?

69 Now Peter ſat without in
the palace: and a damſel came
unto him, ſaying, Thou alſo
waſt with Jeſus of Galilee.
70 But he denied before *them*
all, ſaying, I know not what
thou ſayeſt.
71 And when he was gone out
into the porch, another *maid*
ſaw him, and ſaid unto them
that were there, This *fellow*
was alſo with Jeſus of Nazareth.
72 And again he denied with
an oath, I do not know the man.
73 And after a while came
unto *him* they that ſtood by,
and ſaid to Peter, Surely thou
alſo art *one* of them; for thy
ſpeech bewrayeth thee.
74 Then began he to curſe
and to ſwear, *ſaying*, I know
not the man. And immediately
the cock crew.
75 And Peter remembered
the word of Jeſus, which ſaid un-
to him, Before the cock crow,
thou ſhalt deny me thrice. And
he went out, and wept bitterly.

CHAP. XXVII.

Chriſt delivered to Pilate.

WHEN the morning was
come, all the chief prieſts
and elders of the people took
counſel againſt Jeſus to put
him to death:
2 And when they had bound
him, they led *him* away, and
delivered him to Pontius Pilate
the governor.
3 ¶ Then Judas which had
betrayed him, when he ſaw that
he was condemned, repented
himſelf, and brought again the
thirty pieces of ſilver to the
chief prieſts and elders,
4 Saying, I have ſinned, in that
I have betrayed the innocent
blood. And they ſaid, What *is*
that to us? ſee thou *to that.*
5 And he caſt down the pieces
of ſilver in the temple, and de-
parted, and went and hanged
himſelf.
6 And the chief prieſts took
the ſilver pieces, and ſaid, It is
not lawful for to put them into
the treaſury, becauſe it is the
price of blood.
7 And they took counſel, and
bought with them the potter's
field, to bury ſtrangers in.
8 Wherefore that field was
called, The field of blood unto
this day.
9 Then was fulfilled that
which was ſpoken by Jeremy
the prophet, ſaying, And they
took the thirty pieces of ſilver,
the price of him that was valu-
ed, whom they of the children
of Iſrael did value;
10 And gave them for the
potter's field, as the Lord ap-
pointed me.
11 And Jeſus ſtood before
the governor: and the governor
aſked him, ſaying, Art thou
the King of the Jews? And Je-
ſus ſaid unto him, Thou ſayeſt.
12 And when he was accuſed
of the chief prieſts and elders,
he anſwered nothing.
13 Then ſaid Pilate unto him
Heareſt thou not how many
things they witneſs againſt thee?
14 And he anſwered him to
never a word, inſomuch that
the governor marvelled greatly.
15 Now at *that* feaſt the
governor was wont to releaſe
unto the people a priſoner,
whom they would.
16 And they had then a nota-
ble priſoner, called Barabbas.
17 Therefore when they were
gathered together, Pilate ſaid
unto them, Whom will ye that
I releaſe unto you? Barabbas,
or Jeſus which is called Chriſt?
18 For he knew that for envy
they

they had delivered him.

19 When he was ſat down on the judgement ſeat, his wife ſent unto him, ſaying, Have thou nothing to do with that juſt man: for I have ſuffered many things this day in a dream becauſe of him.

20 But the chief prieſts and elders perſuaded the multitude that they ſhould aſk Barabbas, and deſtroy Jeſus.

21 The governor anſwered and ſaid unto him, Whether of the twain will ye that I releaſe unto you? They ſaid, Barabbas.

22 Pilate ſaith unto them, What ſhall I do then with Jeſus, which is called Chriſt? *They* all ſay unto him, Let him be crucified.

23 And the governor ſaid, Why, what evil hath he done? But they cried out the more, ſaying, Let him be crucified.

24 When Pilate ſaw that he could prevail nothing, but *that* rather a tumult was made, he took water and waſhed *his* hands before the multitude, ſaying, I am innocent of the blood of this juſt perſon: ſee ye *to it*.

25 Then anſwered all the people, and ſaid, His blood *be* on us, and on our children.

26 Then releaſed he Barabbas unto them: and when he had ſcourged Jeſus, he delivered *him* to be crucified.

27 Then the ſoldiers of the governor took Jeſus into the common hall, and gathered unto him the whole band *of ſoldiers*.

28 And they ſtripped him, and put on him a ſcarlet robe.

29 And when they had platted a crown of thorns, they put *it* upon his head, and a reed in his right hand: and they bowed the knee before him, and mocked him, ſaying, Hail, King of the Jews!

30 And they ſpit upon him, and took the reed, and ſmote him on the head.

31 ¶ And after that they had mocked him, they took the robe off from him, and put his own raiment on him, and led him away to crucify *him*.

32 And as they came out, they found a man of Cyrene, Simon by name: him they compelled to bear his croſs.

33 And when they were come unto a place called Golgotha, that is to ſay, A place of a ſkull,

34 They gave him vinegar to drink mingled with gall: and when he had taſted *thereof*, he would not drink.

35 And they crucified him, and parted his garments, caſting lots: that it might be fulfilled which was ſpoken by the prophet, They parted my garments among them, and upon my veſture did they caſt lots.

36 And ſitting down they watched him there;

37 And ſet up over his head his accuſation written, THIS IS JESUS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

38 Then were there two thieves crucified with him, one on the right hand, and another on the left.

39 And they that paſſed by reviled him, wagging their heads,

40 And ſaying, Thou that deſtroyeſt the temple, and buildeſt *it* in three days, ſave thyſelf. If thou be the Son of God, come down from the croſs.

41 Likewiſe alſo the chief prieſts mocking *him*, with the ſcribes and elders, ſaid,

42 He ſaved others; himſelf
he cannot ſave: if he be the
King of Iſrael, let him now
come down from the croſs, and
we will believe him.
43 He truſted in God; let
him deliver him now, if he will
have him: for he ſaid, I am
the Son of God.
44 The thieves alſo, which
were crucified with him, caſt
the ſame in his teeth.
45 Now from the ſixth hour
there was darkneſs over all the
land unto the ninth hour.
46 And about the ninth hour
Jeſus cried with a loud voice,
ſaying, Eli, Eli, lama ſabach-
thani? that is to ſay, My God,
my God, why haſt thou forſak-
en me?
47 Some of them that ſtood
there, when they heard *that*, ſaid,
This *man* calleth for Elias.
48 And ſtraightway one of
them ran, and took a ſpunge,
and filled *it* with vinegar, and
put *it* on a reed, and gave him
to drink.
49 The reſt ſaid, Let be, let
us ſee whether Elias will come
to ſave him.
50 Jeſus, when he had cri-
ed again with a loud voice,
yielded up the ghoſt.
51 And, behold, the veil of
the temple was rent in twain,
from the top to the bottom;
and the earth did quake, and
the rocks rent;
52 And the graves were
opened; and many bodies of
the ſaints which ſlept aroſe,
53 And came out of the
graves after his reſurrection,
and went into the holy city,
and appeared unto many.
54 Now when the centurion,
and they that were with him,
watching Jeſus, ſaw the earth-
quake, and thoſe things that
were done, they feared greatly,
ſaying, Truly this was the Son
of God.
55 And many women were
there beholding afar off, which
followed Jeſus from Galilee,
miniſtering unto him:
56 Among which was Mary
Magdalene, and Mary the mo-
ther of James and Joſes, and the
mother of Zebedee's children.
57 When the even was come,
there came a rich man of Ari-
mathea, named Joſeph, who al-
ſo himſelf was Jeſus' diſciple:
58 He went to Pilate, and
begged the body of Jeſus. Then
Pilate commanded the body to
be delivered.
59 And when Joſeph had
taken the body, he wrapped it
in a clean linen cloth,
60 And laid it in his own
new tomb, which he had hewn
out in the rock: and he rolled
a great ſtone to the door of the
ſepulchre, and departed.
61 And there was Mary Mag-
dalene, and the other Mary, ſit-
ting over againſt the ſepulchre.
62 Now the next day, that
followed the day of the pre-
paration, the chief prieſts and
Phariſees came together unto
Pilate,
63 Saying, Sir, we remember
that that deceiver ſaid while he
was yet alive, After three days
I will riſe again.
64 Command therefore that
the ſepulchre be made ſure un-
til the third day, leſt his diſci-
ples come by night, and ſteal
him away, and ſay unto the
people, He is riſen from the
dead. So the laſt error ſhall be
worſe than the firſt.
65 Pilate ſaid unto them, Ye
have a watch: go your way,

make *it* as ſure as ye can.
66 So they went and made
the ſepulchre ſure, ſealing the
ſtone, and ſetting a watch.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Chriſt's reſurrection.

IN the end of the ſabbath, as
it began to dawn toward the
firſt *day* of the week, came Mary
Magdalene, and the other Mary,
to ſee the ſepulchre.
2 And, behold, there was a
great earthquake: for the an-
gel of the Lord deſcended from
heaven, and came and rolled
back the ſtone from the door,
and ſat upon it.
3 His countenance was like
lightning, and his raiment white
as ſnow:
4 And for fear of him the
keepers did ſhake, and became
as dead *men*.
5 And the angel anſwered
and ſaid unto the women, Fear
not ye: for I know that ye ſeek
Jeſus, which was crucified.
6 He is not here: for he is
riſen, as he ſaid, Come, ſee the
place where the Lord lay.
7 And go quickly, and tell
his diſciples that he is riſen
from the dead; and, behold, he
goeth before you into Galilee:
there ſhall ye ſee him: lo, I
have told you.
8 And they departed quickly
from the ſepulchre with fear
and great joy; and did run to
bring his diſciples word.
9 ¶ And as they went to tell
his diſciples, behold, Jeſus met
them, ſaying, All hail. And
they came, and held him by the
feet, and worſhipped him.
10 Then ſaid Jeſus unto them,
Be not afraid: go tell my bre-
thren that they go into Galilee,
and there ſhall they ſee me.
11 Now when they were
going, behold, ſome of the
watch came into the city, and
ſhewed unto the chief prieſts
all the things that were done.
12 And when they were aſ-
ſembled with the elders, and
had taken counſel, they gave
large money unto the ſoldiers,
13 Saying, Say ye, His diſci-
ples came by night, and ſtole
him *away* while we ſlept.
14 And if this come to the
governor's ears, we will per-
ſuade him, and ſecure you.
15 So they took the money,
and did as they were taught:
and this ſaying is commonly
reported among the Jews until
this day.
16 ¶ Then the eleven diſci-
ples went away into Galilee,
into a mountain where Jeſus
had appointed them.
17 And when they ſaw him,
they worſhipped him: but ſome
doubted.
18 And Jeſus came, and ſpake
unto them, ſaying, All power
is given unto me in heaven and
in earth.
19 ¶ Go ye therefore and
teach all nations, baptizing
them in the name of the Father,
and of the Son, and of the
Holy Ghoſt:
20 Teaching them to obſerve
all things whatſoever I have
commanded you: and, lo, I
am with you alway, *even* unto
the end of the world. Amen.

The Gospel according to Saint MARK.

CHAP. I.

John Baptist's office.

THE beginning of the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God;

2 As it is written in the prophets, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

3 The voice of one crying in the wilderness, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths straight.

4 John did baptize in the wilderness, and preach the baptism of repentance for the remission of sins.

5 And there went out unto him all the land of Judea, and they of Jerusalem, and were all baptized of him in the river of Jordan, confessing their sins.

6 And John was clothed with camels' hair, and with a girdle of a skin about his loins; and he did eat locusts and wild honey;

7 And preached, saying, There cometh one mightier than I after me, the latchet of whose shoes I am not worthy to stoop down and unloose.

8 I indeed have baptized you with water: but he shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost.

9 ¶ And it came to pass in those days, that Jesus came from Nazareth of Galilee, and was baptized of John in Jordan.

10 And straightway coming up out of the water, he saw the heavens opened, and the Spirit like a dove descending upon him:

11 And there came a voice from heaven, *saying*, Thou art my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased.

12 ¶ And immediately the spirit driveth him into the wilderness.

13 And he was there in the wilderness forty days tempted of Satan: and was with the wild beasts; and the angels ministered unto him.

14 ¶ Now after that John was put in prison, Jesus came into Galilee preaching the gospel of the kingdom of God,

15 And saying, The time is fulfilled, and the kingdom of God is at hand: repent ye, and believe the gospel.

16 ¶ Now as he walked by the sea of Galilee, he saw Simon, and Andrew his brother, casting a net into the sea: for they were fishers.

17 And Jesus said unto them, Come ye after me, and I will make you to become fishers of men.

18 And straightway they forsook their nets, and followed him.

19 And when he had gone a little farther thence, he saw James the *son* of Zebedee, and John his brother, who also were in the ship mending their nets.

20 And straightway he called them; and they left their father Zebedee in the ship with the hired servants, and went after him.

21 And they went into Capernaum: and straightway on the sabbath day he entered into the synagogue, and taught.

22 And they were astonished at his doctrine: for he taught them as one that had authority, and not as the scribes.

23 And there was in their synagogue a man with an unclean spirit; and he cried out,

24 Saying, Let *us* alone; what have we to do with thee, thou Jesus of Nazareth? art

thou come to deſtroy us? I know thee who thou art, the Holy One of God.

25 And Jeſus rebuked him, ſaying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him.

26 And when the unclean ſpirit had torn him, and cried with a loud voice, he came out of him.

27 And they were all amazed, inſomuch that they queſtioned among themſelves, ſaying, What thing is this? what new doctrine *is* this? for with authority commandeth he even the unclean ſpirits, and they do obey him.

28 And immediately his fame ſpread abroad throughout all the region round about Galilee.

29 And forthwith when they were come out of the ſynagogue, they entered into the houſe of Simon and Andrew, with James and John.

30 But Simon's wife's mother lay ſick of a fever; and anon they tell him of her.

31 And he came and took her by the hand, and lifted her up: and immediately the fever left her, and ſhe miniſtered unto them.

32 ¶ And at even, when the ſun did ſet, they brought unto him all that were diſeaſed, and them that were poſſeſſed with devils.

33 And all the city was gathered together at the door.

34 And he healed many that were ſick of divers diſeaſes, and caſt out many devils; and ſuffered not the devils to ſpeak, becauſe they knew him.

35 And in the morning, riſing up a great while before day, he went out, and departed into a ſolitary place, and there prayed.

36 And Simon, and they that were with him, followed after him.

37 And when they had found him, they ſaid unto him, All *men* ſeek for thee.

38 And he ſaid unto them, Let us go into the next towns, that I may preach there alſo: for therefore came I forth.

39 And he preached in their ſynagogues throughout all Galilee, and caſt out devils.

40 And there came a leper to him, beſeeching him, and kneeling down to him, and ſaying unto him, If thou wilt, thou canſt make me clean.

41 And Jeſus, moved with compaſſion, put forth *his* hand, and touched him, and ſaith unto him, I will; be thou clean.

42 And as ſoon as he had ſpoken, immediately the leproſy departed from him, and he was cleanſed.

43 And he ſtraitly charged him, and forthwith ſent him away;

44 And ſaith unto him, See thou ſay nothing to any man: but go thy way, ſhew thyſelf to the prieſt, and offer for thy cleanſing thoſe things which Moſes commanded, for a teſtimony unto them.

45 But he went out, and began to publiſh *it* much, and to blaze abroad the matter, inſomuch that Jeſus could no more openly enter into the city, but was without in deſert places: and they came to him from every quarter.

CHAP. II.

Chriſt healeth the palſy.

AND again he entered into Capernaum after *ſome* days; and it was noiſed that he was in the houſe.

2 And

2 And ſtraightway many were gathered together, inſomuch that there was no room to receive *them*, no, not ſo much as about the door: and he preached the word unto them.

3 And they come unto him, bringing one ſick of the palſy, which was borne of four.

4 And when they could not come nigh unto him for the preſs, they uncovered the roof where he was: and when they had broken *it* up, they let down the bed wherein the ſick of the palſy lay.

5 When Jeſus ſaw their faith, he ſaid unto the ſick of the palſy, Son, thy ſins be forgiven thee.

6 But there were certain of the ſcribes ſitting there, and reaſoning in their hearts,

7 Why doth this *man* thus ſpeak blaſphemies? who can forgive ſins but God only?

8 And immediately, when Jeſus perceived in his ſpirit that they ſo reaſoned within themſelves, he ſaid unto them, Why reaſon ye theſe things in your hearts?

9 Whether is it eaſier to ſay to the ſick of the palſy, *Thy* ſins be forgiven thee; or to ſay, Ariſe, and take up thy bed, and walk?

10 But that ye may know that the Son of man hath power on earth to forgive ſins (he ſaith to the ſick of the palſy,)

11 I ſay unto thee, Ariſe, and take up thy bed, and go thy way into thine houſe.

12 And immediately he aroſe, took up the bed, and went forth before them all; inſomuch that they were all amazed, and glorified God, ſaying, We never ſaw it on this faſhion.

13 And he went forth again by the ſea ſide; and all the multitude reſorted unto him, and he taught them.

14 ¶ And as he paſſed by, he ſaw Levi the *ſon* of Alpheus ſitting at the receipt of cuſtom, and ſaid unto him, Follow me. And he aroſe, and followed him.

15 ¶ And it came to paſs, that as Jeſus ſat at meat in his houſe, many publicans and ſinners ſat alſo together with Jeſus and his diſciples: for there were many, and they followed him.

16 And when the ſcribes and Phariſees ſaw him eat with publicans and ſinners, they ſaid unto his diſciples, How is it that he eateth and drinketh with publicans and ſinners?

17 When Jeſus heard *it*, he ſaith unto them, They that are whole have no need of the phyſician, but they that are ſick: I came not to call the righteous, but ſinners to repentance.

18 And the diſciples of John and of the Phariſees uſed to faſt. And they come and ſay unto him, Why do the diſciples of John and of the Phariſees faſt, but thy diſciples faſt not?

19 And Jeſus ſaid unto them, Can the children of the bridechamber faſt while the bridegroom is with them? as long as they have the bridegroom with them they cannot faſt.

20 But the days will come when the bridegroom ſhall be taken away from them, and then ſhall they faſt in thoſe days.

21 No man alſo ſeweth a piece of new cloth on an old garment, elſe the new piece that filled it up taketh away from the old, and the rent is made worſe.

22 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles: elſe the new wine doth burſt the bottles,

and the wine is spilled, and the
bottles will be marred: but
new wine must be put into new
bottles.
23 ¶ And it came to pass, that
he went through the corn fields
on the sabbath day; and his
disciples began, as they went,
to pluck the ears of corn.
24 And the Pharisees said un-
to him, Behold, why do they on
the sabbath day that which is
not lawful?
25 And he said unto them,
Have ye never read what David
did when he had need and
was an hungred, he, and they
that were with him?
26 How he went into the
house of God in the days of
Abiathar the high priest, and
did eat the shewbread, which
is not lawful to eat but for the
priests, and gave also to them
which were with him?
27 And he said unto them,
The sabbath was made for man,
and not man for the sabbath:
28 Therefore the Son of man
is Lord also of the sabbath.

CHAP. III.

The twelve apostles chosen.

AND he entered again into
the synagogue; and there
was a man there which had a
withered hand.
2 And they watched him
whether he would heal him on
the sabbath day; that they
might accuse him.
3 And he saith unto the man
which had the withered hand,
Stand forth.
4 And he saith unto them,
Is it lawful to do good on the
sabbath days, or to do evil? to
save life, or to kill? But they
held their peace.
5 And when he had looked
round about on them with an-
ger, being grieved for the hard-
ness of their hearts, he saith
unto the man, Stretch forth
thine hand. And he stretched *it*
out. And his hand was restored
whole as the other.
6 And the Pharisees went
forth, and straightway took
counsel with the Herodians
against him, how they might
destroy him.
7 But Jesus withdrew himself
with his disciples to the sea:
and a great multitude from
Galilee followed him, and from
Judea,
8 And from Jerusalem, and
from Idumea, and *from* be-
yond Jordan: and they about
Tyre and Sidon, a great mul-
titude, when they had heard
what great things he did, came
unto him.
9 And he spake to his disci-
ples, that a small ship should
wait on him, because of the
multitude, lest they should
throng him.
10 For he had healed many:
insomuch that they pressed up-
on him for to touch him, as
many as had plagues.
11 And unclean spirits, when
they saw him, fell down before
him, and cried, saying, Thou
art the Son of God.
12 And he straitly charged
them, that they should not
make him known
13 ¶ And he goeth up into a
mountain, and calleth *unto*
him whom he would: and
they came unto him.
14 And he ordained twelve,
that they should be with him,
and that he might send them
forth to preach,
15 And to have power to
heal sicknesses, and to cast out
devils:

16 And Simon he ſurnamed Peter;

17 And James the *ſon* of Zebedee, and John the brother of James: and he ſurnamed them Boanerges, which is, The ſons of thunder:

18 And Andrew, and Philip, and Bartholomew, and Matthew, and Thomas, and James the *ſon* of Alpheus, and Thaddeus, and Simon the Canaanite,

19 And Judas Iſcariot, which alſo betrayed him. And they went into an houſe.

20 And the multitude cometh together again, ſo that they could not ſo much as eat bread.

21 And when his friends heard *of it*, they went out to lay hold on him: for they ſaid, He is beſide himſelf.

22 ¶ And the ſcribes which came down from Jeruſalem ſaid, He hath Beelzebub, and by the prince of the devils caſteth he out devils.

23 And he called them *unto him*; and ſaid unto them in parables, How can Satan caſt out Satan?

24 And if a kingdom be divided againſt itſelf, that kingdom cannot ſtand.

25 And if a houſe be divided againſt itſelf, that houſe cannot ſtand.

26 And if Satan riſe up againſt himſelf, and be divided, he cannot ſtand, but hath an end.

27 No man can enter into a ſtrong man's houſe, and ſpoil his goods, except he will firſt bind the ſtrong man; and then he will ſpoil his houſe.

28 Verily I ſay unto you, All ſins ſhall be forgiven unto the ſons of men, and blaſphemies wherewithſoever they ſhall blaſpheme:

29 But he that ſhall blaſpheme againſt the Holy Ghoſt hath never forgiveneſs, but is in danger of eternal damnation:

30 Becauſe they ſaid, He hath an unclean ſpirit.

31 ¶ There came then his brethren, and his mother, and ſtanding without, ſent unto him, calling him.

32 And the multitude ſat about him, and they ſaid unto him, Behold, thy mother and thy brethren without ſeek for thee.

33 And he anſwered them, ſaying, Who is my mother, or my brethren?

34 And he looked round about on them which ſat about him, and ſaid, Behold my mother and my brethren!

35 For whoſoever ſhall do the will of God, the ſame is my brother, and my ſiſter, and mother.

CHAP. IV.

Parable of the ſower.

AND he began again to teach by the ſea ſide: and there was gathered unto him a great multitude, ſo that he entered into a ſhip, and ſat in the ſea: and the whole multitude was by the ſea on the land.

2 And he taught them many things by parables, and ſaid unto them in his doctrine,

3 Hearken: Behold, there went out a ſower to ſow:

4 And it came to paſs as he ſowed, ſome fell by the way ſide, and the fowls of the air came and devoured it up.

5 And ſome fell on ſtony ground, where it had not much earth; and immediately it ſprang up, becauſe it had no depth of earth:

6 But when the ſun was up, it was ſcorched: and becauſe it

had no root it withered away.
7 And ſome fell among
thorns, and the thorns grew
up, and choked it, and it yield-
ed no fruit.
8 And other fell on good
ground, and did yield fruit that
ſprang up, and increaſed, and
brought forth, ſome thirty, and
ſome ſixty, and ſome an hun-
dred.
9 And he ſaid unto them,
He that hath ears to hear, let
him hear.
10 And when he was alone,
they that were about him with
the twelve aſked of him the pa-
rable.
11 And he ſaid unto them,
Unto you it is given to know
the myſtery of the kingdom of
God: but unto them that are
without all *theſe* things are
done in parables:
12 That ſeeing they may ſee,
and not perceive; and hearing
they may hear, and not under-
ſtand; leſt at any time they
ſhould be converted, and *their*
ſins ſhould be forgiven them.
13 And he ſaid unto them,
Know ye not this parable? and
how then will ye know all pa-
rables?
14 ¶ The ſower ſoweth the
word.
15 And theſe are they by the
way ſide, where the word is
ſown; but when they have
heard, Satan cometh immedi-
ately, and taketh away the word
that was ſown in their hearts.
16 And theſe are they like-
wiſe which are ſown on ſtony
ground; who, when they have
heard the word, immediately
receive it with gladneſs;
17 And have no root in them-
ſelves, and ſo endure but for a
time; afterward when affliction
or perſecution ariſeth for the
word's ſake, immediately they
are offended.
18 And theſe are they which
are ſown among thorns; ſuch
as hear the word,
19 And the cares of this
world, and the deceitfulneſs of
riches, and the luſts of other
things entering in, choke the
word, and it becometh unfruit-
ful.
20 And theſe are they which
are ſown on good ground; ſuch
as hear the word, and receive
it, and bring forth fruit, ſome
thirty-fold, ſome ſixty, and
ſome an hundred.
21 And he ſaid unto them,
Is a candle brought to be put
under a buſhel, or under a bed?
and not to be ſet on a candle-
ſtick?
22 For there is nothing hid,
which ſhall not be manifeſted:
neither was any thing kept ſe-
cret, but that it ſhould come
abroad.
23 If any man have ears to
hear, let him hear.
24 And he ſaith unto them,
Take heed what ye hear. With
what meaſure ye mete, it ſhall
be meaſured to you: and unto
you that hear ſhall more be
given.
25 For he that hath, to him
ſhall be given; and he that hath
not, from him ſhall be taken
even that which he hath.
26 ¶ And he ſaid, So is the
kingdom of God, as if a man
ſhould caſt ſeed into the ground;
27 And ſhould ſleep, and riſe,
night and day, and the ſeed
ſhould ſpring and grow up, he
knoweth not how.
28 For the earth bringeth
forth fruit of herſelf, firſt the
blade, then the ear, after that
the

the full corn in the ear.
29 But when the fruit is
brought forth, immediately he
putteth in the ſickle, becauſe
the harveſt is come.
30 ¶ And he ſaid, Whereun-
to ſhall we liken the kingdom
of God? or with what compa-
riſon ſhall we compare it?
31 *It is* like a grain of muſ-
tard ſeed, which, when it is
ſown in the earth, is leſs than all
the ſeeds that be in the earth:
32 But when it is ſown, it
groweth up, and becometh
greater than all herbs, and
ſhooteth out great branches; ſo
that the fowls of the air may
lodge under the ſhadow of it.
33 And with many ſuch pa-
rables ſpake he the word unto
them as they were able to
hear *it*.
34 But without a parable ſpake
he not unto them: and when
they were alone, he expounded
all things to his diſciples.
35 And the ſame day, when
the even was come, he ſaith un-
to them, Let us paſs over unto
the other ſide.
36 And when they had ſent
away the multitude, they took
him, even as he was in the ſhip.
And there were alſo with him
other little ſhips.
37 And there aroſe a great
ſtorm of wind, and the waves
beat into the ſhip, ſo that it
was now full.
38 And he was in the hinder
part of the ſhip, aſleep on a pil-
low. And they awake him, and
ſay unto him, Maſter, careſt
thou not that we periſh?
39 And he aroſe, and rebuk-
ed the wind, and ſaid unto the
ſea, Peace, be ſtill. And the
wind ceaſed, and there was a
great calm.
40 And he ſaid unto them,
Why are ye ſo fearful? how is
it that ye have no faith?
41 And they feared exceed-
ingly, and ſaid one to another,
What manner of man is this,
that even the wind and the ſea
obey him?

CHAP. V.

A legion of devils caſt out.

AND they came over unto
the other ſide of the ſea,
into the country of the Gada-
renes.
2 And when he was come out
of the ſhip, immediately there
met him out of the tombs a
man with an unclean ſpirit,
3 Who had *his* dwelling
among the tombs; and no man
could bind him, no, not with
chains:
4 Becauſe that he had been
often bound with fetters and
chains, and the chains had been
plucked aſunder by him, and
the fetters broken in pieces:
neither could any *man* tame
him.
5 And always, night and day,
he was in the mountains and
in the tombs, crying, and cut-
ting himſelf with ſtones.
6 But when he ſaw Jeſus afar
off, he ran and worſhipped him,
7 And cried with a loud
voice, and ſaid, What have I
to do with thee, Jeſus, *thou* Son
of the moſt high God? I adjure
thee by God, that thou torment
me not.
8 For he ſaid unto him,
Come out of the man, *thou* un-
clean ſpirit.
9 And he aſked him, What
is thy name? And he anſwered,
ſaying, My name *is* Legion; for
we are many.
10 And he beſought him
much that he would not ſend

them away out of the country.

11 Now there was there nigh unto the mountains a great herd of ſwine feeding.

12 And all the devils beſought him, ſaying, Send us into the ſwine, that we may enter into them.

13 And forthwith Jeſus gave them leave. And the unclean ſpirits went out, and entered into the ſwine: and the herd ran violently down a ſteep place into the ſea, (they were about two thouſand,) and were choked in the ſea.

14 And they that fed the ſwine fled, and told *it* in the city, and in the country. And they went out to ſee what it was that was done.

15 And they come to Jeſus, and ſee him that was poſſeſſed with the devil, and had the legion, ſitting, and clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

16 And they that ſaw *it* told them how it befel to him that was poſſeſſed with the devil, and *alſo* concerning the ſwine.

17 And they began to pray him to depart out of their coaſts.

18 And when he was come into the ſhip, he that had been poſſeſſed with the devil prayed him that he might be with him.

19 Howbeit Jeſus ſuffered him not, but ſaith unto him, Go home to thy friends, and tell them how great things the Lord hath done for thee, and hath had compaſſion on thee.

20 And he departed, and began to publiſh in Decapolis how great things Jeſus had done for him. And all *men* did marvel.

21 ¶ And when Jeſus was paſſed over again by ſhip unto the other ſide, much people gathered unto him: and he was nigh unto the ſea.

22 And, behold, there cometh one of the rulers of the ſynagogue, Jairus by name; and when he ſaw him, he fell at his feet,

23 And beſought him greatly, ſaying, My little daughter lieth at the point of death: *I pray thee,* come, and lay thy hands on her, that ſhe may be healed; and ſhe ſhall live.

24 And *Jeſus* went with him: and much people followed him, and thronged him.

25 ¶ And a certain woman which had an iſſue of blood twelve years,

26 And had ſuffered many things of many phyſicians, and had ſpent all that ſhe had, and was nothing bettered, but rather grew worſe,

27 When ſhe had heard of Jeſus, came in the preſs behind, and touched his garment.

28 For ſhe ſaid, If I may touch but his clothes, I ſhall be whole.

29 And ſtraightway the fountain of her blood was dried up; and ſhe felt in *her* body that ſhe was healed of that plague.

30 And Jeſus immediately knowing in himſelf that virtue had gone out of him, turned him about in the preſs, and ſaid, Who touched my clothes?

31 And his diſciples ſaid unto him, Thou ſeeſt the multitude thronging thee, and ſayeſt thou, Who touched me?

32 And he looked round about to ſee her that had done this thing.

33 But the woman fearing
and trembling, knowing what
was done in her, came, and fell
down before him, and told him
all the truth.

34 And he said unto her,
Daughter, thy faith hath made
thee whole: go in peace, and
be whole of thy plague.

35 While he yet spake, there
came from the ruler of the sy-
nagogue's *house certain* which
said, Thy daughter is dead:
why troublest thou the master
any further?

36 As soon as Jesus heard the
word that was spoken, he saith
unto the ruler of the syna-
gogue, Be not afraid, only be-
lieve.

37 And he suffered no man
to follow him, save Peter, and
James, and John the brother
of James.

38 And he cometh to the
house of the ruler of the syna-
gogue, and seeth the tumult,
and them that wept, and wailed
greatly.

39 And when he was come in,
he saith unto them, Why make
ye this ado, and weep? the
damsel is not dead, but sleepeth.

40 And they laughed him to
scorn. But when he had put
them all out, he taketh the fa-
ther and the mother of the
damsel, and them that were
with him, and entereth in where
the damsel was lying.

41 And he took the damsel
by the hand, and said unto her,
Talitha, cumi; which is, being
interpreted, Damsel, I say un-
to thee, arise.

42 And straightway the dam-
sel arose, and walked: for she
was *of the age* of twelve years.
And they were astonished with
a great astonishment.

43 And he charged them
straitly, that no man should
know it; and commanded that
something should be given her
to eat.

CHAP. VI.

Christ walketh on the sea.

AND he went out from
thence, and came into his
own country; and his disciples
follow him.

2 And when the sabbath day
was come, he began to teach in
the synagogue: and many
hearing *him* were astonished,
saying, From whence hath this
man these things? and what
wisdom *is* this which is given
unto him, that even such
mighty works are wrought by
his hands?

3 Is not this the carpenter,
the son of Mary, the brother of
James and Joses, and of Juda
and Simon? and are not his
sisters here with us? And they
were offended at him.

4 But Jesus said unto them,
A prophet is not without ho-
nour but in his own country,
and among his own kin, and in
his own house.

5 And he could there do no
mighty work, save that he laid
his hands upon a few sick folk,
and healed *them*.

6 And he marvelled because
of their unbelief. And he went
round about the villages, teach-
ing.

7 ¶ And he called *unto him*
the twelve, and began to send
them forth by two and two;
and gave them power over un-
clean spirits;

8 And commanded them, that
they should take nothing for
their journey, save a staff only;
no scrip, no bread, no money
in *their* purse:

9 But *be* ſhod with ſandals; and not put on two coats.

10 And he ſaid unto them, In what place ſoever ye enter into an houſe, there abide till ye depart from that place.

11 And whoſoever ſhall not receive you nor hear you, when ye depart thence, ſhake off the duſt under your feet for a teſtimony againſt them. Verily I ſay unto you, It ſhall be more tolerable for Sodom and Gomorrha in the day of judgement than for that city.

12 And they went out, and preached that men ſhould repent.

13 And they caſt out many devils, and anointed with oil many that were ſick, and healed *them*.

14 And king Herod heard *of him*; (for his name was ſpread abroad:) and he ſaid, That John the Baptiſt was riſen from the dead, and therefore mighty works do ſhew forth themſelves in him.

15 Others ſaid, That it is Elias. And others ſaid, That it is a prophet, or as one of the prophets.

16 But when Herod heard *thereof*, he ſaid, It is John, whom I beheaded: he is riſen from the dead.

17 For Herod himſelf had ſent forth and laid hold upon John, and bound him in priſon for Herodias' ſake his brother Philip's wife: for he had married her.

18 For John had ſaid unto Herod, It is not lawful for thee to have thy brother's wife.

19 Therefore Herodias had a quarrel againſt him, and would have killed him; but ſhe could not:

20 For Herod feared John, knowing that he was a juſt man and an holy, and obſerved him; and when he heard him, he did many things, and heard him gladly.

21 And when a convenient day was come, that Herod on his birth day made a ſupper to his lords, high captains, and chief *eſtates* of Galilee;

22 And when the daughter of the ſaid Herodias came in, and danced, and pleaſed Herod, and them that ſat with him, the king ſaid unto the damſel, Aſk of me whatſoever thou wilt, and I will give *it* thee.

23 And he ſware unto her, Whatſoever thou ſhalt aſk of me, I will give *it* thee, unto the half of my kingdom.

24 And ſhe went forth and ſaid unto her mother, What ſhall I aſk? And ſhe ſaid, The head of John the Baptiſt.

25 And ſhe came in ſtraightway with haſte unto the king, and aſked, ſaying, I will that thou give me by and by in a charger the head of John the Baptiſt.

26 And the king was exceeding ſorry; *yet* for his oath's ſake, and for their ſakes which ſat with him, he would not reject her.

27 And immediately the king ſent an executioner, and commanded his head to be brought. And he went and beheaded him in the priſon,

28 And brought his head in a charger, and gave it to the damſel: and the damſel gave it to her mother.

29 And when his diſciples heard *of it*, they came, and took up his corpſe, and laid it in a tomb.

30 And

30 ¶ And the apoſtles gathered
themſelves together unto Jeſus,
and told him all things, both
what they had done, and what
they had taught.
31 And he ſaid unto them,
Come ye yourſelves apart into
a deſert place, and reſt a while:
for there were many coming
and going, and they had no
leiſure ſo much as to eat.
32 And they departed into a
deſert place by ſhip privately.
33 And the people ſaw them
departing, and many knew him,
and ran afoot thither out of
all cities, and outwent them,
and came together unto him.
34 And Jeſus, when he came
out, ſaw much people, and was
moved with compaſſion toward
them, becauſe they were as
ſheep not having a ſhepherd:
and he began to teach them
many things.
35 And when the day was
now far ſpent, his diſciples
came unto him, and ſaid, This
is a deſert place, and now the
time *is* far paſſed:
36 Send them away, that they
may go into the country round
about, and into the villages,
and buy themſelves bread: for
they have nothing to eat.
37 He anſwered and ſaid un-
to them, Give ye them to eat.
And they ſay unto him, Shall
we go and buy two hundred
pennyworth of bread, and give
them to eat?
38 He ſaith unto them, How
many loaves have ye? go, and
ſee. And when they knew, they
ſay, Five, and two fiſhes.
39 And he commanded them
to make all ſit down by com-
panies upon the green graſs.
40 And they ſat down in ranks
by hundreds, and by fifties.
41 And when he had taken
the five loaves and the two
fiſhes, he looked up to heaven,
and bleſſed, and brake the
loaves, and gave *them* to his diſ-
ciples to ſet before them; and
the two fiſhes divided he among
them all.
42 And they did all eat, and
were filled.
43 And they took up twelve
baſkets full of the fragments,
and of the fiſhes.
44 And they that did eat of
the loaves were about five thou-
ſand men.
45 ¶ And ſtraightway he con-
ſtrained his diſciples to get into
the ſhip, and to go to the other
ſide before unto Bethſaida,
while he ſent away the people.
46 And when he had ſent
them away, he departed into a
mountain to pray.
47 And when even was come,
the ſhip was in the midſt of the
ſea, and he alone on the land.
48 And he ſaw them toiling
in rowing; for the wind was
contrary unto them: and about
the fourth watch of the night
he cometh unto them, walking
upon the ſea, and would have
paſſed by them.
49 But when they ſaw him
walking upon the ſea, they ſup-
poſed it had been a ſpirit, and
cried out:
50 For they all ſaw him, and
were troubled. And immedi-
ately he talked with them,
and ſaith unto them, Be of
good cheer: it is I: be not
afraid.
51 And he went up unto them
into the ſhip; and the wind
ceaſed. And they were ſore
amazed in themſelves beyond
meaſure, and wondered.
52 For they conſidered not

the

the miracle of the loaves: for
their heart was hardened.
53 And when they had paſſed
over, they came into the land
of Genneſaret, and drew to the
ſhore.
54 And when they were come
out of the ſhip, ſtraightway
they knew him,
55 And ran through that
whole region round about, and
began to carry about in beds
thoſe that were ſick, where they
heard he was.
56 And whitherſoever he en-
tered, into villages, or cities,
or country, they laid the ſick
in the ſtreets, and beſought him
that they might touch if it
were but the border of his gar-
ment: and as many as touched
him were made whole.

CHAP. VII.

Meat defileth not a man.

THEN came together unto
him the Phariſees, and
certain of the ſcribes, which
came from Jeruſalem.
2 And when they ſaw ſome
of his diſciples eat bread with
defiled, that is to ſay, with
unwaſhen, hands, they found
fault.
3 For the Phariſees, and all
the Jews, except they waſh *their*
hands oft, eat not, holding the
tradition of the elders.
4 And *when they come* from
the market, except they waſh,
they eat not. And many other
things there be, which they
have received to hold, *as* the
waſhing of cups, and pots, braſen
veſſels, and of tables.
5 Then the Phariſees and
ſcribes aſked him, Why walk
not thy diſciples according to
the tradition of the elders, but
eat bread with unwaſhen hands?
6 He anſwered and ſaid un-
to them, Well hath Eſaias pro-
pheſied of you hypocrites, as
it is written, This people ho-
noureth me with *their* lips, but
their heart is far from me.
7 Howbeit in vain do they
worſhip me, teaching *for* doc-
trines the commandments of
men.
8 For laying aſide the com-
mandment of God, ye hold the
tradition of men, *as* the waſh-
ing of pots and cups: and many
other ſuch like things ye do.
9 And he ſaid unto them,
Full well ye reject the com-
mandment of God, that ye may
keep your own tradition.
10 For Moſes ſaid, Honour
thy father and thy mother; and,
Whoſo curſeth father or mo-
ther, let him die the death:
11 But ye ſay, If a man ſhall
ſay to his father or mother, *It
is* Corban, that is to ſay, a gift,
by whatſoever thou mighteſt
be profited by me; *he ſhall be
free.*
12 And ye ſuffer him no more
to do ought for his father or his
mother;
13 Making the word of God
of none effect through your
tradition which ye have deli-
vered. And many ſuch like
things do ye.
14 ¶ And when he had called
all the people *unto him*, he ſaid
unto them, Hearken unto me
every one *of you*, and under-
ſtand:
15 There is nothing from
without a man that entering
into him can defile him: but
the things which come out of
him, thoſe are they that defile
the man.
16 If any man have ears to
hear, let him hear.
17 And when he was entered
into

…o the houſe from the people,
…diſciples aſked him concern-
…g the parable.
18 And he ſaith unto them,
Are ye ſo without underſtand-
ing alſo? Do ye not perceive
that whatſoever thing from
without entereth into the man,
it cannot defile him;
19 Becauſe it entereth not in-
to his heart, but into the belly,
and goeth out into the draught,
purging all meats?
20 And he ſaid, That which
cometh out of the man, that
defileth the man.
21 For from within, out of
the heart of men, proceed evil
thoughts, adulteries, fornica-
tions, murders,
22 Thefts, covetouſneſs, wick-
edneſs, deceit, laſciviouſneſs, an
evil eye, blaſphemy, pride, fool-
iſhneſs:
23 All theſe evil things come
from within, and defile the man.
24 And from thence he aroſe
and went into the borders of
Tyre and Sidon, and entered
into an houſe, and would have
no man know *it*: but he could
not be hid.
25 For a *certain* woman,
whoſe young daughter had an
unclean ſpirit, heard of him,
and came and fell at his feet:
26 The woman was a Greek,
a Syrophenician by nation; and
ſhe beſought him that he would
caſt forth the devil out of her
daughter.
27 But Jeſus ſaid unto her,
Let the children firſt be filled:
for it is not meet to take the
children's bread, and to caſt *it*
unto the dogs.
28 And ſhe anſwered and ſaid
unto him, Yes, Lord: yet the
dogs under the table eat of the
children's crumbs.
29 And he ſaid unto her, For
this ſaying go thy way: the de-
vil is gone out of thy daughter.
30 And when ſhe was come
to her houſe, ſhe found the de-
vil gone out, and her daughter
laid upon the bed.
31 ¶ And again, departing
from the coaſts of Tyre and Si-
don, he came unto the ſea of
Galilee, through the midſt of
the coaſts of Decapolis.
32 And they bring unto him
one that was deaf, and had an
impediment in his ſpeech; and
they beſeech him to put his
hand upon him.
33 And he took him aſide
from the multitude, and put his
fingers into his ears, and he ſpit,
and touched his tongue;
34 And looking up to heaven,
he ſighed, and ſaith unto him,
Ephphatha, that is, Be opened.
35 And ſtraightway his ears
were opened, and the ſtring of
his tongue was looſed, and he
ſpake plain.
36 And he charged them,
that they ſhould tell no man.
But the more he charged them,
ſo much the more a great deal
they publiſhed *it*;
37 And were beyond meaſure
aſtoniſhed, ſaying, He hath
done all things well: he mak-
eth both the deaf to hear, and
the dumb to ſpeak.

CHAP. VIII.

Four thouſand miraculouſly fed.

IN thoſe days the multitude
being very great, and having
nothing to eat, Jeſus called his
diſciples *unto him*, and ſaith
unto them,
2 I have compaſſion on the
multitude, becauſe they have
now been with me three days,
and have nothing to eat:
3 And if I ſend them away
faſting

fasting to their own houses,
they will faint by the way: for
divers of them came from far.
4 And his disciples answered
him, From whence can a man
satisfy these *men* with bread
here in the wilderness?
5 And he asked them, How
many loaves have ye? And they
said, Seven.
6 And he commanded the
people to sit down on the
ground: and he took the seven
loaves, and gave thanks, and
brake, and gave to his disciples
to set before *them;* and they did
set *them* before the people.
7 And they had a few small
fishes; and he blessed, and com-
manded to set them also before
them.
8 So they did eat, and were
filled: and they took up of the
broken *meat* that was left se-
ven baskets.
9 And they that had eaten
were about four thousand. And
he sent them away.
10 ¶ And straightway he
entered into a ship with his dis-
ciples, and came into the parts
of Dalmanutha.
11 And the Pharisees came
forth, and began to question
with him, seeking of him a sign
from heaven, tempting him.
12 And he sighed deeply in
his spirit, and saith, Why doth
this generation seek after a
sign? verily I say unto you,
There shall no sign be given
unto this generation.
13 And he left them, and
entering into the ship again,
departed to the other side.
14 Now *the disciples* had for-
gotten to take bread, neither
had they in the ship with them
more than one loaf.
15 And he charged them,
saying, Take heed, beware of
the leaven of the Pharisees, and
of the leaven of Herod.
16 And they reasoned among
themselves, saying, *It is* because
we have no bread.
17 And when Jesus knew *it,*
he saith unto them, Why reason
ye, because ye have no bread?
perceive ye not yet, neither
understand? have ye your heart
yet hardened?
18 Having eyes, see ye not?
and having ears, hear ye not?
and do ye not remember?
19 When I brake the five
loaves among five thousand,
how many baskets full of frag-
ments took ye up? They say
unto him, Twelve.
20 And when the seven a-
mong four thousand, how many
baskets full of fragments took
ye up? And they said, Seven.
21 And he said unto them,
How is it that ye do not under-
stand?
22 ¶ And he cometh to Beth-
saida; and they bring a blind
man unto him, and besought
him to touch him.
23 And he took the blind
man by the hand, and led him
out of the town; and when he
had spit on his eyes, and put
his hands upon him, he asked
him if he saw ought.
24 And he looked up, and
said, I see men as trees, walking.
25 After that, he put *his*
hands again upon his eyes, and
made him look up: and he was
restored, and saw every man
clearly.
26 And he sent him away to
his house, saying, Neither go
into the town, nor tell *it* to any
in the town.
27 And Jesus went out, and
his disciples, into the towns of

Cæſarea Philippi: and by the
way he aſked his diſciples, ſay-
ing unto them, Whom do men
ſay that I am?
28 And they anſwered, John
the Baptiſt: but ſome *ſay*, Elias;
and others, One of the prophets.
29 And he ſaith unto them,
But whom ſay ye that I am?
And Peter anſwereth and ſaith
unto him, Thou art the Chriſt.
30 And he charged them that
they ſhould tell no man of him.
31 And he began to teach
them, that the Son of man muſt
ſuffer many things, and be re-
jected of the elders, and *of* the
chief prieſts and ſcribes, and be
killed, and after three days riſe
again.
32 And he ſpake that ſaying
openly. And Peter took him,
and began to rebuke him.
33 But when he had turned
about, and looked on his diſci-
ples, he rebuked Peter, ſaying,
Get thee behind me, Satan: for
thou ſavoureſt not the things
that be of God, but the things
that be of men.
34 And when he had called
the people *unto him*, with his
diſciples alſo, he ſaid unto them,
Whoſoever will come after me,
let him deny himſelf, and take
up his croſs, and follow me.
35 For whoſoever will ſave
his life ſhall loſe it; but who-
ſoever ſhall loſe his life for my
ſake and the Goſpel's, the ſame
ſhall ſave it.
36 For what ſhall it profit a
man if he ſhall gain the whole
world, and loſe his own ſoul?
37 Or what ſhall a man give
in exchange for his ſoul?
38 Whoſoever therefore ſhall
be aſhamed of me and of my
words in this adulterous and
ſinful generation; of him alſo
ſhall the Son of man be aſham-
ed, when he cometh in the glo-
ry of his Father with the holy
angels.

CHAP. IX.

The transfiguration of Chriſt.

AND he ſaid unto them,
Verily I ſay unto you,
that there be ſome of them that
ſtand here which ſhall not taſte
of death till they have ſeen the
kingdom of God come with
power.
2 ¶ And after ſix days Jeſus
taketh *with him* Peter and
James and John, and leadeth
them up into an high mountain
apart by themſelves: and he
was transfigured before them.
3 And his raiment became
ſhining, exceeding white as
ſnow; ſo as no fuller on earth
can white them.
4 And there appeared unto
them Elias with Moſes; and
they were talking with Jeſus.
5 And Peter anſwered, and
ſaid to Jeſus, Maſter, it is good
for us to be here: and let us
make three tabernacles, one
for thee, and one for Moſes,
and one for Elias.
6 For he wiſt not what to
ſay: for they were ſore afraid.
7 And there was a cloud that
overſhadowed them: and a
voice came out of the cloud,
ſaying, This is my beloved Son:
hear him.
8 And ſuddenly when they
had looked round about, they
ſaw no man any more, ſave Je-
ſus only with themſelves.
9 And as they came down
from the mountain, he charged
them that they ſhould tell no
man what things they had ſeen,
till the Son of man were riſen
from the dead.
10 And they kept that ſay-
ing

ing with themſelves, queſtioning one with another what the riſing from the dead ſhould mean.

11 And they aſked him, ſaying, Why ſay the ſcribes, that Elias muſt firſt come?

12 And he anſwered, and told them, Elias verily cometh firſt, and reſtoreth all things; and how it is written of the Son of man that he muſt ſuffer many things, and be ſet at nought.

13 But I ſay unto you, That Elias is indeed come, and they have done unto him whatſoever they liſted, as it is written of him.

14 ¶ And when he came to *his* diſciples, he ſaw a great multitude about them, and the ſcribes queſtioning with them.

15 And ſtraightway all the people, when they beheld him, were greatly amazed, and running to *him*, ſaluted him.

16 And he aſked the ſcribes, What queſtion ye with them?

17 And one of the multitude anſwered and ſaid, Maſter, I have brought unto thee my ſon, which hath a dumb ſpirit;

18 And whereſoever he taketh him, he teareth him, and he foameth, and gnaſheth with his teeth, and pineth away. And I ſpake to thy diſciples, that they ſhould caſt him out; and they could not.

19 He anſwereth him, and ſaith, O faithleſs generation, how long ſhall I be with you? how long ſhall I ſuffer you? bring him unto me.

20 And they brought him unto him. And when he ſaw him, ſtraightway the ſpirit tare him; and he fell on the ground, and wallowed foaming.

21 And he aſked his father, How long is it ago ſince this came unto him? and he ſaid, Of a child.

22 And ofttimes it hath caſt him into the fire, and into the waters, to deſtroy him: but if thou canſt do any thing, have compaſſion on us, and help us.

23 Jeſus ſaid unto him, If thou canſt believe, all things *are* poſſible to him that believeth.

24 And ſtraightway the father of the child cried out, and ſaid with tears, Lord, I believe; help thou mine unbelief.

25 When Jeſus ſaw that the people came running together, he rebuked the foul ſpirit, ſaying unto him, *Thou* dumb and deaf ſpirit, I charge thee, come out of him, and enter no more into him.

26 And *the ſpirit* cried, and rent him ſore, and came out of him: and he was as one dead; inſomuch that many ſaid, He is dead.

27 But Jeſus took him by the hand, and lifted him up; and he aroſe.

28 And when he was come into the houſe, his diſciples aſked him privately, Why could not we caſt him out?

29 And he ſaid unto them, This kind can come forth by nothing, but by prayer and faſting.

30 ¶ And they departed thence, and paſſed through Galilee: and he would not that any man ſhould know *it*.

31 For he taught his diſciples, and ſaid unto them, The Son of man is delivered into the hands of men, and they ſhall kill him: and after that he is killed, he ſhall riſe the third day.

32 But they underſtood not that

[illegible]t ſaying, and were afraid to
[illegible] him.
33 ¶ And he came to Caper-
naum: and being in the houſe,
he aſked them, What was it
that ye diſputed among your-
ſelves by the way?
34 But they held their peace:
for by the way they had diſ-
puted among themſelves, who
ſhould be the greateſt.
35 And he ſat down and
called the twelve, and ſaith un-
to them, If any man deſire to
be firſt, *the ſame* ſhall be laſt of
all, and ſervant of all.
36 And he took a child, and
ſet him in the midſt of them:
and when he had taken him in
his arms, he ſaid unto them,
37 Whoſoever ſhall receive
one of ſuch children in my
name, receiveth me: and who-
ſoever ſhall receive me, receiv-
eth not me, but him that ſent
me.
38 And John anſwered him,
ſaying, Maſter, we ſaw one
caſting out devils in thy name,
and he followeth not us: and
we forbad him, becauſe he fol-
loweth not us.
39 But Jeſus ſaid, Forbid him
not; for there is no man which
ſhall do a miracle in my name
that can lightly ſpeak evil of me.
40 For he that is not againſt
us is on our part.
41 For whoſoever ſhall give
you a cup of water to drink in
my name, becauſe ye belong to
Chriſt, verily I ſay unto you,
he ſhall not loſe his reward.
42 And whoſoever ſhall of-
fend one of *theſe* little ones that
believe in me, it is better for
him that a milſtone were hang-
ed about his neck, and he were
caſt into the ſea.
43 And if thy hand offend
thee, cut it off: it is better for
thee to enter into life maimed,
than having two hands to go
into hell, into the fire that ne-
ver ſhall be quenched:
44 Where their worm dieth
not, and the fire is not quenched.
45 And if thy foot offend
thee, cut it off: it is better for
thee to enter halt into life, than
having two feet to be caſt into
hell, into the fire that never
ſhall be quenched:
46 Where their worm dieth
not, and the fire is not quenched.
47 And if thine eye offend
thee, pluck it out: it is better
for thee to enter into the king-
dom of God with one eye, than
having two eyes to be caſt into
hell fire:
48 Where their worm dieth
not, and the fire is not quenched.
49 For every one ſhall be
ſalted with fire, and every ſa-
crifice ſhall be ſalted with ſalt.
50 Salt *is* good: but if the
ſalt have loſt his ſaltneſs, where-
with will ye ſeaſon it? have
ſalt in yourſelves, and have
peace one with another.

CHAP. X.

Of divorcement.

AND he aroſe from thence,
and cometh into the coaſts
of Judea, by the farther ſide of
Jordan; and the people reſort
unto him again; and, as he was
wont, he taught them again.
2 ¶ And the Phariſees came
to him, and aſked him, Is it
lawful for a man to put away
his wife? tempting him.
3 And he anſwered and ſaid
unto them, What did Moſes
command you?
4 And they ſaid, Moſes ſuf-
fered to write a bill of divorce-
ment, and to put *her* away.
5 And Jeſus anſwered and
ſaid

ſaid unto them, For the hardneſs of your heart he wrote you this precept.

6 But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female

7 For this cauſe ſhall a man leave his father and mother, and cleave to his wife;

8 And they twain ſhall be one fleſh: ſo then they are no more twain, but one fleſh.

9 What therefore God hath joined together let not man put aſunder.

10 And in the houſe his diſciples aſked him again of the ſame *matter*.

11 And he ſaith unto them, Whoſoever ſhall put away his wife, and marry another, committeth adultery againſt her.

12 And if a woman ſhall put away her huſband, and be married to another, ſhe committeth adultery.

13 ¶ And they brought young children to him that he ſhould touch them: and *his* diſciples rebuked thoſe that brought *them*.

14 But when Jeſus ſaw *it*, he was much diſpleaſed, and ſaid unto them, Suffer the little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of ſuch is the kingdom of God.

15 Verily I ſay unto you, Whoſoever ſhall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, he ſhall not enter therein.

16 And he took them up in his arms, put *his* hands upon them, and bleſſed them.

17 And when he was gone forth into the way, there came one running, and kneeled to him, and aſked him, Good Maſter, what ſhall I do that I may inherit eternal life?

18 And Jeſus ſaid unto him, Why calleſt thou me good? *there is* none good but one, *that is*, God.

19 Thou knoweſt the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not ſteal, Do not bear falſe witneſs, Defraud not, Honour thy father and mother.

20 And he anſwered and ſaid unto him, Maſter, all theſe have I obſerved from my youth.

21 Then Jeſus beholding him, loved him, and ſaid unto him, One thing thou lackeſt: go thy way, ſell whatſoever thou haſt, and give to the poor; and thou ſhalt have treaſure in heaven: and come, take up the croſs, and follow me.

22 And he was ſad at that ſaying, and went away grieved: for he had great poſſeſſions.

23 ¶ And Jeſus looked round about, and ſaith unto his diſciples, How hardly ſhall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

24 And the diſciples were aſtoniſhed at his words. But Jeſus anſwereth again, and ſaith unto them, Children, how hard is it for them that truſt in riches to enter into the kingdom of God!

25 It is eaſier for a camel to go through the eye of a needle, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they were aſtoniſhed out of meaſure, ſaying among themſelves, Who then can be ſaved?

27 And Jeſus looking upon them, ſaith, With men *it is* impoſſible, but not with God: for with God all things are poſſible.

28 Then Peter began to ſay unto him, Lo, we have left all, and have followed thee.

29 And Jesus answered and
said, Verily I say unto you,
There is no man that hath left
house, or brethren, or sisters, or
father, or mother, or wife, or
children, or lands, for my sake
and the gospel's,
30 But he shall receive an
hundredfold now in this time,
houses, and brethren, and sisters,
and mothers, and children, and
lands, with persecutions; and in
the world to come eternal life.
31 But many *that are* first shall
be last; and the last first.
32 ¶ And they were in the
way going up to Jerusalem; and
Jesus went before them: and
they were amazed; and as they
followed, they were afraid. And
he took again the twelve, and
began to tell them what things
should happen unto him,
33 *Saying*, Behold, we go up
to Jerusalem; and the Son of
man shall be delivered unto the
chief priests, and unto the
scribes; and they shall condemn
him to death, and shall deliver
him to the Gentiles:
34 And they shall mock him,
and shall scourge him, and shall
spit upon him, and shall kill
him: and the third day he shall
rise again.
35 And James and John
the sons of Zebedee come unto
him, saying, Master, we would
that thou shouldest do for us
whatsoever we shall desire.
36 And he said unto them,
What would ye that I should
do for you?
37 They said unto him, Grant
unto us that we may sit, one on
thy right hand, and the other
on thy left hand, in thy glory.
38 But Jesus said unto them,
Ye know not what ye ask: can
ye drink of the cup that I drink
of? and be baptized with the
baptism that I am baptized
with?
39 And they say unto him,
We can. And Jesus said unto
them, Ye shall indeed drink of
the cup that I drink of; and
with the baptism that I am
baptized withal shall ye be
baptized:
40 But to sit on my right
hand and on my left hand is
not mine to give; but *it shall be
given to them* for whom it is
prepared.
41 And when the ten heard
it, they began to be much dis-
pleased with James and John.
42 But Jesus called them *to
him*, and saith unto them, Ye
know that they which are ac-
counted to rule over the Gen-
tiles exercise lordship over
them; and their great ones ex-
ercise authority upon them.
43 But so shall it not be
among you: but whosoever will
be great among you shall be
your minister:
44 And whosoever of you
will be the chiefest shall be
servant of all.
45 For even the Son of man
came not to be ministered un-
to, but to minister, and to give
his life a ransom for many.
46 ¶ And they came to Jeri-
cho. And as he went out of Je-
richo with his disciples, and a
great number of people, blind
Bartimeus, the son of Timeus,
sat by the highway side begging.
47 And when he heard that
it was Jesus of Nazareth, he
began to cry out, and say, Je-
sus, *thou* Son of David, have
mercy on me.
48 And many charged him
that he should hold his peace:
but he cried the more a great
deal,

deal, *Thou* Son of David, have mercy on me.

49 And Jeſus ſtood ſtill, and commanded him to be called: and they call the blind man, ſaying unto him, Be of good comfort, riſe; he calleth thee.

50 And he, caſting away his garment, roſe, and came to Jeſus.

51 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, What wilt thou that I ſhould do unto thee? The blind man ſaid unto him, Lord, that I might receive my ſight.

52 And Jeſus ſaid unto him, Go thy way: thy faith hath made thee whole. And immediately he received his ſight, and followed Jeſus in the way.

CHAP. XI.

Chriſt rideth into Jeruſalem.

AND when they came nigh to Jeruſalem, unto Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount of Olives, he ſendeth forth two of his diſciples,

2 And ſaith unto them, Go your way into the village over againſt you: and as ſoon as ye be entered into it, ye ſhall find a colt tied, whereon never man ſat; looſe him, and bring *him.*

3 And if any man ſay unto you, Why do ye this? ſay ye, That the Lord hath need of him: and ſtraightway he will ſend him hither.

4 And they went their way, and found the colt tied by the door without, in a place where two ways met; and they looſe him.

5 And certain of them that ſtood there ſaid unto them, What do ye looſing the colt?

6 And they ſaid unto them, even as Jeſus had commanded: and they let them go.

7 And they brought the colt to Jeſus, and caſt their garments on him; and he ſat upon him.

8 And many ſpread their garments in the way: and others cut down branches off the trees, and ſtrawed *them* in the way.

9 And they that went before, and they that followed, cried, ſaying, Hoſanna: Bleſſed *is* he that cometh in the name of the Lord:

10 Bleſſed *be* the kingdom of our father David, that cometh in the name of the Lord: Hoſanna in the higheſt.

11 And Jeſus entered into Jeruſalem, and into the temple: and when he had looked round about upon all things, and now the eventide was come, he went out unto Bethany with the twelve.

12 ¶ And on the morrow, when they were come from Bethany, he was hungry:

13 And ſeeing a fig tree afar off, having leaves, he came, if haply he might find any thing thereon: and when he came to it, he found nothing but leaves; for the time of figs was not *yet.*

14 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto it, No man eat fruit of thee hereafter for ever. And his diſciples heard *it.*

15 And they come to Jeruſalem: and Jeſus went into the temple, and began to caſt out them that ſold and bought in the temple, and overthrew the tables of the moneychangers, and the ſeats of them that ſold doves;

16 And would not ſuffer that any man ſhould carry *any* veſſel through the temple.

17 And he taught, ſaying unto them, Is it not written,

My

My houſe ſhall be called of all nations the houſe of prayer? but ye have made it a den of thieves.

18 And the ſcribes and chief prieſts heard *it*, and ſought how they might deſtroy him: for they feared him, becauſe all the people was aſtoniſhed at his doctrine.

19 And when even was come, he went out of the city.

20 And in the morning, as they paſſed by, they ſaw the fig tree dried up from the roots.

21 And Peter calling to remembrance ſaith unto him, Maſter, behold, the fig tree which thou curſedſt is withered away.

22 And Jeſus anſwering, ſaith unto them, Have faith in God.

23 For verily I ſay unto you, That whoſoever ſhall ſay unto this mountain, Be thou removed, and be thou caſt into the ſea; and ſhall not doubt in his heart, but ſhall believe that thoſe things which he ſaith ſhall come to paſs; he ſhall have whatſoever he ſaith.

24 Therefore I ſay unto you, What things ſoever ye deſire when ye pray, believe that ye receive *them*, and ye ſhall have *them*.

25 And when ye ſtand praying, forgive if ye have ought againſt any: that your Father alſo which is in heaven may forgive you your treſpaſſes.

26 But if ye do not forgive, neither will your Father which is in heaven forgive your treſpaſſes.

27 ¶ And they come again to Jeruſalem: and as he was walking in the temple, there come to him the chief prieſts, and the ſcribes, and the elders,

28 And ſay unto him, By what authority doeſt thou theſe things? and who gave thee this authority to do theſe things?

29 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, I will alſo aſk of you one queſtion, and anſwer me, and I will tell you by what authority I do theſe things?

30 The baptiſm of John, was *it* from heaven, or of men? anſwer me.

31 And they reaſoned with themſelves, ſaying, If we ſhall ſay, From heaven; he will ſay, Why then did ye not believe him?

32 But if we ſhall ſay, Of men; they feared the people, for all *men* counted John that he was a prophet indeed.

33 And they anſwered and ſaid unto Jeſus, We cannot tell. And Jeſus anſwering ſaith unto them, Neither do I tell you by what authority I do theſe things.

CHAP. XII.

The parable of the vineyard.

AND he began to ſpeak unto them by parables: A *certain* man planted a vineyard, and ſet an hedge about *it*, and digged *a place for* the winefat, and built a tower, and let it out to huſbandmen, and went into a far country.

2 And at the ſeaſon he ſent to the huſbandmen a ſervant, that he might receive from the huſbandmen of the fruit of the vineyard.

3 And they caught *him*, and beat him, and ſent *him* away empty.

4 And again, he ſent unto them another ſervant: and at him they caſt ſtones, and wounded *him* in the head, and ſent *him* away ſhamefully handled.

5 And again he ſent another; and

and him they killed: and ma-
ny others; beating ſome, and
killing ſome.
6 Having yet therefore one
ſon, his wellbeloved, he ſent
him alſo laſt unto them, ſaying,
They will reverence my ſon.
7 But thoſe huſbandmen ſaid
among themſelves, This is the
heir; come, let us kill him, and
the inheritance ſhall be our's.
8 And they took him, and
killed *him*, and caſt *him* out of
the vineyard.
9 What ſhall therefore the
lord of the vineyard do? He
will come and deſtroy the huſ-
bandmen, and will give the
vineyard unto others.
10 And have ye not read this
ſcripture? The ſtone which the
builders rejected is become the
head of the corner:
11 This was the Lord's doing,
and it is marvellous in our eyes.
12 And they ſought to lay
hold on him, but feared the
people: for they knew that he
had ſpoken the parable againſt
them: and they left him, and
went their way.
13 ¶ And they ſend unto him
certain of the Phariſees, and of
the Herodians, to catch him in
his words.
14 And when they were come,
they ſay unto him, Maſter, we
know that thou art true, and
careſt for no man: for thou re-
gardeſt not the perſon of men,
but teacheſt the way of God in
truth: Is it lawful to give tri-
bute to Ceſar, or not?
15 Shall we give, or ſhall we
not give? But he knowing their
hypocriſy, ſaid unto them, Why
tempt ye me? bring me a pen-
ny, that I may ſee *it*.
16 And they brought *it*. And
he ſaith unto them, Whoſe *is* this
image and ſuperſcription? And
they ſaid unto him, Ceſar's.
17 And Jeſus anſwering ſaid
unto them, Render to Ceſar
the things that are Ceſar's, and
to God the things that are God's.
And they marvelled at him.
18 ¶ Then come unto him
the Sadducees, which ſay there
is no reſurrection; and they
aſked him, ſaying,
19 Maſter, Moſes wrote unto
us, If a man's brother die, and
leave *his* wife *behind him*, and
leave no children, that his bro-
ther ſhould take his wife, and
raiſe up ſeed unto his brother.
20 Now there were ſeven bre-
thren; and the firſt took a wife,
and dying left no ſeed.
21 And the ſecond took her,
and died, neither left he any
ſeed: and the third likewiſe.
22 And the ſeven had her,
and left no ſeed. Laſt of all the
woman died alſo.
23 In the reſurrection there-
fore, when they ſhall riſe, whoſe
wife ſhall ſhe be of them? for
the ſeven had her to wife.
24 And Jeſus anſwering ſaid
unto them, Do ye not therefore
err becauſe ye know not the
ſcriptures, neither the power of
God?
25 For when they ſhall riſe
from the dead, they neither
marry, nor are given in mar-
riage; but are as the angels
which are in heaven.
26 And as touching the dead,
that they riſe; have ye not read
in the book of Moſes, how in
the buſh God ſpake unto him,
ſaying, I *am* the God of Abra-
ham, and the God of Iſaac,
and the God of Jacob?
27 He is not the God of the
dead, but the God of the living.
Ye therefore do greatly err.

28 And one of the ſcribes
came, and having heard them
reaſoning together, and perceiv-
ing that he had anſwered them
well, aſked him, Which is the
firſt commandment of all?
29 And Jeſus anſwered him,
The firſt of all the command-
ments *is*, Hear, O Iſrael; The
Lord our God is one Lord:
30 And thou ſhalt love the
Lord thy God with all thy
heart, and with all thy ſoul, and
with all thy mind, and with all
thy ſtrength. This *is* the firſt
commandment.
31 And the ſecond *is* like,
namely this, Thou ſhalt love
thy neighbour as thyſelf: there
is none other commandment
greater than theſe.
32 And the ſcribe ſaid unto
him, Well, Maſter, thou haſt
ſaid the truth: for there is one
God; and there is none other
but he:
33 And to love him with all
the heart, and with all the un-
derſtanding, and with all the
ſoul, and with all the ſtrength,
and to love *his* neighbour as
himſelf, is more than all whole
burnt offerings and ſacrifices.
34 And when Jeſus ſaw that
he anſwered diſcreetly, he ſaid
unto him, Thou art not far
from the kingdom of God.
And no man after that durſt
aſk him *any queſtion*.
35 ¶ And Jeſus anſwered
and ſaid, while he taught in
the temple, How ſay the ſcribes
that Chriſt is the Son of David?
36 For David himſelf ſaid by
the Holy Ghoſt, The LORD ſaid
to my Lord, Sit thou on my
right hand, till I make thine
enemies thy footſtool.
37 David therefore himſelf
calleth him Lord; and whence
is he *then* his Son? And the com-
mon people heard him gladly.
38 And he ſaid unto them
in his doctrine, Beware of the
ſcribes which love to go in
long clothing, and *love* ſaluta-
tions in the market places,
39 And the chief ſeats in the
ſynagogues, and the uppermoſt
rooms at feaſts:
40 Which devour widows'
houſes, and for a pretence make
long prayers: theſe ſhall re-
ceive greater damnation.
41 ¶ And Jeſus ſat over
againſt the treaſury, and beheld
how the people caſt money in-
to the treaſury: and many that
were rich caſt in much.
42 And there came a certain
poor widow, and ſhe threw in
two mites which make a far-
thing.
43 And he called *unto him*
his diſciples, and ſaith unto
them, Verily I ſay unto you,
That this poor widow hath caſt
more in, than all they which
have caſt into the treaſury:
44 For all *they* did caſt in of
their abundance: but ſhe of
her want did caſt in all that ſhe
had, *even* all her living.

CHAP. XIII.

Deſtruction of the temple foretold.

AND as he went out of the
temple, one of his diſci-
ples ſaith unto him, Maſter,
ſee what manner of ſtones and
what buildings *are here*!
2 And Jeſus anſwering ſaid
unto him, Seeſt thou theſe great
buildings? there ſhall not be
left one ſtone upon another,
that ſhall not be thrown down.
3 And as he ſat upon the
mount of Olives over againſt
the temple, Peter and James
and John and Andrew aſked
him privately,

4 Tell us, when ſhall theſe
things be? and what *ſhall be* the
ſign when all theſe things ſhall
be fulfilled?
5 And Jeſus anſwering them
began to ſay, Take heed leſt
any *man* deceive you:
6 For many ſhall come in my
name, ſaying, I am *Chriſt;* and
ſhall deceive many.
7 And when ye ſhall hear of
wars, and rumours of wars, be
ye not troubled: for *ſuch things*
muſt needs be; but the end
ſhall not *be* yet.
8 For nation ſhall riſe againſt
nation, and kingdom againſt
kingdom: and there ſhall be
earthquakes in divers places,
and there ſhall be famines and
troubles: theſe *are* the begin-
nings of ſorrows.
9 ¶ But take heed to your-
ſelves: for they ſhall deliver
you up to councils; and in the
ſynagogues ye ſhall be beaten:
and ye ſhall be brought before
rulers and kings for my ſake,
for a teſtimony againſt them.
10 And the goſpel muſt firſt
be publiſhed among all nations.
11 But when they ſhall lead
you, and deliver you up, take no
thought beforehand what ye
ſhall ſpeak, neither do ye pre-
meditate: but whatſoever ſhall
be given you in that hour, that
ſpeak ye: for it is not ye that
ſpeak, but the Holy Ghoſt.
12 Now the brother ſhall be-
tray the brother to death, and
the father the ſon: and chil-
dren ſhall riſe up againſt *their*
parents, and ſhall cauſe them
to be put to death.
13 And ye ſhall be hated of
all *men* for my name's ſake. But
he that ſhall endure unto the
end, the ſame ſhall be ſaved.
14 ¶ But when ye ſhall ſee
the abomination of deſolation,
ſpoken of by Daniel the pro-
phet, ſtanding where it ought
not, (let him that readeth un-
derſtand,) then let them that be
in Judea flee to the mountains:
15 And let him that is on the
houſetop not go down into the
houſe, neither enter *therein,* to
take any thing out of his houſe:
16 And let him that is in the
field not turn back again for to
take up his garment.
17 But woe to them that are
with child, and to them that
give ſuck in thoſe days!
18 And pray ye that your
flight be not in the winter.
19 For *in* thoſe days ſhall be
affliction, ſuch as was not from
the beginning of the creation
which God created unto this
time, neither ſhall be.
20 And except that the
Lord had ſhortened thoſe days,
no fleſh ſhould be ſaved: but
for the elect's ſake, whom he
hath choſen, he hath ſhortened
the days.
21 And then, if any man
ſhall ſay to you, Lo, here *is*
Chriſt; or, lo, *he is* there; be-
lieve *him* not:
22 For falſe Chriſts and
falſe prophets ſhall riſe, and
ſhall ſhew ſigns and wonders,
to ſeduce, if *it were* poſſible,
even the elect.
23 But take ye heed: behold,
I have foretold you all things.
24 ¶ But in thoſe days, after
that tribulation, the ſun ſhall
be darkened, and the moon
ſhall not give her light,
25 And the ſtars of heaven
ſhall fall, and the powers that
are in heaven ſhall be ſhaken.
26 And then ſhall they ſee the
Son of man coming in the clouds
with great power and glory.

27 And then ſhall he ſend his
angels, and ſhall gather together
his elect from the four winds,
from the uttermoſt part of the
earth to the uttermoſt part of
heaven.
28 Now learn a parable of
the fig tree; When her branch
is yet tender, and putteth forth
leaves, ye know that ſummer is
near:
29 So ye in like manner,
when ye ſhall ſee theſe things
come to paſs, know that it is
nigh, *even* at the doors.
30 Verily I ſay unto you, That
this generation ſhall not paſs
till all theſe things be done.
31 Heaven and earth ſhall
paſs away: but my words ſhall
not paſs away.
32 But of that day and
that hour knoweth no man,
no, not the angels which are
in heaven, neither the Son,
but the Father.
33 Take ye heed, watch and
pray: for ye know not when
the time is.
34 *For the Son of man is* as a
man taking a far journey, who
left his houſe, and gave autho-
rity to his ſervants, and to every
man his work, and command-
ed the porter to watch.
35 Watch ye therefore: for
ye know not when the maſter
of the houſe cometh, at even,
or at midnight, or at the cock
crowing, or in the morning:
36 Leſt coming ſuddenly he
find you ſleeping.
37 And what I ſay unto you,
I ſay unto all, Watch.

CHAP. XIV.

A conſpiracy againſt Chriſt.

AFTER two days was *the
feaſt of* the paſſover, and of
unleavened bread: and the chief
prieſts and the ſcribes ſought
how they might take him by
craft, and put *him* to death.
2 But they ſaid, Not on the
feaſt *day*, leſt there be an up-
roar of the people.
3 ¶ And being in Bethany in
the houſe of Simon the leper,
as he ſat at meat, there came a
woman having an alabaſter box
of ointment of ſpikenard, very
precious; and ſhe brake the
box, and poured *it* on his head.
4 And there were ſome that
had indignation within them-
ſelves, and ſaid, Why was this
waſte of the ointment made?
5 For it might have been ſold
for more than three hundred
pence, and have been given to
the poor. And they murmured
againſt her.
6 And Jeſus ſaid, Let her alone;
why trouble ye her? ſhe hath
wrought a good work on me.
7 For ye have the poor with
you always, and whenſoever ye
will ye may do them good:
but me ye have not always.
8 She hath done what ſhe
could: ſhe is come aforehand to
anoint my body to the burying.
9 Verily I ſay unto you,
Whereſoever this goſpel ſhall
be preached throughout the
whole world, *this* alſo that ſhe
hath done, ſhall be ſpoken of
for a memorial of her.
10 ¶ And Judas Iſcariot, one
of the twelve, went unto the
chief prieſts, to betray him un-
to them.
11 And when they heard *it*,
they were glad, and promiſed
to give him money. And he
ſought how he might conveni-
ently betray him.
12 ¶ And the firſt day of un-
leavened bread, when they kill-
ed the paſſover, his diſciples
ſaid unto him, Where wilt thou

that we go and prepare, that
thou mayest eat the passover?
13 And he sendeth forth two
of his disciples, and saith unto
them, Go ye into the city, and
there shall meet you a man bear-
ing a pitcher of water: follow
him.
14 And wheresoever he shall
go in, say ye to the good man
of the house, The Master saith,
Where is the guestchamber,
where I shall eat the passover
with my disciples?
15 And he will shew you a
large upper room furnished
and prepared: there make ready
for us.
16 And his disciples went
forth, and came into the city,
and found as he had said unto
them: and they made ready
the passover.
17 And in the evening he
cometh with the twelve.
18 And as they sat, and did
eat, Jesus said, Verily I say un-
to you, One of you which eat-
eth with me shall betray me.
19 And they began to be
sorrowful, and to say unto him
one by one, *Is* it I? and ano-
ther *said*, *Is* it I?
20 And he answered and said
unto them, *It is* one of the
twelve, that dippeth with me in
the dish.
21 The Son of man indeed
goeth, as it is written of him:
but woe to that man by whom
the Son of man is betrayed!
good were it for that man if he
had never been born.
22 ¶ And as they did eat, Je-
sus took bread, and blessed, and
brake *it*, and gave to them, and
said, Take, eat: this is my body.
23 And he took the cup, and
when he had given thanks, he
gave *it* to them: and they all
drank of it.
24 And he said unto them,
This is my blood of the new
testament, which is shed for
many.
25 Verily I say unto you, I
will drink no more of the fruit
of the vine, until that day that
I drink it new in the kingdom
of God.
26 And when they had
sung an hymn, they went out
into the mount of Olives.
27 And Jesus saith unto them,
All ye shall be offended because
of me this night: for it is writ-
ten, I will smite the shepherd,
and the sheep shall be scattered.
28 But after that I am risen, I
will go before you into Galilee.
29 But Peter said unto him,
Although all shall be offended,
yet *will* not I.
30 And Jesus saith unto him,
Verily I say unto thee, That
this day, *even* in this night,
before the cock crow twice,
thou shalt deny me thrice.
31 But he spake the more
vehemently, If I should die
with thee, I will not deny thee
in any wise. Likewise also said
they all.
32 And they came to a place
which was named Gethsemane:
and he saith to his disciples, Sit
ye here, while I shall pray.
33 And he taketh with him
Peter and James and John,
and began to be sore amazed,
and to be very heavy;
34 And saith unto them, My
soul is exceeding sorrowful un-
to death; tarry ye here, and
watch.
35 And he went forward a
little, and fell on the ground,
and prayed that, if it were
possible, the hour might pass
from him.
36 And he said, Abba, Fa-
ther,

ther, all things *are* poſſible un-
to thee: take away this cup
from me: nevertheleſs not what
I will, but what thou wilt.
37 And he cometh and find-
eth them ſleeping, and ſaith
unto Peter, Simon, ſleepeſt
thou? couldeſt not thou watch
one hour?
38 Watch ye and pray, leſt
ye enter into temptation. The
ſpirit truly *is* ready, but the
fleſh *is* weak.
39 And again he went away,
and prayed, and ſpake the ſame
words.
40 And when he returned,
he found them aſleep again: for
their eyes were heavy: neither
wiſt they what to anſwer him.
41 And he cometh the third
time, and ſaith unto them,
Sleep on now, and take *your* reſt:
it is enough, the hour is come:
behold, the Son of man is betray-
ed into the hands of ſinners.
42 Riſe up, let us go: lo, he
that betrayeth me is at hand.
43 ¶ And immediately while
he yet ſpake, cometh Judas, one
of the twelve, and with him a
great multitude with ſwords and
ſtaves from the chief prieſts
and the ſcribes and the elders.
44 And he that betrayed him
had given them a token, ſay-
ing, Whomſoever I ſhall kiſs,
that ſame is he: take him, and
lead *him* away ſafely.
45 And as ſoon as he was
come, he goeth ſtraightway to
him, and ſaith, Maſter, maſter;
and kiſſed him.
46 And they laid their hands
on him, and took him.
47 And one of them that
ſtood by drew a ſword, and
ſmote a ſervant of the high
prieſt, and cut off his ear.
48 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid
unto them, Are ye come out as
againſt a thief, with ſwords and
with ſtaves, to take me?
49 I was daily with you in
the temple teaching, and ye
took me not. But the ſcrip-
tures muſt be fulfilled.
50 And they all forſook him
and fled.
51 And there followed him
a certain young man having a
linen cloth caſt about *his* naked
body; and the young men laid
hold on him:
52 And he left the linen cloth,
and fled from them naked.
53 And they led Jeſus away
to the high prieſt: and with
him were aſſembled all the chief
prieſts and the elders and the
ſcribes.
54 And Peter followed him
afar off, even into the palace of
the high prieſt: and he ſat with
the ſervants, and warmed him-
ſelf at the fire.
55 And the chief prieſts and
all the council ſought for wit-
neſs againſt Jeſus to put him to
death; and found none.
56 For many bare falſe wit-
neſs againſt him, but their wit-
neſs agreed not together.
57 And there aroſe certain,
and bare falſe witneſs againſt
him, ſaying,
58 We heard him ſay, I will
deſtroy this temple that is made
with hands, and within three
days I will build another made
without hands.
59 But neither ſo did their
witneſs agree together.
60 And the high prieſt ſtood
up in the midſt, and aſked Je-
ſus, ſaying, Anſwereſt thou no-
thing? what *is it which* theſe
witneſs againſt thee?
61 But he held his peace, and
anſwered nothing. Again the

high prieſt aſked him, and ſaid unto him, Art thou the Chriſt, the Son of the bleſſed?

62 And Jeſus ſaid, I am: and ye ſhall ſee the Son of man ſitting on the right hand of power, and coming in the clouds of heaven.

63 Then the high prieſt rent his clothes, and ſaith, What need we any further witneſſes?

64 Ye have heard the blaſphemy; what think ye? And they all condemned him to be guilty of death.

65 And ſome began to ſpit on him, and to cover his face, and to buffet him, and to ſay unto him, Propheſy. And the ſervants did ſtrike him with the palms of their hands.

66 ¶ And as Peter was beneath in the palace, there cometh one of the maids of the high prieſt:

67 And when ſhe ſaw Peter warming himſelf, ſhe looked upon him, and ſaid, And thou alſo waſt with Jeſus of Nazareth.

68 But he denied, ſaying, I know not, neither underſtand I what thou ſayeſt. And he went out into the porch; and the cock crew.

69 And a maid ſaw him again, and began to ſay to them that ſtood by, This is *one* of them.

70 And he denied it again. And a little after, they that ſtood by ſaid again to Peter, Surely thou art *one* of them: for thou art a Galilean, and thy ſpeech agreeth *thereto*.

71 But he began to curſe and to ſwear, *ſaying*, I know not this man of whom ye ſpeak.

72 And the ſecond time the cock crew. And Peter called to mind the word that Jeſus ſaid unto him, Before the cock crow twice thou ſhalt deny me thrice. And when he thought thereon he wept.

CHAP. XV.

Chriſt brought bound to Pilate.

AND ſtraightway in the morning the chief prieſts held a conſultation with the elders and ſcribes and the whole council, and bound Jeſus, and carried *him* away, and delivered *him* to Pilate.

2 And Pilate aſked him, Art thou the King of the Jews? And he anſwering ſaid unto him, Thou ſayeſt *it*.

3 And the chief prieſts accuſed him of many things: but he anſwered nothing.

4 And Pilate aſked him again, ſaying, Anſwereſt thou nothing? behold, how many things they witneſs againſt thee.

5 But Jeſus yet anſwered nothing: ſo that Pilate marvelled.

6 Now at *that* feaſt he releaſed unto them one priſoner, whomſoever they deſired.

7 And there was *one* named Barabbas, *which lay* bound with them that had made inſurrection with him, who had committed murder in the inſurrection.

8 And the multitude crying aloud began to deſire *him to do* as he had ever done unto them.

9 But Pilate anſwered them, ſaying, Will ye that I releaſe unto you the King of the Jews?

10 For he knew that the chief prieſts had delivered him for envy.

11 But the chief prieſts moved the people, that he ſhould rather releaſe Barabbas unto them.

12 And Pilate anſwered and ſaid again unto them, What will

will ye then that I ſhall do *unto him* whom ye call the King of the Jews?

13 And they cried out again, Crucify him.

14 Then Pilate ſaid unto them, Why, what evil hath he done? And they cried out the more exceedingly, Crucify him.

15 And *ſo* Pilate, willing to content the people, releaſed Barabbas unto them, and delivered Jeſus, when he had ſcourged *him*, to be crucified.

16 And the ſoldiers led him away into the hall called Pretorium; and they call together the whole band.

17 And they clothed him with purple, and platted a crown of thorns, and put it about his *head*,

18 And began to ſalute him, Hail, King of the Jews!

19 And they ſmote him on the head with a reed, and did ſpit upon him, and bowing *their* knees worſhipped him.

20 And when they had mocked him, they took off the purple from him, and put his own clothes on him, and led him out to crucify him.

21 And they compel one Simon a Cyrenian, who paſſed by, coming out of the country, the father of Alexander and Rufus, to bear his croſs.

22 And they bring him unto the place Golgotha, which is, being interpreted, The place of a ſkull.

23 And they gave him to drink wine mingled with myrrh: but he received *it* not.

24 And when they had crucified him, they parted his garments, caſting lots upon them what every man ſhould take.

25 And it was the third hour, and they crucified him.

26 And the ſuperſcription of his accuſation was written over, THE KING OF THE JEWS.

27 ¶ And with him they crucify two thieves, the one on his right hand, and the other on his left.

28 And the ſcripture was fulfilled, which ſaith, And he was numbered with the tranſgreſſors.

29 And they that paſſed by railed on him, wagging their heads, and ſaying, Ah, thou that deſtroyeſt the temple, and buildeſt *it* in three days,

30 Save thyſelf, and come down from the croſs.

31 Likewiſe alſo the chief prieſts mocking ſaid among themſelves with the ſcribes, He ſaved others; himſelf he cannot ſave.

32 Let Chriſt the King of Iſrael deſcend now from the croſs, that we may ſee and believe. And they that were crucified with him reviled him.

33 And when the ſixth hour was come, there was darkneſs over the whole land until the ninth hour.

34 And at the ninth hour Jeſus cried with a loud voice, ſaying, Eloi, Eloi, lama ſabachthani? which is, being interpreted, My God, my God, why haſt thou forſaken me?

35 And ſome of them that ſtood by, when they heard *it*, ſaid, Behold, he calleth Elias.

36 And one ran, and filled a ſpunge full of vinegar, and put *it* on a reed, and gave him to drink, ſaying, Let alone; let us ſee whether Elias will come to take him down.

37 And Jesus cried with a loud
voice, and gave up the ghost.
38 And the vail of the temple
was rent in twain from the top
to the bottom.
39 And when the centuri-
on, which stood over against
him, saw that he so cried out
and gave up the ghost, he said,
Truly this man was the Son of
God.
40 There were also women
looking on afar off, among
whom was Mary Magdalene,
and Mary the mother of James
the less and of Joses, and Sa-
lome;
41 (Who also, when he was in
Galilee, followed him, and mi-
nistered unto him;) and many
other women which came up
with him unto Jerusalem.
42 ¶ And now when the
even was come; because it was
the preparation, that is, the day
before the sabbath,
43 Joseph of Arimathea, an
honourable counseller, which
also waited for the kingdom of
God, came, and went in boldly
unto Pilate, and craved the
body of Jesus.
44 And Pilate marvelled if
he were already dead: and call-
ing *unto him* the centurion, he
asked him whether he had
been any while dead.
45 And when he knew *it* of
the centurion, he gave the bo-
dy to Joseph.
46 And he bought fine linen,
and took him down, and wrap-
ped him in the linen, and laid
him in a sepulchre which was
hewn out of a rock, and rolled
a stone unto the door of the se-
pulchre.
47 And Mary Magdalene
and Mary *the mother* of Joses
beheld where he was laid.

CHAP. XVI.

Christ's resurrection.

AND when the sabbath was
past, Mary Magdalene,
and Mary the *mother* of James
and Salome, had bought sweet
spices, that they might come
and anoint him.
2 And very early in the morn-
ing the first *day* of the week,
they came unto the sepulchre
at the rising of the sun.
3 And they said among
themselves, Who shall roll us
away the stone from the door
of the sepulchre?
4 And when they looked,
they saw that the stone was roll-
ed away. For it was very great.
5 And entering into the se-
pulchre, they saw a young man
sitting on the right side, clothed
in a long white garment; and
they were affrighted.
6 And he saith unto them, Be
not affrighted: Ye seek Jesus of
Nazareth, which was crucified:
he is risen; he is not here: be-
hold the place where they laid
him.
7 But go your way, tell his
disciples and Peter, that he go-
eth before you into Galilee:
there shall ye see him, as he
said unto you.
8 And they went out quick-
ly, and fled from the sepulchre:
for they trembled, and were
amazed: neither said they any
thing to any *man*; for they
were afraid.
9 ¶ Now when *Jesus* was
risen early the first *day* of the
week, he appeared first to Ma-
ry Magdalene, out of whom he
had cast seven devils.
10 *And* she went and told
them that had been with him,
as they mourned and wept.
11 And they, when they had
heard

heard that he was alive, and had been ſeen of her, believed not.

12 After that, he appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the country.

13 And they went and told *it* unto the reſidue: neither believed they them.

14 Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they ſat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardneſs of heart, becauſe they believed not them which had ſeen him after he was riſen.

15 ¶ And he ſaid unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the goſpel to every creature.

16 He that believeth and is baptized ſhall be ſaved; but he that believeth not ſhall be damned.

17 And theſe ſigns ſhall follow them that believe; In my name ſhall they caſt out devils; they ſhall ſpeak with new tongues;

18 They ſhall take up ſerpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it ſhall not hurt them; they ſhall lay hands on the ſick, and they ſhall recover.

19 ¶ So then after the Lord had ſpoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and ſat on the right hand of God.

20 And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with *them* and confirming the word with ſigns following. Amen.

The Goſpel according to Saint LUKE.

CHAP. I.

Conception of St. John and Chriſt.

FOraſmuch as many have taken in hand to ſet forth in order a declaration of thoſe things which are moſt ſurely believed among us,

2 Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning were eyewitneſſes, and miniſters of the word;

3 It ſeemed good to me alſo, having had perfect underſtanding of all things from the very firſt, to write unto thee in order, moſt excellent Theophilus,

4 That thou mighteſt know the certainty of thoſe things wherein thou haſt been inſtructed.

5 THERE was in the days of Herod the king of Judea a certain prieſt named Zacharias, of the courſe of Abia; and his wife *was* of the daughters of Aaron, and her name *was* Eliſabeth.

6 And they were both righteous before God, walking in all the commandments and ordinances of the Lord blameleſs.

7 And they had no child, becauſe that Eliſabeth was barren: and they both were *now* well ſtricken in years.

8 And it came to paſs, that while he executed the prieſt's office before God in the order of his courſe,

9 According to the cuſtom of the prieſt's office, his lot was to burn incenſe when he went into the temple of the Lord.

10 And the whole multitude of the people were praying without, at the time of incenſe.

11 And there appeared unto him an angel of the Lord ſtand-

ſtanding on the right ſide of the
altar of incenſe.
12 And when Zacharias ſaw
him, he was troubled, and fear
fell upon him.
13 But the angel ſaid unto
him, Fear not, Zacharias: for
thy prayer is heard; and thy
wife Eliſabeth ſhall bear thee a
ſon, and thou ſhalt call his
name John.
14 And thou ſhalt have joy
and gladneſs; and many ſhall
rejoice at his birth.
15 For he ſhall be great in the
ſight of the Lord, and ſhall
drink neither wine nor ſtrong
drink; and he ſhall be filled
with the Holy Ghoſt, even from
his mother's womb.
16 And many of the children
of Iſrael ſhall he turn to the
Lord their God.
17 And he ſhall go before
him in the ſpirit and power of
Elias, to turn the hearts of the
fathers to the children, and the
diſobedient to the wiſdom of
the juſt: to make ready a
people prepared for the Lord.
18 And Zacharias ſaid unto
the angel, Whereby ſhall I know
this? for I am an old man, and
my wife well ſtricken in years.
19 And the angel anſwering
ſaid unto him, I am Gabriel,
that ſtand in the preſence of
God; and am ſent to ſpeak un-
to thee, and to ſhew thee theſe
glad tidings.
20 And, behold, thou ſhalt be
dumb, and not able to ſpeak,
until the day that theſe things
ſhall be performed, becauſe thou
believeſt not my words, which
ſhall be fulfilled in their ſeaſon.
21 And the people waited
for Zacharias, and marvelled
that he tarried ſo long in the
temple.
22 And when he came out,
he could not ſpeak unto them:
and they perceived that he had
ſeen a viſion in the temple: for
he beckoned unto them, and
remained ſpeechleſs.
23 And it came to paſs, that
as ſoon as the days of his mi-
niſtration were accompliſhed,
he departed to his own houſe.
24 And after thoſe days his
wife Eliſabeth conceived, and
hid herſelf five months, ſaying,
25 Thus hath the Lord dealt
with me in the days wherein
he looked on *me*, to take away
my reproach among men.
26 ¶ And in the ſixth month
the angel Gabriel was ſent
from God unto a city of Ga-
lilee, named Nazareth,
27 To a virgin eſpouſed to a
man whoſe name was Joſeph,
of the houſe of David; and the
virgin's name was Mary.
28 And the angel came in
unto her, and ſaid, Hail, *thou
that art* highly favoured! the
Lord *is* with thee: bleſſed *art*
thou among women.
29 And when ſhe ſaw *him*,
ſhe was troubled at his ſaying,
and caſt in her mind what man-
ner of ſalutation this ſhould be.
30 And the angel ſaid unto
her, Fear not, Mary: for thou
haſt found favour with God.
31 And, behold, thou ſhalt
conceive in thy womb, and
bring forth a ſon, and ſhalt call
his name JESUS.
32 He ſhall be great, and ſhall
be called the Son of the High-
eſt; and the Lord God ſhall
give unto him the throne of his
father David:
33 And he ſhall reign over
the houſe of Jacob for ever;
and of his kingdom there ſhall
be no end.

34 Then ſaid Mary unto the angel: How ſhall this be, ſeeing I know not a man?

35 And the angel anſwered and ſaid unto her, The Holy Ghoſt ſhall come upon thee, and the power of the Higheſt ſhall overſhadow thee: therefore alſo that holy thing which ſhall be born of thee, ſhall be called the Son of God.

36 And, behold, thy couſin Eliſabeth, ſhe hath alſo conceived a ſon in her old age: and this is the ſixth month with her who was called barren.

37 For with God nothing ſhall be impoſſible.

38 And Mary ſaid, Behold the handmaid of the Lord, be it unto me according to thy word. And the angel departed from her.

39 ¶ And Mary aroſe in thoſe days, and went into the hill country with haſte, into a city of Juda;

40 And entered into the houſe of Zacharias, and ſaluted Eliſabeth.

41 And it came to paſs, that when Eliſabeth heard the ſalutation of Mary, the babe leaped in her womb; and Eliſabeth was filled with the Holy Ghoſt:

42 And ſhe ſpake out with a loud voice, and ſaid, Bleſſed *art* thou among women, and bleſſed *is* the fruit of thy womb.

43 And whence *is* this to me, that the mother of my Lord ſhould come to me?

44 For, lo, as ſoon as the voice of thy ſalutation ſounded in mine ears, the babe leaped in my womb for joy.

45 And bleſſed *is* ſhe that believed: for there ſhall be a performance of thoſe things which were told her from the Lord.

46 And Mary ſaid, My ſoul doth magnify the Lord,

47 And my ſpirit hath rejoiced in God my Saviour.

48 For he hath regarded the low eſtate of his handmaiden: for, behold, from henceforth all generations ſhall call me bleſſed.

49 For he that is mighty hath done to me great things; and holy *is* his name.

50 And his mercy *is* on them that fear him from generation to generation.

51 He hath ſhewed ſtrength with his arm: he hath ſcattered the proud in the imagination of their hearts.

52 He hath put down the mighty from *their* ſeats, and exalted them of low degree.

53 He hath filled the hungry with good things, and the rich he hath ſent empty away.

54 He hath holpen his ſervant Iſrael, in remembrance of *his* mercy;

55 As he ſpake to our fathers, to Abraham, and to his ſeed for ever.

56 And Mary abode with her about three months, and returned to her own houſe.

57 ¶ Now Eliſabeth's full time came that ſhe ſhould be delivered; and ſhe brought forth a ſon.

58 And her neighbours and her couſins heard how the Lord had ſhewed great mercy upon her; and they rejoiced with her.

59 And it came to paſs, that on the eighth day they came to circumciſe the child: and they called him Zacharias, after the name of his father.

60 And his mother anſwered and ſaid, Not *ſo;* but he ſhall be called John.

61 And they ſaid unto her,
There is none of thy kindred
that is called by this name.
62 And they made ſigns to
his father, how he would have
him called.
63 And he aſked for a writ-
ing table, and wrote, ſaying,
His name is John. And they
marvelled all.
64 And his mouth was open-
ed immediately, and his tongue
looſed, and he ſpake, and praiſed
God.
65 And fear came on all that
dwelt round about them: and
all theſe ſayings were noiſed
abroad throughout all the hill
country of Judea.
66 And all they that heard
them, laid *them* up in their
hearts, ſaying, What manner of
child ſhall this be? And the
hand of the Lord was with him.
67 ¶ And his father Zacharias
was filled with the Holy Ghoſt,
and prophesied, ſaying,
68 Bleſſed *be* the Lord God
of Iſrael: for he hath viſited
and redeemed his people,
69 And hath raiſed up an
horn of ſalvation for us in the
houſe of his ſervant David;
70 As he ſpake by the mouth
of his holy prophets, which have
been ſince the world began:
71 That we ſhould be ſaved
from our enemies, and from
the hand of all that hate us;
72 To perform the mercy
promiſed to our fathers, and to
remember his holy covenant;
73 The oath which he ſware
to our father Abraham,
74 That he would grant unto
us, that we, being delivered out
of the hand of our enemies,
might ſerve him without fear,
75 In holineſs and righteouſ-
neſs before him, all the days of
our life.
76 And thou, child, ſhalt be
called the prophet of the High-
eſt: for thou ſhalt go before
the face of the Lord to prepare
his ways;
77 To give knowledge of ſal-
vation unto his people by the
remiſſion of their ſins,
78 Through the tender mer-
cy of our God; whereby the
dayſpring from on high hath
viſited us,
79 To give light to them that
ſit in darkneſs and *in* the ſha-
dow of death, to guide our feet
into the way of peace.
80 And the child grew and
waxed ſtrong in ſpirit, and was
in the deſerts till the day of his
ſhewing unto Iſrael.

CHAP. II.

Roman empire taxed.

AND it came to paſs in thoſe
days, that there went out
a decree from Ceſar Auguſtus,
that all the world ſhould be
taxed.
2 (*And* this taxing was firſt
made when Cyrenius was go-
vernor of Syria.)
3 And all went to be taxed,
every one into his own city.
4 And Joſeph alſo went up
from Galilee, out of the city of
Nazareth into Judea, unto the
city of David, which is called
Bethlehem; (becauſe he was of
the houſe and lineage of David:)
5 To be taxed with Mary his
eſpouſed wife, being great with
child.
6 ¶ And ſo it was, that, while
they were there the days were
accompliſhed that ſhe ſhould be
delivered.
7 And ſhe brought forth her
firſtborn ſon, and wrapped him
in ſwaddling clothes, and laid
him in a manger; becauſe there
was no room for them in the inn.

8 And

8 And there were in the ſame country ſhepherds abiding in the field, keeping watch over their flock by night.

9 And, lo, the angel of the Lord came upon them, and the glory of the Lord ſhone round about them: and they were ſore afraid.

10 And the angel ſaid unto them, Fear not: for, behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy, which ſhall be to all people.

11 For unto you is born this day in the city of David a Saviour, which is Chriſt the Lord.

12 And this *ſhall be* a ſign unto you: Ye ſhall find the babe wrapped in ſwaddling clothes, lying in a manger.

13 And ſuddenly there was with the angel a multitude of the heavenly hoſt praiſing God, and ſaying,

14 Glory to God in the higheſt, and on earth peace, good will toward men.

15 And it came to paſs, as the angels were gone away from them into heaven, the ſhepherds ſaid one to another, Let us now go even unto Bethlehem, and ſee this thing which is come to paſs, which the Lord hath made known unto us.

16 And they came with haſte, and found Mary and Joſeph, and the babe lying in a manger.

17 And when they had ſeen *it*, they made known abroad the ſaying which was told them concerning this child.

18 And all they that heard *it* wondered at thoſe things which were told them by the ſhepherds.

19 But Mary kept all theſe things, and pondered *them* in her heart.

20 And the ſhepherds returned, glorifying and praiſing God for all the things that they had heard and ſeen, as it was told unto them.

21 ¶ And when eight days were accompliſhed for the circumciſing of the child, his name was called JESUS, which was ſo named of the angel before he was conceived in the womb.

22 And when the days of her purification, according to the law of Moſes, were accompliſhed, they brought him to Jeruſalem, to preſent *him* to the Lord;

23 (As it is written in the law of the Lord, Every male that openeth the womb ſhall be called holy to the Lord;)

24 And to offer a ſacrifice, according to that which is ſaid in the law of the Lord, A pair of turtledoves, or two young pigeons.

25 And, behold, there was a man in Jeruſalem whoſe name *was* Simeon; and the ſame man *was* juſt and devout, waiting for the conſolation of Iſrael; and the Holy Ghoſt was upon him.

26 And it was revealed unto him by the Holy Ghoſt, that he ſhould not ſee death before he had ſeen the Lord's Chriſt.

27 And he came by the Spirit into the temple. And when the parents brought in the child Jeſus, to do for him after the cuſtom of the law,

28 Then took he him up in his arms, and bleſſed God, and ſaid,

29 Lord, now letteſt thou thy ſervant depart in peace, according to thy word:

30 For mine eyes have ſeen thy ſalvation,

31 Which thou haſt prepared before the face of all people;

32 A light to lighten the
Gentiles, and the glory of thy
people Iſrael.
33 And Joſeph and his mo-
ther marvelled at thoſe things
which were ſpoken of him.
34 And Simeon bleſſed them,
and ſaid unto Mary his mother,
Behold, this *child* is ſet for the
fall and riſing again of many
in Iſrael; and for a ſign which
ſhall be ſpoken againſt;
35 (Yea, a ſword ſhall pierce
through thy own ſoul alſo,) that
the thoughts of many hearts
may be revealed.
36 And there was one Anna
a propheteſs, the daughter of
Phanuel, of the tribe of Aſer;
ſhe was of a great age, and had
lived with an huſband ſeven
years from her virginity;
37 And ſhe *was* a widow of
about fourſcore and four years,
which departed not from the
temple, but ſerved *God* with faſt-
ings and prayers night and day.
38 And ſhe coming in that
inſtant gave thanks likewiſe
unto the Lord, and ſpake of
him to all them that looked
for redemption in Jeruſalem.
39 And when they had per-
formed all things, according to
the law of the Lord, they re-
turned into Galilee, to their
own city Nazareth.
40 And the child grew and
waxed ſtrong in ſpirit, filled
with wiſdom: and the grace of
God was upon him.
41 Now his parents went to
Jeruſalem every year at the
feaſt of the paſſover.
42 And when he was twelve
years old, they went up to Je-
ruſalem; after the cuſtom of the
feaſt.
43 And when they had ful-
filled the days, as they return-
ed, the child Jeſus tarried be-
hind in Jeruſalem; and Joſeph
and his mother knew not *of it.*
44 But they ſuppoſing him to
have been in the company, went
a day's journey: and they
ſought him among *their* kinſ-
folk and acquaintance.
45 And when they found him
not, they turned back again to
Jeruſalem, ſeeking him.
46 And it came to paſs, that
after three days they found him
in the temple, ſitting in the
midſt of the doctors, both hear-
ing them, and aſking them
queſtions.
47 And all that heard him
were aſtoniſhed at his under-
ſtanding and anſwers.
48 And when they ſaw him,
they were amazed. And his
mother ſaid unto him, Son, why
haſt thou thus dealt with us?
behold, thy father and I have
ſought thee ſorrowing.
49 And he ſaid unto them,
How is it that ye ſought me?
wiſt ye not that I muſt be about
my Father's buſineſs?
50 And they underſtood not
the ſaying which he ſpake un-
to them.
51 And he went down with
them, and came to Nazareth,
and was ſubject unto them.
But his mother kept all theſe
ſayings in her heart.
52 And Jeſus increaſed in
wiſdom and ſtature, and in fa-
vour with God and man.

CHAP. III.

John's preaching and baptiſm.

NOW in the fifteenth year
of the reign of Tiberius
Cæſar, Pontius Pilate being go-
vernor of Judea, and Herod
being tetrarch of Galilee, and
his brother Philip tetrarch of
Iturea, and of the region of
Tracho-

Trachonitis, and Lyſanias the tetrarch of Abilene,

2 Annas and Caiaphas being the high prieſts, the word of God came unto John the ſon of Zacharias in the wilderneſs.

3 And he came into all the country about Jordan, preaching the baptiſm of repentance for the remiſſion of ſins;

4 As is it written in the book of the words of Eſaias the prophet, ſaying, The voice of one crying in the wilderneſs, Prepare ye the way of the Lord, make his paths ſtraight.

5 Every valley ſhall be filled, and every mountain and hill ſhall be brought low; and the crooked ſhall be made ſtraight, and the rough ways *ſhall be* made ſmooth;

6 And all fleſh ſhall ſee the ſalvation of God.

7 Then ſaid he to the multitude that came forth to be baptized of him, O generation of vipers, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?

8 Bring forth therefore fruits worthy of repentance, and begin not to ſay within yourſelves, We have Abraham to *our* father: for I ſay unto you, That God is able of theſe ſtones to raiſe up children unto Abraham.

9 And now alſo the ax is laid unto the root of the trees: every tree therefore which bringeth not forth good fruit is hewn down, and caſt into the fire.

10 And the people aſked him, ſaying, What ſhall we do then?

11 He anſwereth and ſaith unto them, He that hath two coats, let him impart to him that hath none; and he that hath meat, let him do likewiſe.

12 Then came alſo publicans to be baptized, and ſaid unto him, Maſter, what ſhall we do?

13 And he ſaid unto them, Exact no more than that which is appointed you.

14 And the ſoldiers likewiſe demanded of him, ſaying, And what ſhall we do? And he ſaid unto them, Do violence to no man, neither accuſe *any* falſely; and be content with your wages.

15 ¶ And as the people were in expectation, and all men muſed in their hearts of John, whether he were the Chriſt, or not;

16 John anſwered, ſaying unto *them* all, I indeed baptize you with water; but one mightier than I cometh, the latchet of whoſe ſhoes I am not worthy to unlooſe; he ſhall baptize you with the Holy Ghoſt and with fire:

17 Whoſe fan *is* in his hand, and he will throughly purge his floor, and will gather the wheat into his garner; but the chaff he will burn with fire unquenchable.

18 And many other things in his exhortation preached he unto the people.

19 ¶ But Herod the tetrarch, being reproved by him for Herodias his brother Philip's wife, and for all the evils which Herod had done,

20 Added yet this above all, that he ſhut up John in priſon.

21 Now when all the people were baptized, it came to paſs, that Jeſus alſo being baptized, and praying, the heaven was opened,

22 And the Holy Ghoſt deſcended in a bodily ſhape like a dove upon him, and a voice came from heaven, which ſaid, Thou art my beloved Son: in thee I am well pleaſed.

23 ¶ And Jeſus himſelf began to
be about thirty years of age, be-
ing (as was ſuppoſed) the ſon of
Joſeph, which was *the ſon* of Heli,
24 Which was *the ſon* of Mat-
that, which was *the ſon* of Levi,
which was *the ſon* of Melchi,
which was *the ſon* of Janna,
which was *the ſon* of Joſeph,
25 Which was *the ſon* of Mat-
tathias, which was *the ſon* of A-
mos, which was *the ſon* of Nahum,
which was *the ſon* of Eſli, which
was *the ſon* of Nagge,
26 Which was *the ſon* of Maath,
which was *the ſon* of Mattathias,
which was *the ſon* of Semei,
which was *the ſon* of Joſeph,
which was *the ſon* of Juda,
27 Which was *the ſon* of Joan-
na, which was *the ſon* of Rheſa,
which was *the ſon* of Zorobabel,
which was *the ſon* of Salathiel,
which was *the ſon* of Neri,
28 Which was *the ſon* of Mel-
chi, which was *the ſon* of Addi,
which was *the ſon* of Coſam,
which was *the ſon* of Elmodam,
which was *the ſon* of Er,
29 Which was *the ſon* of Joſe,
which was *the ſon* of Eliezer,
which was *the ſon* of Jorim,
which was *the ſon* of Matthat,
which was *the ſon* of Levi,
30 Which was *the ſon* of Sime-
on, which was *the ſon* of Juda,
which was *the ſon* of Joſeph,
which was *the ſon* of Jonan,
which was *the ſon* of Eliakim,
31 Which was *the ſon* of Me-
lea, which was *the ſon* of Menan,
which was *the ſon* of Mattatha,
which was *the ſon* of Nathan,
which was *the ſon* of David,
32 Which was *the ſon* of Jeſſe,
which was *the ſon* of Obed,
which was *the ſon* of Booz, which
was *the ſon* of Salmon, which
was *the ſon* of Naaſſon,
33 Which was *the ſon* of Ami-
nadab, which was *the ſon* of A-
ram, which was *the ſon* of Eſrom,
which was *the ſon* of Phares,
which was *the ſon* of Juda,
34 Which was *the ſon* of Ja-
cob, which was *the ſon* of Iſaac,
which was *the ſon* of Abraham,
which was *the ſon* of Thara,
which was *the ſon* of Nachor,
35 Which was *the ſon* of Sa-
ruch, which was *the ſon* of Ra-
gau, which was *the ſon* of Phalec,
which was *the ſon* of Heber,
which was *the ſon* of Sala,
36 Which was *the ſon* of Cai-
nan, which was *the ſon* of Ar-
phaxad, which was *the ſon* of
Sem, which was *the ſon* of Noe,
which was *the ſon* of Lamech,
37 Which was *the ſon* of Ma-
thuſala, which was *the ſon* of E-
noch, which was *the ſon* of Jared,
which was *the ſon* of Maleleel,
which was *the ſon* of Cainan,
38 Which was *the ſon* of Enos,
which was *the ſon* of Seth,
which was *the ſon* of Adam,
which was *the ſon* of God.

CHAP. IV.

Chriſt's temptation and victory.

AND Jeſus being full of the
Holy Ghoſt returned from
Jordan, and was led by the Spi-
rit into the wilderneſs,
2 Being forty days tempted
of the devil. And in thoſe days
he did eat nothing: and when
they were ended, he afterward
hungered.
3 And the devil ſaid unto
him, If thou be the Son of God,
command this ſtone that it be
made bread.
4 And Jeſus anſwered him,
ſaying, It is written, That man
ſhall not live by bread alone,
but by every word of God.
5 And the devil taking him
up into an high mountain,
ſhewed unto him all the king-
doms

doms of the world in a moment
of time.
6 And the devil ſaid unto
him, All this power will I give
thee, and the glory of them: for
that is delivered unto me; and
to whomſoever I will I give it.
7 If thou therefore wilt wor-
ſhip me, all ſhall be thine.
8 And Jeſus anſwered and
ſaid unto him, Get thee behind
me, Satan; for it is written,
Thou ſhalt worſhip the Lord
thy God, and him only ſhalt
thou ſerve.
9 And he brought him to
Jeruſalem, and ſet him on a
pinnacle of the temple, and
ſaid unto him, If thou be the
Son of God, caſt thyſelf down
from hence:
10 For it is written, He ſhall
give his angels charge over thee
to keep thee:
11 And in *their* hands they
ſhall bear thee up, leſt at any
time thou daſh thy foot againſt
a ſtone.
12 And Jeſus anſwering ſaid
unto him, It is ſaid, Thou ſhalt
not tempt the Lord thy God.
13 And when the devil had
ended all the temptation, he de-
parted from him for a ſeaſon.
14 And Jeſus returned in
the power of the Spirit into
Galilee: and there went out a
fame of him through all the
region round about.
15 And he taught in their ſy-
nagogues, being glorified of all.
16 ¶ And he came to Na-
zareth, where he had been
brought up: and, as his cuſtom
was, he went into the ſyna-
gogue on the ſabbath day, and
ſtood up for to read.
17 And there was delivered
unto him the book of the pro-
phet Eſaias. And when he had
opened the book, he found the
place where it was written,
18 The Spirit of the Lord *is*
upon me, becauſe he hath an-
ointed me to preach the goſpel
to the poor: he hath ſent me
to heal the brokenhearted, to
preach deliverance to the cap-
tives, and recovering of ſight
to the blind, to ſet at liberty
them that are bruiſed,
19 To preach the acceptable
year of the Lord.
20 And he cloſed the book,
and he gave *it* again to the mini-
ſter, and ſat down. And the eyes
of all them that were in the ſyna-
gogue were faſtened on him.
21 And he began to ſay unto
them, This day is this ſcripture
fulfilled in your ears.
22 And all bare him witneſs,
and wondered at the gracious
words which proceeded out of
his mouth. And they ſaid, Is
not this Joſeph's ſon?
23 And he ſaid unto them,
Ye will ſurely ſay unto me this
proverb, Phyſician, heal thy-
ſelf: whatſoever we have heard
done in Capernaum, do alſo
here in thy country.
24 And he ſaid, Verily I ſay
unto you, No prophet is ac-
cepted in his own country.
25 But I tell you of a truth,
Many widows were in Iſrael in
the days of Elias, when the hea-
ven was ſhut up three years and
ſix months, when great famine
was throughout all the land;
26 But unto none of them
was Elias ſent, ſave unto Sa-
repta, *a city* of Sidon, unto a
woman *that was* a widow.
27 And many lepers were in
Iſrael in the time of Eliſeus the
prophet; and none of them
was cleanſed, ſaving Naaman
the Syrian.

28 And all they in the ſynagogue, when they heard theſe things, were filled with wrath,

29 And roſe up, and thruſt him out of the city, and led him unto the brow of the hill whereon their city was built, that they might caſt him down headlong.

30 But he paſſing through the midſt of them went his way,

31 And came down to Capernaum, a city of Galilee, and taught them on the ſabbath days.

32 And they were aſtoniſhed at his doctrine: for his word was with power.

33 ¶ And in the ſynagogue there was a man, which had a ſpirit of an unclean devil, and cried out with a loud voice,

34 Saying, Let *us* alone; what have we to do with thee, *thou* Jeſus of Nazareth? art thou come to deſtroy us? I know thee who thou art; the Holy One of God.

35 And Jeſus rebuked him, ſaying, Hold thy peace, and come out of him. And when the devil had thrown him in the midſt, he came out of him, and hurt him not.

36 And they were all amazed, and ſpake among themſelves, ſaying, What a word *is* this! for with authority and power he commandeth the unclean ſpirits, and they come out.

37 And the fame of him went out into every place of the country round about.

38 And he aroſe out of the ſynagogue, and entered into Simon's houſe: and Simon's wife's mother was taken with a great fever, and they beſought him for her.

39 And he ſtood over her, and rebuked the fever; and it left her: and immediately ſhe aroſe, and miniſtered unto them.

40 Now when the ſun was ſetting, all they that had any ſick with divers diſeaſes brought them unto him; and he laid his hands on every one of them, and healed them.

41 And devils alſo came out of many, crying out, and ſaying, Thou art Chriſt the Son of God. And he rebuking *them*, ſuffered them not to ſpeak: for they knew that he was Chriſt.

42 And when it was day, he departed and went into a deſert place: and the people ſought him, and came unto him, and ſtayed him, that he ſhould not depart from them.

43 And he ſaid unto them, I muſt preach the kingdom of God to other cities alſo: for therefore am I ſent.

44 And he preached in the ſynagogues of Galilee.

CHAP. V.

A miraculous draught of fiſhes.

AND it came to paſs, that as the people preſſed upon him to hear the word of God, he ſtood by the lake of Genneſaret,

2 And ſaw two ſhips ſtanding by the lake: but the fiſhermen were gone out of them, and were waſhing *their* nets.

3 And he entered into one of the ſhips, which was Simon's, and prayed him that he would thruſt out a little from the land. And he ſat down, and taught the people out of the ſhip.

4 ¶ Now when he had left ſpeaking, he ſaid unto Simon, Launch out into the deep, and let down your nets for a draught.

5 And Simon anſwering ſaid unto him, Maſter, we have toiled all the night, and have taken nothing:

nothing: nevertheleſs at thy
word I will let down the net.
6 And when they had this
done, they incloſed a great
multitude of fiſhes: and their
net brake.
7 And they beckoned unto
their partners, which were in
the other ſhip, that they ſhould
come and help them. And
they came and filled both the
ſhips, ſo that they began to ſink.
8 When Simon Peter ſaw *it*,
he fell down at Jeſus' knees,
ſaying, Depart from me; for I
am a ſinful man, O Lord.
9 For he was aſtoniſhed, and
all that were with him, at the
draught of the fiſhes which they
had taken:
10 And ſo *was* alſo James,
and John, the ſons of Zebedee,
which were partners with Si-
mon. And Jeſus ſaid unto Si-
mon, Fear not; from hence-
forth thou ſhalt catch men.
11 And when they had
brought their ſhips to land,
they forſook all, and followed
him.
12 ¶ And it came to paſs,
when he was in a certain city,
behold, a man full of leproſy:
who ſeeing Jeſus, fell on *his*
face, and beſought him, ſaying,
Lord, if thou wilt, thou canſt
make me clean.
13 And he put forth *his*
hand, and touched him, ſay-
ing, I will: be thou clean.
And immediately the leproſy
departed from him.
14 And he charged him to
tell no man: but go, and ſhew
thyſelf to the prieſt, and offer
for thy cleanſing, according as
Moſes commanded, for a teſti-
mony unto them.
15 But ſo much the more
went there a fame abroad of
him: and great multitudes
came together to hear, and to
be healed by him of their infir-
mities.
16 And he withdrew him-
ſelf into the wilderneſs, and
prayed.
17 ¶ And it came to paſs on a
certain day, as he was teaching,
that there were Phariſees and
doctors of the law ſitting by,
which were come out of every
town of Galilee, and Judea, and
Jeruſalem: and the power of the
Lord was *preſent* to heal them.
18 And, behold, men brought
in a bed a man which was taken
with a palſy: and they ſought
means to bring him in, and to
lay *him* before him.
19 And when they could not
find by what *way* they might
bring him in becauſe of the
multitude, they went upon the
houſetop, and let him down
through the tiling with *his*
couch into the midſt before
Jeſus.
20 And when he ſaw their
faith, he ſaid unto him, Man,
thy ſins are forgiven thee.
21 And the ſcribes and the
Phariſees began to reaſon, ſay-
ing, Who is this which ſpeak-
eth blaſphemies? Who can for-
give ſins, but God alone?
22 But when Jeſus perceived
their thoughts, he anſwering
ſaid unto them, What reaſon
ye in your hearts?
23 Whether is eaſier to ſay,
Thy ſins be forgiven thee; or
to ſay, Riſe up and walk?
24 But that ye may know
that the Son of man hath pow-
er upon earth to forgive ſins,
(he ſaid unto the ſick of the
palſy,) I ſay unto thee, Ariſe,
and take up thy couch, and go
unto thine houſe.

25 And immediately he roſe up before them, and took up that whereon he lay, and departed to his own houſe, glorifying God.

26 And they were all amazed, and they glorified God, and were filled with fear, ſaying, We have ſeen ſtrange things to day.

27 ¶ And after theſe things he went forth, and ſaw a publican named Levi, ſitting at the receipt of cuſtom: and he ſaid unto him, Follow me.

28 And he left all, roſe up, and followed him.

29 And Levi made him a great feaſt in his own houſe: and there was a great company of publicans and of others that ſat down with them.

30 But their ſcribes and Phariſees murmured againſt his diſciples, ſaying, Why do ye eat and drink with publicans and ſinners?

31 And Jeſus anſwering ſaid unto them, They that are whole need not a phyſician; but they that are ſick.

32 I came not to call the righteous, but ſinners to repentance.

33 And they ſaid unto him, Why do the diſciples of John faſt often, and make prayers, and likewiſe *the diſciples* of the Phariſees; but thine eat and drink?

34 And he ſaid unto them, Can ye make the children of the bridechamber faſt while the bridegroom is with them?

35 But the days will come when the bridegroom ſhall be taken away from them, and then ſhall they faſt in thoſe days.

36 And he ſpake alſo a parable unto them, No man putteth a piece of a new garment upon an old; if otherwiſe, then both the new maketh a rent, and the piece that was *taken* out of the new agreeth not with the old.

37 And no man putteth new wine into old bottles; elſe the new wine will burſt the bottles, and be ſpilled, and the bottles ſhall periſh.

38 But new wine muſt be put into new bottles; and both are preſerved.

39 No man alſo having drunk old *wine* ſtraightway deſireth new: for he ſaith, The old is better.

C H A P. VI.

Chriſt chooſeth the twelve.

AND it came to paſs on the ſecond ſabbath after the firſt, that he went through the corn fields; and his diſciples plucked the ears of corn, and did eat, rubbing *them* in *their* hands.

2 And certain of the Phariſees ſaid unto them, Why do ye that which is not lawful to do on the ſabbath days?

3 And Jeſus anſwering them ſaid, Have ye not read ſo much as this, what David did, when himſelf was an hungered, and they which were with him;

4 How he went into the houſe of God, and did take and eat the ſhewbread, and gave alſo to them that were with him: which it is not lawful to eat but for the prieſts alone?

5 And he ſaid unto them, That the Son of man is Lord alſo of the ſabbath.

6 ¶ And it came to paſs alſo on another ſabbath, that he entered into the ſynagogue, and taught: and there was a man whoſe right hand was withered.

7 And the ſcribes and Phari-

ſees watched him, whether he
would heal on the ſabbath day;
that they might find an accuſa-
tion againſt him.
8 But he knew their thoughts,
and ſaid to the man which had
the withered hand, Riſe up,
and ſtand forth in the midſt.
And he aroſe, and ſtood forth.
9 Then ſaid Jeſus unto them,
I will aſk you one thing; Is it
lawful on the ſabbath days to
do good, or to do evil? to ſave
life, or to deſtroy *it?*
10 And looking round about
upon them all, he ſaid unto the
man, Stretch forth thy hand.
And he did ſo: and his hand
was reſtored whole as the other.
11 And they were filled with
madneſs; and communed one
with another what they might
do to Jeſus.
12 ¶ And it came to paſs in
thoſe days, that he went out into
a mountain to pray, and conti-
nued all night in prayer to God.
13 And when it was day, he
called *unto him* his diſciples:
and of them he choſe twelve,
whom alſo he named apoſtles;
14 Simon, (whom he alſo
named Peter,) and Andrew his
brother, James and John, Phi-
lip and Bartholomew,
15 Matthew and Thomas,
James the *ſon* of Alpheus, and
Simon called Zelotes,
16 And Judas *the brother* of
James, and Judas Iſcariot,
which alſo was the traitor.
17 ¶ And he came down
with them, and ſtood in the
plain; and the company of his
diſciples, and a great multitude
of people out of all Judea and
Jeruſalem, and from the ſea
coaſt of Tyre and Sidon, which
came to hear him, and to be
healed of their diſeaſes;
18 And they that were vex-
ed with unclean ſpirits: and
they were healed.
19 And the whole multitude
ſought to touch him: for there
went virtue out of him, and
healed *them* all.
20 ¶ And he lifted up his
eyes on his diſciples, and ſaid,
Bleſſed *be ye* poor: for your's is
the kingdom of God.
21 Bleſſed *are ye* that hun-
ger now: for ye ſhall be filled.
Bleſſed *are ye* that weep now:
for ye ſhall laugh.
22 Bleſſed are ye when men
ſhall hate you, and when they
ſhall ſeparate you *from their
company*, and ſhall reproach *you*,
and caſt out your name as evil
for the Son of man's ſake.
23 Rejoice ye in that day, and
leap for joy: for, behold, your
reward *is* great in heaven: for
in the like manner did their
fathers unto the prophets.
24 But woe unto you that
are rich! for ye have received
your conſolation.
25 Woe unto you that are
full! for ye ſhall hunger. Woe
unto you that laugh now! for
ye ſhall mourn and weep.
26 Woe unto you when all
men ſhall ſpeak well of you!
for ſo did their fathers to the
falſe prophets.
27 But I ſay unto you which
hear, Love your enemies, do
good to them which hate you,
28 Bleſs them that curſe you,
and pray for them which de-
ſpitefully uſe you.
29 And unto him that ſmit-
eth thee on the *one* cheek of-
fer alſo the other; and him
that taketh away thy cloke
forbid not *to take thy* coat alſo.
30 Give to every man that
aſketh of thee; and of him
that

that taketh away thy goods
aſk *them* not again.
31 And as ye would that men
ſhould do to you, do ye alſo to
them likewiſe.
32 For if ye love them which
love you, what thank have ye?
for ſinners alſo love thoſe that
love them.
33 And if ye do good to them
which do good to you, what
thank have ye? for ſinners alſo
do even the ſame.
34 And if ye lend *to them*
of whom ye hope to receive,
what thank have ye? for ſin-
ners alſo lend to ſinners, to re-
ceive as much again.
35 But love ye your enemies,
and do good, and lend, hoping
for nothing again; and your
reward ſhall be great, and ye
ſhall be the children of the
Higheſt: for he is kind unto the
unthankful, and *to* the evil.
36 Be ye therefore merciful,
as your Father alſo is merciful.
37 Judge not, and ye ſhall not
be judged: condemn not, and
ye ſhall not be condemned: for-
give, and ye ſhall be forgiven:
38 Give, and it ſhall be given
unto you: good meaſure, preſſ-
ed down, and ſhaken together,
and running over, ſhall men
give into your boſom. For with
the ſame meaſure that ye mete
withal it ſhall be meaſured to
you again.
39 And he ſpake a parable
unto them, Can the blind lead
the blind? ſhall they not both
fall into the ditch?
40 The diſciple is not above
his maſter: but every one that
is perfect ſhall be as his maſter.
41 And why beholdeſt thou
the mote that is in thy brother's
eye, but perceiveſt not the
beam that is in thine own eye?
42 Either how canſt thou ſay
to thy brother, Brother, let me
pull out the mote that is in
thine eye, when thou thyſelf be-
holdeſt not the beam that is in
thine own eye? Thou hypocrite,
caſt out firſt the beam out of
thine own eye, and then ſhalt
thou ſee clearly to pull out the
mote that is in thy brother's eye.
43 For a good tree bringeth
not forth corrupt fruit; nei-
ther doth a corrupt tree bring
forth good fruit.
44 For every tree is known
by his own fruit: for of thorns
men do not gather figs, nor of
a bramble buſh gather they
grapes.
45 A good man out of the
good treaſure of his heart
bringeth forth that which is
good, and an evil man out of
the evil treaſure of his heart
bringeth forth that which is
evil: for of the abundance of the
heart his mouth ſpeaketh.
46 And why call ye me,
Lord, Lord, and do not the
things which I ſay?
47 Whoſoever cometh to me,
and heareth my ſayings, and
doeth them, I will ſhew you to
whom he is like:
48 He is like a man which
built an houſe, and digged
deep, and laid the foundation
on a rock; and when the flood
aroſe, the ſtream beat vehe-
mently upon that houſe, and
could not ſhake it: for it was
founded upon a rock.
49 But he that heareth, and
doeth not, is like a man that
without a foundation built an
houſe upon the earth, againſt
which the ſtream did beat vehe-
mently, and immediately it
fell, and the ruin of that houſe
was great.

CHAP. VII.

Chriſt raiſeth the widow's ſon.

NOW when he had ended all his ſayings in the audience of the people, he entered into Capernaum.

2 And a certain centurion's ſervant, who was dear unto him, was ſick and ready to die.

3 And when he heard of Jeſus, he ſent unto him the elders of the Jews, beſeeching him that he would come and heal his ſervant.

4 And when they came to Jeſus, they beſought him inſtantly, ſaying, That he was worthy for whom he ſhould do this:

5 For he loveth our nation, and he hath built us a ſynagogue.

6 Then Jeſus went with them. And when he was now not far from the houſe, the centurion ſent friends to him, ſaying unto him, Lord, trouble not thyſelf: for I am not worthy that thou ſhouldeſt enter under my roof:

7 Wherefore neither thought I myſelf worthy to come unto thee: but ſay in a word, and my ſervant ſhall be healed.

8 For I alſo am a man ſet under authority, having under me ſoldiers, and I ſay unto one, Go, and he goeth; and to another, Come, and he cometh; and to my ſervant, Do this, and he doeth *it*.

9 When Jeſus heard theſe things, he marvelled at him, and turned him about, and ſaid unto the people that followed him, I ſay unto you, I have not found ſo great faith, no, not in Iſrael.

10 And they that were ſent, returning to the houſe, found the ſervant whole that had been ſick.

11 ¶ And it came to paſs the day after, that he went into a city called Nain; and many of his diſciples went with him, and much people.

12 Now when he came nigh to the gate of the city, behold, there was a dead man carried out, the only ſon of his mother, and ſhe was a widow: and much people of the city was with her.

13 And when the Lord ſaw her, he had compaſſion on her, and ſaid unto her, Weep not.

14 And he came and touched the bier: and they that bare *him* ſtood ſtill. And he ſaid, Young man, I ſay unto thee, Ariſe.

15 And he that was dead ſat up, and began to ſpeak. And he delivered him to his mother.

16 And there came a fear on all: and they glorified God, ſaying, That a great prophet is riſen up among us; and, That God hath viſited his people.

17 And this rumour of him went forth throughout all Judea, and throughout all the region round about.

18 ¶ And the diſciples of John ſhewed him of all theſe things.

19 And John calling *unto him* two of his diſciples, ſent *them* to Jeſus, ſaying, Art thou he that ſhould come? or look we for another?

20 When the men were come unto him, they ſaid, John Baptiſt hath ſent us unto thee, ſaying, Art thou he that ſhould come? or look we for another?

21 And in the ſame hour he cured many of *their* infirmities and plagues, and of evil ſpirits, and unto many *that were* blind he gave ſight.

22 Then Jesus answering said unto them, Go your way, and tell John what things ye have seen and heard, how that the blind see, the lame walk, the lepers are cleansed, the deaf hear, the dead are raised, to the poor the gospel is preached.

23 And blessed is *he* whosoever shall not be offended in me.

24 ¶ And when the messengers of John were departed, he began to speak unto the people concerning John, What went ye out into the wilderness for to see? A reed shaken with the wind?

25 But what went ye out for to see? A man clothed in soft raiment? Behold, they which are gorgeously apparelled, and live delicately, are in king's courts.

26 But what went ye out for to see? A prophet? Yea, I say unto you, and much more than a prophet.

27 This is *he* of whom it is written, Behold, I send my messenger before thy face, which shall prepare thy way before thee.

28 For I say unto you, Among those that are born of women, there is not a greater prophet than John the Baptist: but he that is least in the kingdom of God is greater than he.

29 And all the people that heard *him*, and the publicans, justified God, being baptized with the baptism of John.

30 But the Pharisees and lawyers rejected the counsel of God against themselves, being not baptized of him.

31 And the Lord said, Whereunto then shall I liken the men of this generation? and to what are they like?

32 They are like unto children sitting in the market place, and calling one to another, and saying, We have piped unto you, and ye have not danced; we have mourned to you, and ye have not wept.

33 For John the Baptist came neither eating bread nor drinking wine; and ye say, He hath a devil.

34 The Son of man is come eating and drinking; and ye say, Behold, a gluttonous man and a winebibber, a friend of publicans and sinners!

35 But wisdom is justified of all her children.

36 ¶ And one of the Pharisees desired him that he would eat with him. And he went into the Pharisee's house, and sat down to meat.

37 And, behold, a woman in the city, which was a sinner, when she knew that *Jesus* sat at meat in the Pharisee's house, brought an alabaster box of ointment,

38 And stood at his feet behind *him* weeping, and began to wash his feet with tears, and did wipe *them* with the hairs of her head, and kissed his feet, and anointed *them* with the ointment.

39 Now when the Pharisee which had bidden him saw *it*, he spake within himself, saying, This man if he were a prophet, would have known who and what manner of woman *this is* that toucheth him: for she is a sinner.

40 And Jesus answering said unto him, Simon, I have somewhat to say unto thee. And he saith, Master, say on.

41 There was a certain creditor which had two debtors: the one owed five hundred pence, and the other fifty.

42 And when they had nothing to pay he frankly forgave them both. Tell me therefore, which of them will love him moſt?

43 Simon anſwered and ſaid, I ſuppoſe that *he* to whom he forgave moſt. And he ſaid unto him, Thou haſt rightly judged.

44 And he turned to the woman, and ſaid unto Simon, Seeſt thou this woman? I entered into thine houſe, thou gaveſt me no water for my feet: but ſhe hath waſhed my feet with tears, and wiped *them* with the hairs of her head.

45 Thou gaveſt me no kiſs: but this woman, ſince the time I came in, hath not ceaſed to kiſs my feet.

46 My head with oil thou didſt not anoint: but this woman hath anointed my feet with ointment.

47 Wherefore I ſay unto thee, Her ſins, which are many, are forgiven; for ſhe loved much: but to whom little is forgiven, *the ſame* loveth little.

48 And he ſaid unto her, Thy ſins are forgiven.

49 And they that ſat at meat with him, began to ſay within themſelves, Who is this that forgiveth ſins alſo?

50 And he ſaid to the woman, Thy faith hath ſaved thee; go in peace.

CHAP. VIII.

Parable of the ſower.

AND it came to paſs afterward, that he went throughout every city and village preaching and ſhewing the glad tidings of the kingdom of God: and the twelve *were* with him,

2 And certain women, which had been healed of evil ſpirits and infirmities, Mary called Magdalene, out of whom went ſeven devils,

3 And Joanna the wife of Chuza Herod's ſteward, and Suſanna, and many others, which miniſtered unto him of their ſubſtance.

4 ¶ And when much people were gathered together, and were come to him out of every city, he ſpake by a parable:

5 A ſower went out to ſow his ſeed: and as he ſowed, ſome fell by the way ſide; and it was trodden down, and the fowls of the air devoured it.

6 And ſome fell upon a rock; and as ſoon as it was ſprung up, it withered away, becauſe it lacked moiſture.

7 And ſome fell among thorns; and the thorns ſprang up with it, and choked it.

8 And other fell on good ground, and ſprang up, and bare fruit an hundredfold. And when he had ſaid theſe things, he cried, He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

9 And his diſciples aſked him, ſaying, What might this parable be?

10 And he ſaid, Unto you it is given to know the myſteries of the kingdom of God: but to others in parables; that ſeeing they might not ſee, and hearing they might not underſtand.

11 Now the parable is this: The ſeed is the word of God.

12 Thoſe by the way ſide are they that hear; then cometh the devil, and taketh away the word out of their hearts, leſt they ſhould believe and be ſaved.

13 They on the rock *are they*, which, when they hear, receive the word with joy; and theſe have no root, which for a

while believe, and in time of temptation fall away.

14 And that which fell among thorns are they, which, when they have heard, go forth, and are choked with cares and riches and pleaſures of *this* life, and bring no fruit to perfection.

15 But that on the good ground are they, which, in an honeſt and good heart, having heard the word, keep *it*, and bring forth fruit with patience.

16 ¶ No man, when he hath lighted a candle, covereth it with a veſſel, or putteth *it* under a bed; but ſetteth *it* on a candleſtick, that they which enter in may ſee the light.

17 For nothing is ſecret that ſhall not be made manifeſt; neither *any thing* hid that ſhall not be known and come abroad.

18 Take heed therefore how ye hear: for whoſoever hath, to him ſhall be given; and whoſoever hath not, from him ſhall be taken even that which he ſeemeth to have.

19 Then came to him *his* mother and his brethren, and could not come at him for the preſs.

20 And it was told him *by certain*, which ſaid, Thy mother and thy brethren ſtand without, deſiring to ſee thee.

21 And he anſwered and ſaid unto them, My mother and my brethren are theſe which hear the word of God, and do it.

22 Now it came to paſs on a certain day, that he went into a ſhip with his diſciples; and he ſaid unto them, Let us go over unto the other ſide of the lake. And they launched forth.

23 But as they ſailed he fell aſleep; and there came down a ſtorm of wind on the lake; and they were filled *with water*, and were in jeopardy.

24 And they came to him, and awoke him, ſaying, Maſter, maſter, we periſh. Then he aroſe, and rebuked the wind and the raging of the water: and they ceaſed, and there was a calm.

25 And he ſaid unto them, Where is your faith? And they being afraid, wondered, ſaying one to another, What manner of man is this! for he commandeth even the winds and water, and they obey him.

26 ¶ And they arrived at the country of the Gadarenes, which is over againſt Galilee.

27 And when he went forth to land, there met him out of the city a certain man which had devils long time, and wear no clothes, neither abode in *any* houſe, but in the tombs.

28 When he ſaw Jeſus, he cried out, and fell down before him, and with a loud voice ſaid, What have I to do with thee, Jeſus, *thou* Son of God moſt high? I beſeech thee torment me not.

29 (For he had commanded the unclean ſpirit to come out of the man. For oftentimes it had caught him: and he was kept bound with chains and in fetters; and he brake the bands, and was driven of the devil into the wilderneſs.)

30 And Jeſus aſked him, ſaying, What is thy name? And he ſaid, Legion: becauſe many devils were entered into him.

31 And they beſought him that he would not command them to go out into the deep.

32 And there was there an herd of many ſwine feeding on

the mountain: and they besought him that he would suffer them to enter into them. And he suffered them.

33 Then went the devils out of the man, and entered into the swine: and the herd ran violently down a steep place into the lake, and were choked.

34 When they that fed *them* saw what was done, they fled, and went and told *it* in the city and in the country.

35 Then they went out to see what was done; and came to Jesus, and found the man out of whom the devils were departed sitting at the feet of Jesus, clothed, and in his right mind: and they were afraid.

36 They also which saw *it*, told them by what means he that was possessed of the devils was healed.

37 Then the whole multitude of the country of the Gadarenes round about besought him to depart from them: for they were taken with great fear. And he went up into the ship, and returned back again.

38 Now the man out of whom the devils were departed besought him that he might be with him; but Jesus sent him away, saying,

39 Return to thine own house, and shew how great things God hath done unto thee. And he went his way, and published throughout the whole city how great things Jesus had done unto him.

40 And it came to pass, that when Jesus was returned, the people *gladly* received him: for they were all waiting for him.

41 And, behold, there came a man named Jairus, and he was a ruler of the synagogue: and he fell down at Jesus' feet, and besought him that he would come into his house:

42 For he had one only daughter, about twelve years of age, and she lay a dying. But as he went, the people thronged him.

43 And a woman having an issue of blood twelve years, which had spent all her living upon physicians, neither could be healed of any,

44 Came behind *him*, and touched the border of his garment; and immediately her issue of blood stanched.

45 And Jesus said, Who touched me? When all denied: Peter, and they that were with him said, Master, the multitude throng thee and press *thee*, and sayest thou, Who touched me?

46 And Jesus said, Somebody hath touched me: for I perceive that virtue is gone out of me.

47 And when the woman saw that she was not hid, she came trembling, and falling down before him, she declared unto him before all the people for what cause she had touched him, and how she was healed immediately.

48 And he said unto her, Daughter, be of good comfort: thy faith hath made thee whole; go in peace.

49 While he yet spake, there cometh one from the ruler of the synagogue's *house*, saying to him, Thy daughter is dead: trouble not the Master.

50 But when Jesus heard *it*, he answered him, saying, Fear not: believe only, and she shall be made whole.

51 And when he came into
the houſe, he ſuffered no man
to go in, ſave Peter and James
and John, and the father and
the mother of the maiden.
52 And all wept, and bewailed
her. But he ſaid, Weep not:
ſhe is not dead, but ſleepeth.
53 And they laughed him to
ſcorn, knowing that ſhe was dead.
54 And he put them all out,
and took her by the hand, and
called, ſaying, Maid, ariſe.
55 And her ſpirit came again,
and ſhe aroſe ſtraightway: and
he commanded to give her meat.
56 And her parents were
aſtoniſhed. But he charged
them that they ſhould tell no
man what was done.

C H A P. IX.

Chriſt ſendeth out his diſciples.

THEN he called his twelve
diſciples together, and gave
them power and authority over
all devils, and to cure diſeaſes.
2 And he ſent them to preach
the kingdom of God, and to
heal the ſick.
3 And he ſaid unto them,
Take nothing for *your* journey,
neither ſtaves, nor ſcrip, neither
bread, neither money; neither
have two coats apiece.
4 And whatſoever houſe ye
enter into, there abide, and
thence depart.
5 And whoſoever will not re-
ceive you when ye go out of
that city, ſhake off the very
duſt from your feet for a teſti-
mony againſt them.
6 And they departed, and
went through the towns, preach-
ing the goſpel, and healing
every where.
7 ¶ Now Herod the tetrarch
heard of all that was done by
him: and he was perplexed, be-
cauſe that is was ſaid of ſome,
that John was riſen from the
dead;
8 And of ſome, that Elias
had appeared; and of others,
that one of the old prophets
was riſen again.
9 And Herod ſaid, John have
I beheaded; but who is this of
whom I hear ſuch things? And
he deſired to ſee him.
10 And the apoſtles, when
they were returned, told him all
that they had done. And he took
them, and went aſide privately
into a deſert place, belonging
to the city called Bethſaida.
11 And the people, when they
knew *it*, followed him: and he
received them, and ſpake unto
them of the kingdom of God,
and healed them that had need
of healing.
12 And when the day began
to wear away, then came the
twelve, and ſaid unto him, Send
the multitude away, that they
may go into the towns and
country round about, and lodge,
and get victuals: for we are
here in a deſert place.
13 But he ſaid unto them,
Give ye them to eat. And they
ſaid, We have no more but five
loaves and two fiſhes: except
we ſhould go and buy meat
for all this people.
14 For they were about five
thouſand men. And he ſaid to
his diſciples, Make them ſit
down by fifties in a company.
15 And they did ſo, and made
them all ſit down.
16 Then he took the five
loaves and the two fiſhes, and
looking up to heaven, he bleſſ-
ed them, and brake, and gave
to the diſciples to ſet before the
multitude.
17 And they did eat, and were
all filled: and there was taken
up

up of fragments that remained
to them twelve baskets.
18 And it came to pass, as
he was alone praying, his disciples were with him: and he asked them, saying, Whom say the people that I am?
19 They answering said, John the Baptist: but some *say*, Elias; and others *say*, that one of the old prophets is risen again.
20 He said unto them, But whom say ye that I am? Peter answering said, The Christ of God.
21 And he straitly charged them, and commanded *them* to tell no man that thing;
22 Saying, The Son of man must suffer many things, and be rejected of the elders and chief priests and scribes, and be slain, and be raised the third day.
23 And he said to *them* all, If any *man* will come after me, let him deny himself, and take up his cross daily, and follow me.
24 For whosoever will save his life shall lose it: but whosoever will lose his life for my sake, the same shall save it.
25 For what is a man advantaged, if he gain the whole world, and lose himself, or be cast away?
26 For whosoever shall be ashamed of me, and of my words, of him shall the Son of man be ashamed, when he shall come in his own glory, and *in his* Father's, and of the holy angels.
27 But I tell you of a truth, there be some standing here, which shall not taste of death till they see the kingdom of God.
28 ¶ And it came to pass about an eight days after these sayings, he took Peter, and John, and James, and went up into a mountain to pray.
29 And as he prayed, the fashion of his countenance was altered, and his raiment *was* white *and* glistering.
30 And, behold, there talked with him two men, which were Moses and Elias:
31 Who appeared in glory, and spake of his decease which he should accomplish at Jerusalem.
32 But Peter, and they that were with him, were heavy with sleep: and when they were awake, they saw his glory, and the two men that stood with him.
33 And it came to pass, as they departed from him, Peter said unto Jesus, Master, it is good for us to be here: and let us make three tabernacles; one for thee, and one for Moses, and one for Elias: not knowing what he said.
34 While he thus spake, there came a cloud and overshadowed them: and they feared as they entered into the cloud.
35 And there came a voice out of the cloud, saying, This is my beloved Son: hear him.
36 And when the voice was past, Jesus was found alone. And they kept *it* close, and told no man in those days any of those things which they had seen.
37 ¶ And it came to pass, that on the next day, when they were come down from the hill, much people met him.
38 And, behold, a man of the company cried out, saying, Master, I beseech thee, look upon my son: for he is mine only child.
39 And lo, a spirit taketh him, and he suddenly crieth out; and it teareth him that he foameth again,

again, and bruiſing him, hardly departeth from him.

40 And I beſought thy diſciples to caſt him out; and they could not.

41 And Jeſus anſwering ſaid, O faithleſs and perverſe generation, how long ſhall I be with you, and ſuffer you? Bring thy ſon hither.

42 And as he was yet a coming, the devil threw him down, and tare *him*. And Jeſus rebuked the unclean ſpirit, and healed the child, and delivered him again to his father.

43 And they were all amazed at the mighty power of God. But while they wondered every one at all things which Jeſus did, he ſaid unto his diſciples,

44 Let theſe ſayings ſink down into your ears: for the Son of man ſhall be delivered into the hands of men.

45 But they underſtood not this ſaying, and it was hid from them, that they perceived it not: and they feared to aſk him of that ſaying.

46 ¶ Then there aroſe a reaſoning among them, which of them ſhould be greateſt.

47 And Jeſus perceiving the thought of their heart, took a child, and ſet him by him,

48 And ſaid unto them, Whoſoever ſhall receive this child in my name receiveth me; and whoſoever ſhall receive me receiveth him that ſent me: for he that is leaſt among you all, the ſame ſhall be great.

49 And John anſwered and ſaid, Maſter, we ſaw one caſting out devils in thy name; and we forbad him, becauſe he followeth not with us.

50 And Jeſus ſaid unto him, Forbid *him* not: for he that is not againſt us is for us.

51 ¶ And it came to paſs, when the time was come that he ſhould be received up, he ſtedfaſtly ſet his face to go to Jeruſalem,

52 And ſent meſſengers before his face: and they went, and entered into a village of the Samaritans to make ready for him.

53 And they did not receive him, becauſe his face was as though he would go to Jeruſalem.

54 And when his diſciples James and John ſaw *this*, they ſaid, Lord, wilt thou that we command fire to come down from heaven, and conſume them, even as Elias did?

55 But he turned, and rebuked them, and ſaid, Ye know not what manner of ſpirit ye are of.

56 For the Son of man is not come to deſtroy men's lives, but to ſave *them*. And they went to another village.

57 And it came to paſs, that as they went in the way, a certain *man* ſaid unto him, Lord, I will follow thee whitherſoever thou goeſt.

58 And Jeſus ſaid unto him, Foxes have holes, and birds of the air *have* neſts; but the Son of man hath not where to lay *his* head.

59 And he ſaid unto another, Follow me. But he ſaid, Lord, ſuffer me firſt to go and bury my father.

60 Jeſus ſaid unto him, Let the dead bury their dead: but go thou and preach the kingdom of God.

61 And another alſo ſaid, Lord, I will follow thee; but let me firſt go bid them farewel

which are at home at my houſe.
62 And Jeſus ſaid unto him,
No man having put his hand to
the plough, and looking back,
is fit for the kingdom of God.

CHAP. X.

Seventy diſciples ſent forth.

AFTER theſe things the
Lord appointed other ſe-
venty alſo, and ſent them two
and two before his face into
every city and place, whither
he himſelf would come.
2 Therefore ſaid he unto
them, The harveſt truly *is*
great, but the labourers *are*
few: pray ye therefore the
Lord of the harveſt, that he
would ſend forth labourers in-
to his harveſt.
3 Go your ways: behold, I
ſend you forth as lambs among
wolves.
4 Carry neither purſe, nor
ſcrip, nor ſhoes: and ſalute no
man by the way.
5 And into whatſoever houſe
ye enter, firſt ſay, Peace *be* to
this houſe.
6 And if the Son of peace be
there, your peace ſhall reſt up-
on it: if not, it ſhall turn to
you again.
7 And in the ſame houſe re-
main, eating and drinking ſuch
things as they give: for the
labourer is worthy of his hire.
Go not from houſe to houſe.
8 And into whatſoever city
ye enter, and they receive you,
eat ſuch things as are ſet before
you:
9 And heal the ſick that are
therein, and ſay unto them,
The kingdom of God is come
nigh unto you.
10 But into whatſoever city
ye enter, and they receive you
not, go your ways out into the
ſtreets of the ſame and ſay,
11 Even the very duſt of your
city, which cleaveth on us, we
do wipe off againſt you: not-
withſtanding, be ye ſure of this,
that the kingdom of God is
come nigh unto you.
12 But I ſay unto you, that
it ſhall be more tolerable in
that day for Sodom, than for
that city.
13 Woe unto thee, Chorazin!
woe unto thee, Bethſaida! for
if the mighty works had been
done in Tyre and Sidon, which
have been done in you, they
had a great while ago repented,
ſitting in ſackcloth and aſhes.
14 But it ſhall be more to-
lerable for Tyre and Sidon at
the judgment, than for you.
15 And thou, Capernaum,
which art exalted to heaven,
ſhalt be thruſt down to hell.
16 He that heareth you hear-
eth me; and he that deſpiſeth
you deſpiſeth me; and he that
deſpiſeth me deſpiſeth him
that ſent me.
17 ¶ And the ſeventy returned
again with joy, ſaying, Lord,
even the devils are ſubject unto
us through thy name.
18 And he ſaid unto them, I
beheld Satan as lightning fall
from heaven.
19 Behold, I give unto you
power to tread on ſerpents and
ſcorpions, and over all the pow-
er of the enemy: and nothing
ſhall by any means hurt you.
20 Notwithſtanding, in this
rejoice not, that the ſpirits are
ſubject unto you; but rather
rejoice, becauſe your names are
written in heaven.
21 ¶ In that hour Jeſus re-
joiced in ſpirit, and ſaid, I
thank thee, O Father, Lord of
heaven and earth, that thou
haſt hid theſe things from the

wiſe and prudent, and haſt re-
vealed them unto babes: even
ſo, Father; for ſo it ſeemed
good in thy ſight.
22 All things are delivered
to me of my Father: and no
man knoweth who the Son is,
but the Father; and who the
Father is, but the Son, and *he* to
whom the Son will reveal *him*.
23 ¶ And he turned him unto
his diſciples, and ſaid privately,
Bleſſed *are* the eyes which ſee
the things that ye ſee:
24 For I tell you, that many
prophets and kings have de-
ſired to ſee thoſe things which
ye ſee, and have not ſeen *them;*
and to hear thoſe things which
ye hear, and have not heard
them.
25 ¶ And, behold, a certain
lawyer ſtood up and tempted
him, ſaying, Maſter, what ſhall
I do to inherit eternal life?
26 He ſaid unto him, What is
written in the law? how readeſt
thou?
27 And he anſwering ſaid,
Thou ſhalt love the Lord thy
God, with all thy heart, and
with all thy ſoul, and with all
thy ſtrength, and with all thy
mind; and thy neighbour as
thyſelf.
28 And he ſaid unto him,
Thou haſt anſwered right:
this do, and thou ſhalt live.
29 But he, willing to juſtify
himſelf, ſaid unto Jeſus, And
who is my neighbour?
30 And Jeſus anſwering ſaid,
A certain *man* went down from
Jeruſalem to Jericho, and fell
among thieves, which ſtripped
him of his raiment, and wound-
ed *him*, and departed, leaving
him half dead.
31 And by chance there came
down a certain prieſt that way;
and when he ſaw him, he paſſed
by on the other ſide.
32 And likewiſe a Levite,
when he was at the place, came
and looked *on him*, and paſſed
by on the other ſide.
33 But a certain Samaritan, as
he journeyed, came where he
was: and when he ſaw him, he
had compaſſion *on him*,
34 And went to *him*, and
bound up his wounds, pouring
in oil and wine, and ſet him on
his own beaſt, and brought him
to an inn, and took care of him.
35 And on the morrow, when
he departed, he took out two
pence, and gave *them* to the
hoſt; and ſaid unto him, Take
care of him: and whatſoever
thou ſpendeſt more, when I
come again, I will repay thee.
36 Which now of theſe three,
thinkeſt thou, was neighbour
unto him that fell among the
thieves?
37 And he ſaid, He that
ſhewed mercy on him. Then
ſaid Jeſus unto him, Go, and
do thou likewiſe.
38 ¶ Now it came to paſs,
as they went, that he entered in-
to a certain village: and a cer-
tain woman named Martha re-
ceived him into her houſe.
39 And ſhe had a ſiſter called
Mary, which alſo ſat at Jeſus'
feet, and heard his word.
40 But Martha was cumbered
about much ſerving, and came
to him and ſaid, Lord, doſt thou
not care that my ſiſter hath left
me to ſerve alone? bid her
therefore that ſhe help me.
41 And Jeſus anſwered and
ſaid unto her, Martha, Martha,
thou art careful and troubled
about many things:
42 But one thing is needful:
and Mary hath choſen that
good

good part, which shall not be taken away from her.

CHAP. XI.

Christ teacheth to pray.

AND it came to pass, that as he was praying in a certain place, when he ceased, one of his disciples said unto him, Lord, teach us to pray, as John also taught his disciples.

2 And he said unto them, When ye pray, say, Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done, as in heaven, so in earth.

3 Give us day by day our daily bread.

4 And forgive us our sins: for we also forgive every one that is indebted to us. And lead us not into temptation; but deliver us from evil.

5 And he said unto them, Which of you shall have a friend, and shall go unto him at midnight, and say unto him, Friend, lend me three loaves;

6 For a friend of mine in his journey is come to me, and I have nothing to set before him?

7 And he from within shall answer and say, Trouble me not: the door is now shut, and my children are with me in bed; I cannot rise and give thee.

8 I say unto you, Though he will not rise and give him because he is his friend, yet because of his importunity he will rise and give him as many as he needeth.

9 And I say unto you, Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and ye shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you.

10 For every one that asketh receiveth; and he that seeketh findeth; and to him that knocketh it shall be opened.

11 If a son shall ask bread of any of you that is a father, will he give him a stone? or if *he ask* a fish, will he for a fish give him a serpent?

12 Or if he shall ask an egg, will he offer him a scorpion?

13 If ye then, being evil, know how to give good gifts unto your children; how much more shall *your* heavenly Father give the Holy Spirit to them that ask him?

14 ¶ And he was casting out a devil, and it was dumb. And it came to pass, when the devil was gone out, the dumb spake; and the people wondered.

15 But some of them said, He casteth out devils through Beelzebub the chief of the devils.

16 And others tempting *him*, sought of him a sign from heaven.

17 But he knowing their thoughts, said unto them, Every kingdom divided against itself is brought to desolation, and a house *divided* against a house falleth.

18 If Satan also be divided against himself, how shall his kingdom stand? because ye say, that I cast out devils through Beelzebub.

19 And if I by Beelzebub cast out devils, by whom do your sons cast *them* out? therefore shall they be your judges.

20 But if I with the finger of God cast out devils, no doubt the kingdom of God is come upon you.

21 When a strong man armed keepeth his palace, his goods are in peace:

22 But when a stronger than he shall come upon him, and overcome him, he taketh from him

him all his armour wherein he
trufted, and divideth his fpoils.

23 He that is not with me is
againft me: and he that gather-
eth not with me fcattereth.

24 When the unclean fpirit is
gone out of a man, he walk-
eth through dry places, feeking
reft: and finding none, he faith,
I will return unto my houfe
whence I came out.

25 And when he cometh, he
findeth *it* fwept and garnifhed.

26 Then goeth he, and tak-
eth *to him* feven other fpirits
more wicked than himfelf; and
they enter in and dwell there:
and the laft *ftate* of that man is
worfe than the firft.

27 And it came to pafs, as he
fpake thefe things, a certain
woman of the company lifted
up her voice, and faid unto
him, Bleffed *is* the womb that
bare thee, and the paps which
thou haft fucked.

28 But he faid, Yea, rather
bleffed *are* they that hear the
word of God, and keep it.

29 ¶ And when the people
were gathered thick together,
he began to fay, This is an evil
generation: they feek a fign;
and there fhall no fign be given
it but the fign of Jonas the pro-
phet.

30 For as Jonas was a fign
unto the Ninevites, fo fhall alfo
the Son of man be to this ge-
neration.

31 The queen of the fouth
fhall rife up in the judgement
with the men of this genera-
tion, and condemn them: for
fhe came from the utmoft parts
of the earth to hear the wifdom
of Solomon; and, behold, a
greater than Solomon *is* here.

32 The men of Nineve fhall
rife up in the judgement with
this generation, and fhall con-
demn it: for they repented at
the preaching of Jonas; and, be-
hold, a greater than Jonas *is* here.

33 No man when he hath
lighted a candle, putteth *it* in a
fecret place, neither under a
bufhel, but on a candleftick,
that they which come in may
fee the light.

34 The light of the body is
the eye: therefore when thine
eye is fingle, thy whole body al-
fo is full of light; but when
thine eye is evil, thy body alfo
is full of darknefs.

35 Take heed therefore that
the light which is in thee be
not darknefs.

36 If thy whole body there-
fore *be* full of light, having no
part dark, the whole fhall be
full of light, as when the bright
fhining of a candle doth give
thee light.

37 ¶ And as he fpake, a cer-
tain Pharifee befought him to
dine with him. And he went
in, and fat down to meat.

38 And when the Pharifee
faw *it*, he marvelled that he had
not firft wafhed before dinner.

39 And the Lord faid unto
him, Now do ye Pharifees make
clean the outfide of the cup and
the platter; but your inward
parts is full of ravening and
wickednefs.

40 *Ye* fools, did not he that
made that which is without
make that which is within
alfo?

41 But rather give alms of
fuch things as ye have: and,
behold, all things are clean un-
to you.

42 But woe unto you, Phari-
fees! for ye tithe mint and rue
and all manner of herbs, and
pafs over judgement and the

love

love of God: theſe ought ye to
have done, and not to leave the
other undone.
43 Woe unto you, Phariſees!
for ye love the uppermoſt ſeats
in the ſynagogues, and greet-
ings in the markets.
44 Woe unto you, ſcribes and
Phariſees, hypocrites! for ye
are as graves which appear not,
and the men that walk over
them are not aware *of them*.
45 Then anſwered one of the
lawyers, and ſaid unto him,
Maſter, thus ſaying, thou re-
proacheſt us alſo.
46 And he ſaid, Woe unto
you alſo, *ye* lawyers! for ye
lade men with burdens grievous
to be borne, and ye yourſelves
touch not the burdens with one
of your fingers.
47 Woe unto you! for ye
build the ſepulchres of the pro-
phets, and your fathers killed
them.
48 Truly ye bear witneſs
that ye allow the deeds of your
fathers; for they indeed killed
them, and ye build their ſepul-
chres.
49 Therefore alſo ſaid the
wiſdom of God, I will ſend
them prophets and apoſtles, and
ſome of them they ſhall ſlay and
perſecute:
50 That the blood of all the
prophets which was ſhed from
the foundation of the world
may be required of this gene-
ration;
51 From the blood of Abel
unto the blood of Zacharias,
which periſhed between the
altar and the temple: verily I
ſay unto you, It ſhall be requir-
ed of this generation.
52 Woe unto you, lawyers!
for ye have taken away the key
of knowledge: ye enter not
in yourſelves, and them that
were entering in ye hindered.
53 And as he ſaid theſe
things unto them, the ſcribes
and the Phariſees began to
urge *him* vehemently, and to
provoke him to ſpeak of many
things:
54 Laying wait for him, and
ſeeking to catch ſomething out
of his mouth, that they might
accuſe him.

CHAP. XII.

Of avoiding hypocriſy.

IN the mean time, when there
were gathered together an
innumerable multitude of peo-
ple, inſomuch that they trode
one upon another, he began to
ſay unto his diſciples firſt of all,
Beware ye of the leaven of the
Phariſees, which is hypocriſy.
2 For there is nothing co-
vered that ſhall not be revealed;
neither hid, that ſhall not be
known.
3 Therefore whatſoever ye
have ſpoken in darkneſs, ſhall
be heard in the light; and that
which ye have ſpoken in the ear
in cloſets, ſhall be proclaimed
upon the houſetops.
4 And I ſay unto you my
friends, Be not afraid of them
that kill the body, and after
that have no more that they
can do.
5 But I will forewarn you
whom ye ſhall fear: Fear him,
which after he hath killed, hath
power to caſt into hell; yea, I
ſay unto you, Fear him.
6 Are not five ſparrows ſold for
two farthings, and not one of
them is forgotten before God?
7 But even the very hairs of
your head are all numbered.
Fear not therefore: ye are of
more value than many ſpar-
rows.

8 Also I say unto you, Whosoever shall confess me before men, him shall the Son of man also confess before the angels of God:

9 But he that denieth me before men, shall be denied before the angels of God.

10 And whosoever shall speak a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but unto him that blasphemeth against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven.

11 And when they bring you unto the synagogues, and *unto* magistrates, and powers, take ye no thought how or what thing ye shall answer, or what ye shall say:

12 For the Holy Ghost shall teach you in the same hour what ye ought to say.

13 ¶ And one of the company said unto him, Master, speak to my brother, that he divide the inheritance with me.

14 And he said unto him, Man, who made me a judge, or a divider over you?

15 And he said unto them, Take heed, and beware of covetousness: for a man's life consisteth not in the abundance of the things which he possesseth.

16 And he spake a parable unto them, saying, The ground of a certain rich man brought forth plentifully:

17 And he thought within himself, saying, What shall I do, because I have no room where to bestow my fruits?

18 And he said, This will I do: I will pull down my barns, and build greater; and there will I bestow all my fruits and my goods.

19 And I will say to my soul, Soul, thou hast much goods laid up for many years: take thine ease, eat, drink, *and* be merry.

20 But God said unto him, *Thou* fool, this night thy soul shall be required of thee: then whose shall those things be which thou hast provided?

21 So *is* he that layeth up treasure for himself, and is not rich toward God.

22 ¶ And he said unto his disciples, Therefore I say unto you, Take no thought for your life, what ye shall eat: neither for the body, what ye shall put on.

23 The life is more than meat, and the body *is more* than raiment.

24 Consider the ravens: for they neither sow, nor reap; which neither have storehouse, nor barn; and God feedeth them: How much more are ye better than the fowls?

25 And which of you with taking thought can add to his stature one cubit?

26 If ye then be not able to do that thing which is least, why take ye thought for the rest?

27 Consider the lilies how they grow: they toil not, they spin not; and yet I say unto you, That Solomon in all his glory was not arrayed like one of these.

28 If then God so clothe the grass which is to day in the field, and to morrow is cast into the oven; how much more *will he clothe* you, O ye of little faith?

29 And seek not ye what ye shall eat, or what ye shall drink, neither be ye of doubtful mind.

30 For all these things do the nations of the world seek after: and your Father knoweth

eth that ye have need of theſe
things.
31 ¶ But rather ſeek ye the
kingdom of God; and all theſe
things ſhall be added unto you.
32 Fear not, little flock; for
it is your Father's good plea-
ſure to give you the kingdom.
33 Sell that ye have, and
give alms: provide yourſelves
bags which wax not old, a
treaſure in the heavens that
faileth not, where no thief ap-
proacheth, neither moth cor-
rupteth.
34 For where your treaſure is,
there will your heart be alſo.
35 Let your loins be girded
about, and *your* lights burning;
36 And ye yourſelves like
unto men that wait for their
lord, when he will return from
the wedding; that when he
cometh and knocketh, they may
open unto him immediately.
37 Bleſſed *are* thoſe ſervants
whom the lord when he com-
eth ſhall find watching: verily
I ſay unto you, That he ſhall
gird himſelf, and make them
to ſit down to meat, and will
come forth and ſerve them.
38 And if he ſhall come in
the ſecond watch, or come in
the third watch, and find *them*
ſo; bleſſed are thoſe ſervants.
39 And this know, that if
the goodman of the houſe had
known what hour the thief
would come, he would have
watched, and not have ſuffer-
ed his houſe to be broken
through.
40 Be ye therefore ready alſo:
for the Son of man cometh at
an hour when ye think not.
41 ¶ Then Peter ſaid unto
him, Lord, ſpeakeſt thou this
parable unto us, or even to all?
42 And the Lord ſaid, Who
then is that faithful and wiſe
ſteward, whom *his* lord ſhall
make ruler over his houſhold,
to give *them their* portion of
meat in due ſeaſon?
43 Bleſſed *is* that ſervant,
whom his lord when he com-
eth ſhall find ſo doing.
44 Of a truth I ſay unto you,
That he will make him ruler
over all that he hath.
45 But and if that ſervant
ſay in his heart, My lord de-
layeth his coming; and ſhall
begin to beat the menſervants,
and maidens, and to eat and
drink, and to be drunken;
46 The lord of that ſervant
will come in a day when he
looketh not for *him*, and at an
hour when he is not aware, and
will cut him in ſunder, and will
appoint him his portion with
the unbelievers.
47 And that ſervant which
knew his lord's will and pre-
pared not *himſelf*, neither did
according to his will, ſhall be
beaten with many *ſtripes*.
48 But he that knew not,
and did commit things worthy
of ſtripes, ſhall be beaten with
few *ſtripes*. For unto whomſo-
ever much is given, of him ſhall
be much required; and to
whom men have committed
much, of him they will aſk the
more.
49 ¶ I am come to ſend fire on
the earth; and what will I if it
be already kindled?
50 But I have a baptiſm to
be baptized with, and how am
I ſtraitened till it be accom-
pliſhed!
51 Suppoſe ye that I am
come to give peace on earth?
I tell you, Nay; but rather
diviſion:
52 For from henceforth there
ſhall

ſhall be five in one houſe divided, three againſt two, and two againſt three.

53 The father ſhall be divided againſt the ſon, and the ſon againſt the father; the mother againſt the daughter, and the daughter againſt the mother; the mother in law againſt her daughter in law, and the daughter in law againſt her mother in law.

54 And he ſaid alſo to the people, When ye ſee a cloud riſe out of the weſt, ſtraightway ye ſay, There cometh a ſhower; and ſo it is.

55 And when *ye ſee* the ſouth wind blow, ye ſay, There will be heat; and it cometh to paſs.

56 *Ye* hypocrites, ye can diſcern the face of the ſky, and of the earth; but how is it, that ye do not diſcern this time?

57 Yea, and why even of yourſelves judge ye not what is right?

58 When thou goeſt with thine adverſary to the magiſtrate, *as thou art* in the way, give diligence that thou mayeſt be delivered from him: leſt he hale thee to the judge, and the judge deliver thee to the officer, and the officer caſt thee into priſon.

59 I tell thee, thou ſhalt not depart thence, till thou haſt paid the very laſt mite.

C H A P. XIII.

Jeſus preacheth repentance.

THERE were preſent at that ſeaſon ſome that told him of the Galileans, whoſe blood Pilate had mingled with their ſacrifices.

2 And Jeſus anſwering ſaid unto them, Suppoſe ye that theſe Galileans were ſinners above all the Galileans, becauſe they ſuffered ſuch things?

3 I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye ſhall all likewiſe periſh.

4 Or thoſe eighteen upon whom the tower in Siloam fell, and ſlew them, think ye that they were ſinners above all men that dwelt in Jeruſalem?

5 I tell you, Nay: but, except ye repent, ye ſhall all likewiſe periſh.

6 ¶ He ſpake alſo this parable; A certain *man* had a fig tree planted in his vineyard; and he came and ſought fruit thereon, and found none.

7 Then ſaid he unto the dreſſer of his vineyard, Behold, theſe three years I come ſeeking fruit on this fig tree, and find none: cut it down; why cumbereth it the ground?

8 And he anſwering ſaid unto him, Lord, let it alone this year alſo, till I ſhall dig about it, and dung *it:*

9 And if it bear fruit, *well:* and if not, *then* after that thou ſhalt cut it down.

10 ¶ And he was teaching in one of the ſynagogues on the ſabbath.

11 And, behold, there was a woman which had a ſpirit of infirmity eighteen years, and was bowed together, and could in no wiſe lift up *herſelf.*

12 And when Jeſus ſaw her, he called *her to him,* and ſaid unto her, Woman, thou art looſed from thine infirmity.

13 And he laid *his* hands on her; and immediately ſhe was made ſtraight, and glorified God.

14 And the ruler of the ſynagogue anſwered with indignation, becauſe that Jeſus had healed on the ſabbath day, and ſaid unto the people, There are

ſix days in which men ought to work: in them therefore come and be healed, and not on the ſabbath day.

15 The Lord then anſwered him, and ſaid, *Thou* hypocrite, doth not each one of you on the ſabbath looſe his ox or *his* aſs from the ſtall, and lead *him* away to watering?

16 And ought not this woman, being a daughter of Abraham, whom Satan hath bound, lo, theſe eighteen years, be looſed from this bond on the ſabbath day?

17 And when he had ſaid theſe things, all his adverſaries were aſhamed: and all the people rejoiced for all the glorious things that were done by him.

18 Then ſaid he, Unto what is the kingdom of God like? and whereunto ſhall I reſemble it?

19 It is like a grain of muſtard ſeed, which a man took and caſt into his garden; and it grew, and waxed a great tree, and the fowls of the air lodged in the branches of it.

20 And again he ſaid, Whereunto ſhall I liken the kingdom of God?

21 It is like leaven, which a woman took and hid in three meaſures of meal, till the whole was leavened.

22 And he went through the cities and villages teaching and journeying toward Jeruſalem.

23 ¶ Then ſaid one unto him, Lord, are there few that be ſaved? And he ſaid unto them,

24 Strive to enter in at the ſtrait gate: for many, I ſay unto you, will ſeek to enter in, and ſhall not be able.

25 When once the maſter of the houſe is riſen up, and hath ſhut to the door, and ye begin to ſtand without, and to knock at the door, ſaying, Lord, Lord, open unto us, and he ſhall anſwer and ſay unto you, I know you not whence ye are:

26 Then ſhall ye begin to ſay, We have eaten and drunk in thy preſence, and thou haſt taught in our ſtreets.

27 But he ſhall ſay, I tell you, I know you not whence ye are; depart from me all *ye* workers of iniquity.

28 There ſhall be weeping and gnaſhing of teeth, when ye ſhall ſee Abraham and Iſaac and Jacob and all the prophets in the kingdom of God, and you *yourſelves* thruſt out.

29 And they ſhall come from the eaſt, and *from* the weſt, and from the north, and *from* the ſouth, and ſhall ſit down in the kingdom of God.

30 And, behold, there are laſt which ſhall be firſt, and there are firſt which ſhall be laſt.

31 The ſame day there came certain of the Phariſees, ſaying unto him, Get thee out and depart hence; for Herod will kill thee.

32 And he ſaid unto them, Go ye and tell that fox, Behold, I caſt out devils, and I do cures to day and to morrow, and the third *day* I ſhall be perfected.

33 Nevertheleſs, I muſt walk to day and to morrow, and the *day* following: for it cannot be that a prophet periſh out of Jeruſalem.

34 O Jeruſalem, Jeruſalem, which killeſt the prophets, and ſtoneſt them that are ſent unto thee; how often would I have gathered thy children together, as a hen *doth gather* her brood under *her* wings, and ye would not!

35 Behold, your houſe is left
unto you deſolate. And verily
I ſay unto you, Ye ſhall not ſee
me until *the time* come when
ye ſhall ſay, Bleſſed *is* he that
cometh in the name of the Lord.

CHAP. XIV.

Jeſus teacheth humility.

AND it came to paſs, as he
went into the houſe of one
of the chief Phariſees to eat
bread on the ſabbath day, that
they watched him.
2 And, behold, there was a
certain man before him which
had the dropſy.
3 And Jeſus anſwering ſpake
unto the lawyers and Phariſees,
ſaying, Is it lawful to heal on
the ſabbath day?
4 And they held their peace.
And he took *him*, and healed
him, and let him go;
5 And anſwered them, ſay-
ing, Which of you ſhall have an
aſs or an ox fallen into a pit,
and will not ſtraightway pull
him out on the ſabbath day?
6 And they could not anſwer
him again to theſe things.
7 ¶ And he put forth a
parable to thoſe which were
bidden, when he marked how
they choſe out the chief rooms;
ſaying unto them,
8 When thou art bidden of
any *man* to a wedding, ſit not
down in the higheſt room; leſt
a more honourable man than
thou be bidden of him;
9 And he that bade thee and
him come and ſay to thee,
Give this man place; and thou
begin with ſhame to take the
loweſt room.
10 But when thou art bidden,
go and ſit down in the loweſt
room; that when he that bade
thee cometh, he may ſay unto
thee, Friend, go up higher:
then ſhalt thou have worſhip
in the preſence of them that ſit
at meat with thee.
11 For whoſoever exalteth
himſelf ſhall be abaſed; and
he that humbleth himſelf ſhall
be exalted.
12 ¶ Then ſaid he alſo to
him that bade him, When thou
makeſt a dinner or a ſupper,
call not thy friends, nor thy
brethren, neither thy kinſmen,
nor *thy* rich neighbours; leſt
they alſo bid thee again, and a
recompence be made thee.
13 But when thou makeſt a
feaſt, call the poor, the maimed,
the lame, the blind:
14 And thou ſhalt be bleſſed;
for they cannot recompenſe
thee: for thou ſhalt be recom-
penſed at the reſurrection of
the juſt.
15 And when one of them
that ſat at meat with him
heard theſe things, he ſaid unto
him, Bleſſed *is* he that ſhall
eat bread in the kingdom of
God.
16 ¶ Then ſaid he unto him,
A certain man made a great
ſupper, and bade many:
17 And ſent his ſervant at
ſupper time to ſay to them that
were bidden, Come; for all
things are now ready.
18 And they all with one
conſent began to make excuſe.
The firſt ſaid unto him, I have
bought a piece of ground, and
I muſt needs go and ſee it: I
pray thee have me excuſed.
19 And another ſaid, I have
bought five yoke of oxen, and I
go to prove them: I pray thee
have me excuſed.
20 And another ſaid, I have
married a wife, and therefore I
cannot come.
21 So that ſervant came and

ſhewed

ſhewed his lord theſe things. Then the maſter of the houſe being angry ſaid to his ſervant, Go out quickly into the ſtreets and lanes of the city, and bring in hither the poor, and the maimed, and the halt, and the blind.

22 And the ſervant ſaid, Lord, it is done as thou haſt commanded, and yet there is room.

23 And the lord ſaid unto the ſervant, Go out into the highways and hedges, and compel *them* to come in, that my houſe may be filled.

24 For I ſay unto you, That none of thoſe men which were bidden ſhall taſte of my ſupper.

25 ¶ And there went great multitudes with him: and he turned, and ſaid unto them,

26 If any *man* come to me, and hate not his father, and mother, and wife, and children, and brethren, and ſiſters, yea, and his own life alſo, he cannot be my diſciple.

27 And whoſoever doth not bear his croſs, and come after me, cannot be my diſciple.

28 For which of you intending to build a tower, ſitteth not down firſt, and counteth the coſt, whether he have *ſufficient* to finiſh *it?*

29 Leſt haply after he hath laid the foundation, and is not able to finiſh *it*, all that behold *it* begin to mock him,

30 Saying, This man began to build, and was not able to finiſh.

31 Or what king going to make war againſt another king, ſitteth not down firſt, and conſulteth whether he be able with ten thouſand to meet him that cometh againſt him with twenty thouſand?

32 Or elſe, while the other is yet a great way off, he ſendeth an ambaſſage, and deſireth conditions of peace.

33 So likewiſe, whoſoever he be of you that forſaketh not all that he hath, he cannot be my diſciple.

34 Salt *is* good: but if the ſalt have loſt his ſavour, wherewith ſhall it be ſeaſoned?

35 It is neither fit for the land, nor yet for the dunghil; *but* men caſt it out. He that hath ears to hear, let him hear.

CHAP. XV.

Parable of the loſt ſheep.

THEN drew near unto him all the publicans and ſinners for to hear him.

2 And the Phariſees and ſcribes murmured, ſaying, This man receiveth ſinners, and eateth with them.

3 And he ſpake this parable unto them, ſaying,

4 What man of you having an hundred ſheep, if he loſe one of them, doth not leave the ninety and nine in the wilderneſs, and go after that which is loſt until he find it?

5 And when he hath found *it*, he layeth *it* on his ſhoulders, rejoicing.

6 And when he cometh home, he calleth together *his* friends and neighbours, ſaying unto them, Rejoice with me: for I have found my ſheep which was loſt.

7 I ſay unto you, that likewiſe joy ſhall be in heaven over one ſinner that repenteth, more than over ninety and nine juſt perſons which need no repentance.

8 ¶ Either what woman having ten pieces of ſilver, if ſhe loſe one piece, doth not light a

candle,

candle, and ſweep the houſe, and ſeek diligently till ſhe find *it?*

9 And when ſhe hath found *it*, ſhe calleth *her* friends and *her* neighbours together, ſaying, Rejoice with me; for I have found the piece which I had loſt.

10 Likewiſe I ſay unto you, There is joy in the preſence of the angels of God over one ſinner that repenteth.

11 ¶ And he ſaid, A certain man had two ſons:

12 And the younger of them ſaid to *his* father, Father, give me the portion of goods that falleth *to me.* And he divided unto them *his* living.

13 And not many days after the younger ſon gathered all together, and took his journey into a far country, and there waſted his ſubſtance with riotous living.

14 And when he had ſpent all, there aroſe a mighty famine in that land; and he began to be in want.

15 And he went and joined himſelf to a citizen of that country; and he ſent him into his fields to feed ſwine.

16 And he would fain have filled his belly with the huſks that the ſwine did eat: and no man gave unto him.

17 And when he came to himſelf, he ſaid, How many hired ſervants of my father's have bread enough and to ſpare, and I periſh with hunger!

18 I will ariſe, and go to my father, and will ſay unto him, Father, I have ſinned againſt heaven and before thee,

19 And am no more worthy to be called thy ſon: make me as one of thy hired ſervants.

20 And he aroſe, and came to his father. But when he was yet a great way off, his father ſaw him, and had compaſſion, and ran, and fell on his neck, and kiſſed him.

21 And the ſon ſaid unto him, Father, I have ſinned againſt heaven and in thy ſight, and am no more worthy to be called thy ſon.

22 But the father ſaid to his ſervants, Bring forth the beſt robe, and put *it* on him; and put a ring on his hand, and ſhoes on *his* feet:

23 And bring hither the fatted calf, and kill *it:* and let us eat, and be merry:

24 For this my ſon was dead, and is alive again; he was loſt, and is found. And they began to be merry.

25 Now his elder ſon was in the field: and as he came and drew nigh to the houſe, he heard muſick and dancing.

26 And he called one of the ſervants, and aſked what theſe things meant?

27 And he ſaid unto him, Thy brother is come: and thy father hath killed the fatted calf, becauſe he hath received him ſafe and found.

28 And he was angry, and would not go in: therefore came his father out, and intreated him.

29 And he anſwering ſaid to *his* father, Lo, theſe many years do I ſerve thee, neither tranſgreſſed I at any time thy commandment; and yet thou never gaveſt me a kid, that I might make merry with my friends:

30 But as ſoon as this thy ſon was come, which hath devoured thy living with harlots, thou

thou haſt killed for him the fatted calf.

31 And he ſaid unto him, Son, thou art ever with me, and all that I have is thine.

32 It was meet that we ſhould make merry and be glad: for this thy brother was dead, and is alive again; and was loſt, and is found.

CHAP. XVI.

Of the unjuſt ſteward.

AND he ſaid alſo unto his diſciples, There was a certain rich man which had a ſteward; and the ſame was accuſed unto him that he had waſted his goods.

2 And he called him, and ſaid unto him, How is it that I hear this of thee? give an account of thy ſtewardſhip: for thou mayeſt be no longer ſteward.

3 Then the ſteward ſaid within himſelf, What ſhall I do? for my lord taketh away from me the ſtewardſhip; I cannot dig, to beg I am aſhamed.

4 I am reſolved what to do, that, when I am put out of the ſtewardſhip, they may receive me into their houſes.

5 So he called every one of his lord's debtors *unto him*, and ſaid unto the firſt, How much oweſt thou unto my lord?

6 And he ſaid, An hundred meaſures of oil. And he ſaid unto him, Take thy bill, and ſit down quickly, and write fifty.

7 Then ſaid he to another, And how much oweſt thou? And he ſaid, An hundred meaſures of wheat. And he ſaid unto him, Take thy bill, and write fourſcore.

8 And the lord commended the unjuſt ſteward, becauſe he had done wiſely: for the children of this world are in their generation wiſer than the children of light.

9 And I ſay unto you, Make to yourſelves friends of the mammon of unrighteouſneſs, that when ye fail, they may receive you into everlaſting habitations.

10 He that is faithful in that which is leaſt is faithful alſo in much: and he that is unjuſt in the leaſt is unjuſt alſo in much.

11 If therefore ye have not been faithful in the unrighteous mammon, who will commit to your truſt the true *riches?*

12 And if ye have not been faithful in that which is another man's, who ſhall give you that which is your own?

13 No ſervant can ſerve two maſters: for either he will hate the one, and love the other; or elſe he will hold to the one, and deſpiſe the other. Ye cannot ſerve God and mammon.

14 ¶ And the Phariſees alſo, who were covetous, heard all theſe things, and they derided him.

15 And he ſaid unto them, Ye are they which juſtify yourſelves before men; but God knoweth your hearts: for that which is highly eſteemed among men is abomination in the ſight of God.

16 The law and the prophets *were* until John: ſince that time the kingdom of God is preached, and every man preſſeth into it.

17 And it is eaſier for heaven and earth to paſs, than one tittle of the law to fail.

18 Who-

18 Whoſoever putteth away
his wife and marrieth another,
committeth adultery: and who-
ſoever marrieth her that is put
away from *her* huſband, com-
mitteth adultery.
19 ¶ There was a certain
rich man, which was clothed
in purple and fine linen, and
fared ſumptuouſly every day:
20 And there was a certain
beggar named Lazarus, which
was laid at his gate full of ſores,
21 And deſiring to be fed
with the crumbs which fell
from the rich man's table:
moreover the dogs came and
licked his ſores.
22 And it came to paſs, that
the beggar died, and was car-
ried by the angels into Abra-
ham's boſom. The rich man
alſo died, and was buried;
23 And in hell he lifted up
his eyes, being in torments,
and ſeeth Abraham afar off,
and Lazarus in his boſom.
24 And he cried, and ſaid, Fa-
ther Abraham, have mercy on
me, and ſend Lazarus that he
may dip the tip of his finger in
water, and cool my tongue: for
I am tormented in this flame.
25 But Abraham ſaid, Son,
remember that thou in thy life-
time receivedſt thy good things,
and likewiſe Lazarus evil things:
but now he is comforted, and
thou art tormented.
26 And beſide all this, be-
tween us and you there is a
great gulf fixed: ſo that they
which would paſs from hence
to you cannot: neither can
they paſs to us that *would come*
from thence.
27 Then he ſaid, I pray thee
therefore, father, that thou
wouldeſt ſend him to my fa-
ther's houſe:
28 For I have five brethren;
that he may teſtify unto them,
leſt they alſo come into this
place of torment.
29 Abraham ſaith unto him,
They have Moſes and the pro-
phets: let them hear them.
30 And he ſaid, Nay, father
Abraham: but if one went un-
to them from the dead, they
will repent.
31 And he ſaid unto him,
If they hear not Moſes and the
prophets, neither will they be
perſuaded though one roſe
from the dead.

CHAP. XVII.

To avoid giving offence.

THEN ſaid he unto the diſci-
ples, It is impoſſible but that
offences will come: but woe *unto*
him through whom they come!
2 It were better for him that
a milſtone were hanged about
his neck, and he caſt into the
ſea, than that he ſhould offend
one of theſe little ones.
3 ¶ Take heed to yourſelves:
If thy brother treſpaſs againſt
thee, rebuke him; and if he
repent, forgive him.
4 And if he treſpaſs againſt
thee ſeven times in a day, and
ſeven times in a day turn again
to thee, ſaying, I repent; thou
ſhalt forgive him.
5 And the apoſtles ſaid unto
the Lord, Increaſe our faith.
6 And the Lord ſaid, If ye
had faith as a grain of muſtard
ſeed, ye might ſay unto this
ſycamine tree, Be thou pluck-
ed up by the root, and be thou
planted in the ſea; and it
ſhould obey you.
7 But which of you having
a ſervant plowing or feeding
cattle, will ſay unto him by and
by, when he is come from the
field, Go, and ſit down to meat?

8 And will not rather ſay un-
to him, Make ready wherewith
I may ſup, and gird thyſelf,
and ſerve me, till I have eaten
and drunken; and afterward
thou ſhalt eat and drink?

9 Doth he thank that ſervant
becauſe he did the things that
were commanded him? I trow
not.

10 So likewiſe ye, when ye
ſhall have done all thoſe things
which are commanded you, ſay,
We are unprofitable ſervants:
we have done that which was
our duty to do.

11 ¶ And it came to paſs, as
he went to Jeruſalem, that he
paſſed through the midſt of
Samaria and Galilee.

12 And as he entered into a
certain village, there met him
ten men that were lepers,
which ſtood afar off:

13 And they lifted up *their*
voices, and ſaid, Jeſus, Maſter,
have mercy on us.

14 And when he ſaw *them*,
he ſaid unto them, Go, ſhew
yourſelves unto the prieſts.
And it came to paſs, that as
they went, they were cleanſed.

15 And one of them when he
ſaw that he was healed, turned
back, and with a loud voice
glorified God,

16 And fell down on *his* face
at his feet, giving him thanks:
And he was a Samaritan.

17 And Jeſus anſwering ſaid,
Were there not ten cleanſed?
but where *are* the nine?

18 There are not found that
returned to give glory to God,
ſave this ſtranger.

19 And he ſaid unto him,
Ariſe, go thy way: thy faith
hath made thee whole.

20 ¶ And when he was de-
manded of the Phariſees when
the kingdom of God ſhould
come, he anſwered them and
ſaid, The kingdom of God
cometh not with obſervation:

21 Neither ſhall they ſay, Lo,
here! or, lo, there! for, behold,
the kingdom of God is within
you.

22 And he ſaid unto the diſ-
ciples, The days will come
when ye ſhall deſire to ſee one
of the days of the Son of man,
and ye ſhall not ſee *it*.

23 And they ſhall ſay to you,
See here; or, ſee there: go not
after *them*, nor follow *them*.

24 For as the lightning that
lighteneth out of the one *part*
under heaven, ſhineth unto the
other *part* under heaven; ſo
ſhall alſo the Son of man be in
his day.

25 But firſt muſt he ſuffer
many things, and be rejected of
this generation.

26 And as it was in the days
of Noe, ſo ſhall it be alſo in the
days of the Son of man.

27 They did eat, they drank,
they married wives, they were
given in marriage, until the
day that Noe entered into the
ark; and the flood came, and
deſtroyed them all.

28 Likewiſe alſo as it was in
the days of Lot: they did eat,
they drank, they bought, they
ſold, they planted, they builded;

29 But the ſame day that Lot
went out of Sodom, it rained
fire and brimſtone from heaven,
and deſtroyed *them* all.

30 Even thus ſhall it be in
the day when the Son of man
is revealed.

31 In that day he which
ſhall be upon the houſetop,
and his ſtuff in the houſe, let
him not come down to take it
away: and he that is in the
field,

field, let him likewife not return back.

32 Remember Lot's wife.

33 Whofoever fhall feek to fave his life fhall lofe it; and whofoever fhall lofe his life fhall preferve it.

34 I tell you, in that night there fhall be two *men* in one bed; the one fhall be taken, and the other fhall be left.

35 Two *women* fhall be grinding together; the one fhall be taken, and the other left.

36 Two *men* fhall be in the field; the one fhall be taken, and the other left.

37 And they anfwered and faid unto him, Where, Lord? And he faid unto them, Wherefoever the body *is*, thither will the eagles be gathered together.

CHAP. XVIII.

The importunate widow.

AND he fpake a parable unto them *to this end*, that men ought always *to* pray, and not to faint;

2 Saying, There was in a city a judge which feared not God, neither regarded man:

3 And there was a widow in that city; and fhe came unto him, faying, Avenge me of mine adverfary.

4 And he would not for a while: but afterward he faid within himfelf, Though I fear not God, nor regard man;

5 Yet becaufe this widow troubleth me, I will avenge her, left by her continual coming fhe weary me.

6 And the Lord faid, Hear what the unjuft judge faith.

7 And fhall not God avenge his own elect, which cry day and night unto him, though he bear long with them?

8 I tell you, that he will avenge them fpeedily. Neverthelefs when the Son of man cometh, fhall he find faith on the earth?

9 ¶ And he fpake this parable unto certain which trufted in themfelves that they were righteous, and defpifed others:

10 Two men went up into the temple to pray, the one a Pharifee, and the other a publican.

11 The Pharifee ftood and prayed thus with himfelf, God, I thank thee, that I am not as other men *are*, extortioners, unjuft, adulterers, or even as this publican.

12 I faft twice in the week, I give tithes of all that I poffefs.

13 And the publican, ftanding afar off, would not lift up fo much as *his* eyes unto heaven, but fmote upon his breaft, faying, God be merciful to me a finner.

14 I tell you, this man went down to his houfe juftified *rather* than the other: for every one that exalteth himfelf fhall be abafed; and he that humbleth himfelf fhall be exalted.

15 ¶ And they brought unto him alfo infants, that he would touch them: but when *his* difciples faw *it*, they rebuked them.

16 But Jefus called them *unto him*, and faid, Suffer little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of fuch is the kingdom of God.

17 Verily I fay unto you, Whofoever fhall not receive the kingdom of God as a little child, fhall in no wife enter therein.

18 And a certain ruler afked him, faying, Good Mafter,

what

what ſhall I do to inherit eternal life?

19 And Jeſus ſaid unto him, Why calleſt thou me good? none *is* good ſave one, *that is* God.

20 Thou knoweſt the commandments, Do not commit adultery, Do not kill, Do not ſteal, Do not bear falſe witneſs, Honour thy father and thy mother.

21 And he ſaid, All theſe have I kept from my youth up.

22 Now when Jeſus heard theſe things, he ſaid unto him, Yet lackeſt thou one thing: ſell all that thou haſt, and diſtribute unto the poor, and thou ſhalt have treaſure in heaven: and come, follow me.

23 And when he heard this, he was very ſorrowful, for he was very rich.

24 And when Jeſus ſaw that he was very ſorrowful, he ſaid, How hardly ſhall they that have riches enter into the kingdom of God!

25 For it is eaſier for a camel to go through a needle's eye, than for a rich man to enter into the kingdom of God.

26 And they that heard *it*, ſaid, Who then can be ſaved?

27 And he ſaid, The things which are impoſſible with men are poſſible with God.

28 Then Peter ſaid, Lo, we have left all, and followed thee.

29 And he ſaid unto them, Verily I ſay unto you, There is no man that hath left houſe, or parents, or brethren, or wife, or children, for the kingdom of God's ſake,

30 Who ſhall not receive manifold more in this preſent time, and in the world to come life everlaſting.

31 ¶ Then he took *unto him* the twelve, and ſaid unto them, Behold, we go up to Jeruſalem, and all things that are written by the prophets concerning the Son of man ſhall be accompliſhed.

32 For he ſhall be delivered unto the Gentiles, and ſhall be mocked, and ſpitefully entreated, and ſpitted on:

33 And they ſhall ſcourge *him*, and put him to death: and the third day he ſhall riſe again.

34 And they underſtood none of theſe things; and this ſaying was hid from them, neither knew they the things which were ſpoken.

35 And it came to paſs, that as he was come nigh unto Jericho, a certain blind man ſat by the way ſide begging:

36 And hearing the multitude paſs by, he aſked what it meant.

37 And they told him, That Jeſus of Nazareth paſſeth by.

38 And he cried, ſaying, Jeſus, *thou* Son of David, have mercy on me.

39 And they which went before rebuked him, that he ſhould hold his peace; but he cried ſo much the more, *Thou* Son of David, have mercy on me.

40 And Jeſus ſtood and commanded him to be brought unto him. And when he was come near, he aſked him,

41 Saying, What wilt thou that I ſhall do unto thee? And he ſaid, Lord, that I may receive my ſight.

42 And Jeſus ſaid unto him, Receive thy ſight: thy faith hath ſaved thee.

43 And immediately he received his ſight, and followed him, glorifying God. And all

the people when they ſaw *it*,
gave praiſe unto God.

CHAP. XIX.

The publican Zaccheus.

AND *Jeſus* entered and paſſ-
ed through Jericho.
2 And, behold, *there was* a
man named Zaccheus, which
was the chief among the pub-
licans, and he was rich.
3 And he ſought to ſee Jeſus
who he was; and could not for
the preſs, becauſe he was little
of ſtature.
4 And he ran before, and
climbed up into a ſycamore
tree, to ſee him: for he was to
paſs that *way*.
5 And when Jeſus came to
the place, he looked up, and
ſaw him, and ſaid unto him,
Zaccheus, make haſte, and come
down; for to day I muſt abide
at thy houſe.
6 And he made haſte, and
came down, and received him
joyfully.
7 And when they ſaw *it*, they
all murmured, ſaying, That he
was gone to be gueſt with a
man that is a ſinner.
8 And Zaccheus ſtood, and
ſaid unto the Lord; Behold,
Lord, the half of my goods I
give to the poor: and if I have
taken any thing from any man
by falſe accuſation, I reſtore
him fourfold.
9 And Jeſus ſaid unto him,
This day is ſalvation come to
this houſe, foraſmuch as he al-
ſo is a ſon of Abraham.
10 For the Son of man is
come to ſeek and to ſave that
which was loſt.
11 ¶ And as they heard theſe
things, he added, and ſpake a
parable, becauſe he was nigh to
Jeruſalem, and becauſe they
thought that the kingdom of
God ſhould immediately ap-
pear.
12 He ſaid therefore, A cer-
tain nobleman went into a far
country to receive for himſelf
a kingdom, and to return.
13 And he called his ten ſer-
vants, and delivered them ten
pounds, and ſaid unto them,
Occupy till I come.
14 But his citizens hated
him, and ſent a meſſage after
him, ſaying, We will not have
this *man* to reign over us.
15 And it came to paſs, that
when he was returned, having
received the kingdom, then he
commanded theſe ſervants to
be called unto him to whom
he had given the money, that
he might know how much eve-
ry man had gained by trading.
16 Then came the firſt, ſay-
ing, Lord, thy pound hath
gained ten pounds.
17 And he ſaid unto him,
Well, thou good ſervant: be-
cauſe thou haſt been faithful
in a very little, have thou au-
thority over ten cities.
18 And the ſecond came,
ſaying, Lord, thy pound hath
gained five pounds.
19 And he ſaid likewiſe to
him, Be thou alſo over five
cities.
20 And another came, ſay-
ing, Lord, behold, *here is* thy
pound, which I have kept laid
up in a napkin:
21 For I feared thee, becauſe
thou art an auſtere man: thou
takeſt up that thou layedſt not
down, and reapeſt that thou
didſt not ſow.
22 And he ſaith unto him,
Out of thine own mouth will I
judge thee, *thou* wicked ſer-
vant. Thou kneweſt that I was
an auſtere man, taking up that

I laid not down, and reaping that I did not sow:

23 Wherefore then gavest not thou my money into the bank, that at my coming I might have required mine own with usury?

24 And he said unto them that stood by, Take from him the pound, and give *it* to him that hath ten pounds.

25 (And they said unto him, Lord, he hath ten pounds.)

26 For I say unto you, That unto every one which hath shall be given; and from him that hath not, even that he hath shall be taken away from him.

27 But those mine enemies which would not that I should reign over them, bring hither, and slay *them* before me.

28 ¶ And when he had thus spoken, he went before ascending up to Jerusalem.

29 And it came to pass, when he was come nigh to Bethphage and Bethany, at the mount called *The mount* of Olives, he sent two of his disciples,

30 Saying, Go ye into the village over against *you*; in the which at your entering ye shall find a colt tied whereon yet never man sat: loose him, and bring *him hither*.

31 And if any man ask you, Why do ye loose *him?* thus shall ye say unto him, Because the Lord hath need of him.

32 And they that were sent went their way, and found even as he had said unto them.

33 And as they were loosing the colt, the owners thereof said unto them, Why loose ye the colt?

34 And they said, The Lord hath need of him.

35 And they brought him to Jesus: and they cast their garments upon the colt, and they set Jesus thereon.

36 And as they went, they spread their clothes in the way.

37 And when he was come nigh, even now at the descent of the mount of Olives, the whole multitude of the disciples began to rejoice and praise God with a loud voice for all the mighty works that they had seen;

38 Saying, Blessed *be* the King that cometh in the name of the Lord; peace in heaven, and glory in the highest.

39 And some of the Pharisees from among the multitude said unto him, Master, rebuke thy disciples.

40 And he answered and said unto them, I tell you that, if these should hold their peace, the stones would immediately cry out.

41 ¶ And when he was come near, he beheld the city, and wept over it,

42 Saying, If thou hadst known, even thou, at least in this thy day, the things *which belong* unto thy peace! but now they are hid from thine eyes.

43 For the days shall come upon thee that thine enemies shall cast a trench about thee, and compass thee round, and keep thee in on every side,

44 And shall lay thee even with the ground, and thy children within thee: and they shall not leave in thee one stone upon another: because thou knewest not the time of thy visitation.

45 ¶ And he went into the temple, and began to cast out them that sold therein, and them that bought;

46 Saying unto them, It is written, My houſe is the houſe of prayer: but ye have made is a den of thieves.

47 And he taught daily in the temple. But the chief prieſts and the ſcribes and the chief of the people ſought to deſtroy him,

48 And could not find what they might do: for all the people were very attentive to hear him.

CHAP. XX.

Chriſt's authority avouched.

AND it came to paſs, *that* on one of thoſe days, as he taught the people in the temple, and preached the goſpel, the chief prieſts and the ſcribes, came upon *him* with the elders,

2 And ſpake unto him, ſaying, Tell us, By what authority doeſt thou theſe things? or who is he that gave thee this authority?

3 And he anſwered and ſaid unto them, I will alſo aſk you one thing, and anſwer me:

4 The baptiſm of John, was it from heaven, or of men?

5 And they reaſoned with themſelves, ſaying, If we ſhall ſay, From heaven; he will ſay, Why then believed ye him not?

6 But and if we ſay, Of men? all the people will ſtone us: for they be perſuaded that John was a prophet.

7 And they anſwered, That they could not tell whence *it was*.

8 And Jeſus ſaid unto them, Neither tell I you by what authority I do theſe things.

9 ¶ Then began he to ſpeak to the people this parable; A certain man planted a vineyard, and let it forth to huſbandmen, and went into a far country for a long time.

10 And at the ſeaſon he ſent a ſervant to the huſbandmen, that they ſhould give him of the fruit of the vineyard: but the huſbandmen beat him, and ſent *him* away empty.

11 And again he ſent another ſervant: and they beat him alſo, and entreated *him* ſhamefully, and ſent *him* away empty.

12 And again he ſent a third: and they wounded him alſo, and caſt *him* out.

13 Then ſaid the lord of the vineyard, What ſhall I do? I will ſend my beloved ſon: it may be they will reverence *him* when they ſee him.

14 But when the huſbandmen ſaw him, they reaſoned among themſelves, ſaying, This is the heir: come, let us kill him, that the inheritance may be our's.

15 So they caſt him out of the vineyard, and killed *him*. What therefore ſhall the lord of the vineyard do unto them?

16 He ſhall come and deſtroy theſe huſbandmen, and ſhall give the vineyard to others. And when they heard *it*, they ſaid, God forbid.

17 And he beheld them, and ſaid, What is this then that is written, The ſtone which the builders rejected, the ſame is become the head of the corner?

18 Whoſoever ſhall fall upon that ſtone ſhall be broken; but on whomſoever it ſhall fall, it will grind him to powder.

19 ¶ And the chief prieſts and the ſcribes the ſame hour ſought to lay hands on him; and they feared the people: for they perceived that he had ſpoken this parable againſt them.

20 And

20 And they watched *him*,
and ſent forth ſpies, which
ſhould feign themſelves juſt
men, that they might take
hold of his words, that ſo they
might deliver him unto the
power and authority of the
governor.
21 And they aſked him, ſay-
ing, Maſter, we know that thou
ſayeſt and teacheſt rightly, nei-
ther accepteſt thou the *perſon*
of any, but teacheſt the way of
God truly:
22 Is it lawful for us to give
tribute unto Ceſar, or no?
23 But he perceived their
craftineſs, and ſaid unto them,
Why tempt ye me?
24 Shew me a penny. Whoſe
image and ſuperſcription hath
it? They anſwered and ſaid,
Ceſar's.
25 And he ſaid unto them,
Render therefore unto Ceſar
the things which be Ceſar's,
and unto God the things which
be God's.
26 And they could not take
hold of his words before the
people: and they marvelled at
his anſwer, and held their
peace.
27 ¶ Then came to *him* cer-
tain of the Sadducees, which
deny that there is any reſur-
rection, and they aſked him,
28 Saying, Maſter, Moſes
wrote unto us, If any man's bro-
ther die having a wife, and he
die without children, that his
brother ſhould take his wife, and
raiſe up ſeed unto his brother.
29 There were therefore ſeven
brethren: and the firſt took a
wife, and died without children.
30 And the ſecond took her
to wife, and he died childleſs.
31 And the third took her;
and in like manner the ſeven
alſo: and they left no children,
and died.
32 Laſt of all the woman
died alſo.
33 Therefore in the reſurrec-
tion whoſe wife of them is ſhe?
for ſeven had her to wife.
34 And Jeſus anſwering ſaid
unto them, The children of this
world marry, and are given in
marriage:
35 But they which ſhall be
accounted worthy to obtain
that world, and the reſurrec-
tion from the dead, neither mar-
ry, nor are given in marriage:
36 Neither can they die any
more: for they are equal unto
the angels; and are the children
of God, being the children of
the reſurrection.
37 Now that the dead are
raiſed, even Moſes ſhewed at
the buſh, when he calleth the
Lord the God of Abraham, and
the God of Iſaac, and the God
of Jacob.
38 For he is not a God of
the dead, but of the living:
for all live unto him.
39 Then certain of the ſcribes
anſwering ſaid, Maſter, thou
haſt well ſaid.
40 And after that they durſt
not aſk him any *queſtion at all.*
41 And he ſaid unto them,
How ſay they that Chriſt is
David's ſon?
42 And David himſelf ſaith
in the book of Pſalms, The
Lord ſaid unto my Lord, Sit
thou on my right hand,
43 Till I make thine enemies
thy footſtool.
44 David therefore calleth him
Lord, how is he then his ſon?
45 Then in the audience of
all the people he ſaid unto
his diſciples,
46 Beware of the ſcribes,

which deſire to walk in long
robes, and love greetings in
the markets, and the higheſt
ſeats in the ſynagogues, and
the chief rooms at feaſts;
47 Which devour widows'
houſes, and for a ſhew make
long prayers: the ſame ſhall re-
ceive greater damnation.

CHAP. XXI.

Deſtruction of the temple foretold.

AND he looked up, and
ſaw the rich men caſting
their gifts into the treaſury.
2 And he ſaw alſo a certain
poor widow caſting in thither
two mites.
3 And he ſaid, Of a truth I
ſay unto you, That this poor
widow hath caſt in more than
they all:
4 For all theſe have of their
abundance caſt in unto the
offerings of God: but ſhe of
her penury hath caſt in all the
living that ſhe had.
5 ¶ And as ſome ſpake of the
temple, how it was adorned with
goodly ſtones and gifts, he ſaid,
6 *As for* theſe things which ye
behold, the days will come in
the which there ſhall not be left
one ſtone upon another that
ſhall not be thrown down.
7 And they aſked him, ſaying,
Maſter, but when ſhall theſe
things be? and what ſign *will
there be* when theſe things ſhall
come to paſs?
8 And he ſaid, Take heed
that ye be not deceived: for
many ſhall come in my name,
ſaying, I am *Chriſt;* and the
time draweth near. Go ye not
therefore after them.
9 But when ye ſhall hear of
wars and commotions, be not
terrified: for theſe things muſt
firſt come to paſs; but the end
is not by and by.
10 Then ſaid he unto them,
Nation ſhall riſe againſt na-
tion, and kingdom againſt
kingdom:
11 And great earthquakes
ſhall be in divers places, and
famines, and peſtilences; and
fearful ſights, and great ſigns
ſhall there be from heaven.
12 But before all theſe they
ſhall lay their hands on you,
and perſecute *you,* delivering
you up to the ſynagogues and
into priſons, being brought be-
fore kings and rulers for my
name's ſake.
13 And it ſhall turn to you
for a teſtimony.
14 Settle *it* therefore in your
hearts, not to meditate before
what ye ſhall anſwer:
15 For I will give you a mouth
and wiſdom which all your
adverſaries ſhall not be able to
gainſay nor reſiſt.
16 And ye ſhall be betrayed
both by parents, and brethren,
and kinsfolks, and friends;
and *ſome* of you ſhall they cauſe
to be put to death.
17 And ye ſhall be hated of
all *men* for my name's ſake.
18 But there ſhall not an hair
of your head periſh.
19 In your patience poſſeſs
ye your ſouls.
20 And when ye ſhall ſee Je-
ruſalem compaſſed with armies,
then know that the deſolation
thereof is nigh.
21 Then let them which are
in Judea flee to the mountains;
and let them which are in the
midſt of it depart out; and let
not them that are in the coun-
tries enter thereinto.
22 For theſe be the days of
vengeance, that all things which
are written may be fulfilled.
23 But woe unto them that
are

are with child, and to them
that give ſuck in thoſe days!
for there ſhall be great diſtreſs
in the land, and wrath upon
this people.
24 And they ſhall fall by the
edge of the ſword, and ſhall
be led away captive into all
nations: and Jeruſalem ſhall be
trodden down of the Gentiles,
until the times of the Gentiles
be fulfilled.
25 ¶ And there ſhall be ſigns
in the ſun and in the moon
and in the ſtars; and upon the
earth diſtreſs of nations, with
perplexity; the ſea and the
waves roaring;
26 Men's hearts failing them
for fear, and for looking after
thoſe things which are coming
on the earth: for the powers
of heaven ſhall be ſhaken.
27 And then ſhall they ſee
the Son of man coming in a
cloud with power and great
glory.
28 And when theſe things be-
gin to come to paſs, then look
up, and lift up your heads: for
your redemption draweth nigh.
29 And he ſpake to them a
parable; Behold the fig tree,
and all the trees;
30 When they now ſhoot
forth, ye ſee and know of your
own ſelves, that ſummer is now
nigh at hand.
31 So likewiſe ye, when ye
ſee theſe things come to paſs,
know ye that the kingdom of
God is nigh at hand.
32 Verily I ſay unto you, This
generation ſhall not paſs away
till all be fulfilled.
33 Heaven and earth ſhall
paſs away; but my words ſhall
not paſs away.
34 And take heed to your-
ſelves, leſt at any time your
hearts be overcharged with ſur-
feiting, and drunkenneſs, and
cares of this life, and *ſo* that
day come upon you unawares.
35 For as a ſnare ſhall it come
on all them that dwell on the
face of the whole earth.
36 Watch ye therefore and
pray always, that ye may be
accounted worthy to eſcape all
theſe things that ſhall come to
paſs, and to ſtand before the
Son of man.
37 And in the daytime he
was teaching in the temple; and
at night he went out, and abode
in the mount that is called *The
mount* of Olives.
38 And all the people came
early in the morning to him in
the temple, for to hear him.

CHAP. XXII.

Conſpiracy againſt Chriſt.

NOW the feaſt of unleav-
ened bread drew nigh,
which is called the paſſover.
2 And the chief prieſts and
ſcribes ſought how they might
kill him: for they feared the
people.
3 ¶ Then entered Satan into
Judas ſurnamed Iſcariot, being
of the number of the twelve.
4 And he went his way, and
communed with the chief
prieſts and captains how he
might betray him unto them.
5 And they were glad, and
covenanted to give him money.
6 And he promiſed, and
ſought opportunity to betray
him unto them in the abſence
of the multitude.
7 ¶ Then came the day of
unleavened bread, when the
paſſover muſt be killed.
8 And he ſent Peter and
John, ſaying, Go, and prepare us
the paſſover, that we may eat.
9 And they ſaid unto him,

Where wilt thou that we prepare?

10 And he ſaid unto them, Behold, when ye are entered into the city, there ſhall a man meet you bearing a pitcher of water; follow him into the houſe where he entereth in.

11 And ye ſhall ſay unto the good man of the houſe, The maſter ſaith unto thee, Where is the gueſt chamber, where I ſhall eat the paſſover with my diſciples?

12 And he ſhall ſhew you a large upper room furniſhed: there make ready.

13 And they went and found as he had ſaid unto them: and they made ready the paſſover.

14 And when the hour was come, he ſat down, and the twelve apoſtles with him.

15 And he ſaid unto them, With deſire I have deſired to eat this paſſover with you, before I ſuffer:

16 For I ſay unto you, I will not any more eat thereof, until it be fulfilled in the kingdom of God.

17 And he took the cup and gave thanks, and ſaid, Take this, and divide *it* among yourſelves:

18 For I ſay unto you, I will not drink of the fruit of the vine, until the kingdom of God ſhall come.

19 ¶ And he took bread, and gave thanks, and brake *it*, and gave unto them, ſaying, This is my body which is given for you: this do in remembrance of me.

20 Likewiſe alſo the cup after ſupper, ſaying, This cup *is* the new teſtament in my blood, which is ſhed for you.

21 But, behold, the hand of him that betrayeth me *is* with me on the table.

22 And truly the Son of man goeth as it was determined: but woe unto that man by whom he is betrayed!

23 And they began to enquire among themſelves which of them it was that ſhould do this thing.

24 And there was alſo a ſtrife among them which of them ſhould be accounted the greateſt.

25 And he ſaid unto them, The kings of the Gentiles exerciſe lordſhip over them; and they that exerciſe authority upon them are called benefactors.

26 But ye *ſhall* not *be* ſo: but he that is greateſt among you, let him be as the younger; and he that is chief, as he that doth ſerve.

27 For whether *is* greater, he that ſitteth at meat, or he that ſerveth? *is* not he that ſitteth at meat? but I am among you as he that ſerveth.

28 Ye are they which have continued with me in my temptations.

29 And I appoint unto you a kingdom, as my Father hath appointed unto me;

30 That ye may eat and drink at my table in my kingdom, and ſit on thrones judging the twelve tribes of Iſrael.

31 And the Lord ſaid, Simon, Simon, behold, Satan hath deſired *to have* you, that he may ſift *you* as wheat:

32 But I have prayed for thee, that thy faith fail not: and when thou art converted ſtrengthen thy brethren.

33 And he ſaid unto him,

Lord,

Lord, I am ready to go with thee both into priſon, and to death.

34 And he ſaid, I tell thee, Peter, the cock ſhall not crow this day before that thou ſhalt thrice deny that thou knoweſt me.

35 And he ſaid unto them, When I ſent you without purſe, and ſcrip, and ſhoes, lacked ye any thing? And they ſaid, Nothing.

36 Then ſaid he unto them, But now he that hath a purſe, let him take *it*, and likewiſe *his* ſcrip; and he that hath no ſword, let him ſell his garment, and buy one.

37 For I ſay unto you, That this that is written muſt yet be accompliſhed in me, And he was reckoned among the tranſgreſſors: for the things concerning me have an end.

38 And they ſaid, Lord, behold, here *are* two ſwords. And he ſaid unto them, It is enough.

39 And he came out, and went, as he was wont, to the mount of Olives; and his diſciples alſo followed him.

40 And when he was at the place, he ſaid unto them, Pray that ye enter not into temptation.

41 And he was withdrawn from them about a ſtone's caſt, and kneeled down, and prayed,

42 Saying, Father, if thou be willing, remove this cup from me; nevertheleſs not my will, but thine be done.

43 And there appeared an angel unto him from heaven ſtrengthening him.

44 And being in an agony, he prayed more earneſtly; and his ſweat was as it were great drops of blood falling down to the ground.

45 And when he aroſe up from prayer, and was come to his diſciples, he found them ſleeping for ſorrow,

46 And ſaid unto them, Why ſleep ye? riſe and pray, leſt ye enter into temptation.

47 And while he yet ſpake, behold, a multitude, and he that was called Judas, one of the twelve, went before them, and drew near unto Jeſus to kiſs him.

48 But Jeſus ſaid unto him, Judas, betrayeſt thou the Son of man with a kiſs?

49 When they which were about him ſaw what would follow, they ſaid unto him, Lord, ſhall we ſmite with the ſword?

50 And one of them ſmote a ſervant of the high prieſt, and cut off his right ear.

51 And Jeſus anſwered and ſaid, Suffer ye thus far. And he touched his ear, and healed him.

52 Then Jeſus ſaid unto the chief prieſts and captains of the temple, and the elders which were come to him, Be ye come out as againſt a thief, with ſwords and ſtaves?

53 When I was daily with you in the temple, ye ſtretched forth no hands againſt me: but this is your hour, and the power of darkneſs.

54 Then took they him, and led *him*, and brought him into the high prieſt's houſe. And Peter followed afar off.

55 And when they had kindled a fire in the midſt of the hall, and were ſet down together, Peter ſat down among them.

56 But a certain maid beheld

him as he ſat by the fire, and earneſtly looked upon him, and ſaid, This man was alſo with him.

57 And he denied him, ſaying, Woman, I know him not.

58 And after a little while another ſaw him, and ſaid, Thou art alſo of them. And Peter ſaid, Man, I am not.

59 And about the ſpace of one hour after, another confidently affirmed, ſaying, Of a truth this *fellow* alſo was with him: for he is a Galilean.

60 And Peter ſaid, Man, I know not what thou ſayeſt. And immediately, while he yet ſpake, the cock crew.

61 And the Lord turned, and looked upon Peter. And Peter remembered the word of the Lord, how he had ſaid unto him, Before the cock crow, thou ſhalt deny me thrice.

62 And Peter went out and wept bitterly.

63 And the men that held Jeſus, mocked him, and ſmote *him.*

64 And when they had blindfolded him, they ſtruck him on the face, and aſked him, ſaying, Propheſy, who is it that ſmote thee?

65 And many other things blaſphemouſly ſpake they againſt him.

66 And as ſoon as it was day, the elders of the people and the chief prieſts and the ſcribes came together, and led him into their council,

67 Saying, Art thou the Chriſt? tell us. And he ſaid unto them, If I tell you, ye will not believe:

68 And if I alſo aſk *you,* ye will not anſwer me, nor let *me* go.

69 Hereafter ſhall the Son of man ſit on the right hand of the power of God.

70 Then ſaid they all, Art thou then the Son of God? And he ſaid unto them, Ye ſay that I am.

71 And they ſaid, What need we any further witneſs? for we ourſelves have heard of his own mouth.

CHAP. XXIII.

Herod mocketh Chriſt.

AND the whole multitude of them aroſe, and led him unto Pilate.

2 And they began to accuſe him, ſaying, We found this *fellow* perverting the nation, and forbidding to give tribute to Ceſar, ſaying that he himſelf is Chriſt a King.

3 And Pilate aſked him, ſaying, Art thou the King of the Jews? And he anſwered him and ſaid, Thou ſayeſt *it.*

4 Then ſaid Pilate to the chief prieſts and *to* the people, I find no fault in this man.

5 And they were the more fierce, ſaying, He ſtirreth up the people, teaching throughout all Jewry, beginning from Galilee to this place.

6 When Pilate heard of Galilee, he aſked whether the man were a Galilean.

7 And as ſoon as he knew that he belonged unto Herod's juriſdiction, he ſent him to Herod, who himſelf alſo was at Jeruſalem at that time.

8 And when Herod ſaw Jeſus, he was exceeding glad; for he was deſirous to ſee him of a long *ſeaſon,* becauſe he had heard many things of him; and he hoped to have ſeen ſome miracle done by him.

9 Then he queſtioned with him in many words; but he

anſwered

anſwered him nothing.
10 And the chief prieſts and ſcribes ſtood and vehemently accuſed him.
11 And Herod with his men of war ſet him at nought, and mocked *him*, and arrayed him in a gorgeous robe, and ſent him again to Pilate.
12 And the ſame day Pilate and Herod were made friends together: for before they were at enmity between themſelves.
13 ¶ And Pilate, when he had called together the chief prieſts and the rulers and the people,
14 Said unto them, Ye have brought this man unto me as one that perverteth the people: and, behold, I, having examined *him* before you, have found no fault in this man touching thoſe things whereof ye accuſe him:
15 No, nor yet Herod: for I ſent you to him; and, lo, nothing worthy of death is done unto him.
16 I will therefore chaſtiſe him and releaſe *him*.
17 (For of neceſſity he muſt releaſe one unto them at the feaſt.)
18 And they cried out all at once, ſaying, Away with this *man*, and releaſe unto us Barabbas:
19 (Who for a certain ſedition made in the city, and for murder, was caſt into priſon.)
20 Pilate therefore willing to releaſe Jeſus, ſpake again to them.
21 But they cried, ſaying, Crucify *him*, crucify him.
22 And he ſaid unto them the third time, Why, what evil hath he done? I have found no cauſe of death in him; I will therefore chaſtiſe him, and let *him* go.
23 And they were inſtant with loud voices, requiring that he might be crucified. And the voices of them and of the chief prieſts prevailed.
24 And Pilate gave ſentence that it ſhould be as they required.
25 And he releaſed unto them him that for ſedition and murder was caſt into priſon, whom they had deſired; but he delivered Jeſus to their will.
26 And as they led him away, they laid hold upon one Simon a Cyrenian, coming out of the country, and on him they laid the croſs, that he might bear *it* after Jeſus.
27 ¶ And there followed him a great company of people, and of women, which alſo bewailed and lamented him.
28 But Jeſus turning unto them ſaid, Daughters of Jeruſalem, weep not for me, but weep for yourſelves, and for your children.
29 For, behold, the days are coming in the which they ſhall ſay, Bleſſed *are* the barren, and the wombs that never bare, and the paps which never gave ſuck.
30 Then ſhall they begin to ſay to the mountains, Fall on us; and to the hills, Cover us.
31 For if they do theſe things in a green tree, what ſhall be done in the dry?
32 And there were alſo two other malefactors led with him to be put to death.
33 And when they were come to the place which is called Calvary, there they crucified him, and the malefactors; one on the right hand, and the other on the left.
34 Then ſaid Jeſus, Father, forgive them: for they know not what they do. And they parted

parted his raiment, and cast lots.

35 And the people stood beholding. And the rulers also with them derided *him*, saying, He saved others; let him save himself, if he be Christ the chosen of God.

36 And the soldiers also mocked him, coming to him, and offering him vinegar,

37 And saying, If thou be the King of the Jews, save thyself.

38 And a superscription also was written over him in letters of Greek, and Latin, and Hebrew, THIS IS THE KING OF THE JEWS.

39 And one of the malefactors which were hanged railed on him, saying, If thou be Christ, save thyself and us.

40 But the other answering, rebuked him, saying, Dost not thou fear God, seeing thou art in the same condemnation?

41 And we indeed justly; for we receive the due reward of our deeds; but this man hath done nothing amiss.

42 And he said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom.

43 And Jesus said unto him, Verily I say unto thee, To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.

44 And it was about the sixth hour, and there was darkness over all the earth until the ninth hour.

45 And the sun was darkened, and the veil of the temple was rent in the midst.

46 And when Jesus had cried with a loud voice, he said, Father into thy hands I commend my spirit. And having said thus, he gave up the ghost.

47 Now when the centurion saw what was done, he glorified God, saying, Certainly this was a righteous man.

48 And all the people that came together to that sight, beholding the things which were done, smote their breasts, and returned.

49 And all his acquaintance, and the women that followed him from Galilee, stood afar off beholding these things.

50 ¶ And, behold, *there was* a man named Joseph, a counseller; *and he was* a good man and a just:

51 (The same had not consented to the counsel and deed of them;) *he was* of Arimathea, a city of the Jews: who also himself waited for the kingdom of God.

52 This *man* went unto Pilate, and begged the body of Jesus.

53 And he took it down, and wrapped it in linen, and laid it in a sepulchre that was hewn in stone, wherein never man before was laid.

54 And that day was the preparation, and the sabbath drew on.

55 And the women also which came with him from Galilee followed after, and beheld the sepulchre, and how his body was laid.

56 And they returned, and prepared spices and ointments: and rested the sabbath day according to the commandment.

CHAP. XXIV.

Christ's resurrection declared.

NOW upon the first *day* of the week, very early in the morning, they came unto the sepulchre, bringing the spices which they had prepared, and certain *others* with them.

2 And they found the stone

rolled away from the ſepulchre.
3 And they entered in, and
found not the body of the Lord
Jeſus.
4 And it came to paſs, as they
were much perplexed therea-
bout, behold, two men ſtood by
them in ſhining garments:
5 And as they were afraid,
and bowed down *their* faces to
the earth, they ſaid unto them,
Why ſeek ye the living among
the dead?
6 He is not here, but is riſen:
remember how he ſpake unto
you when he was yet in Gali-
lee,
7 Saying, The Son of man
muſt be delivered into the
hands of ſinful men, and be
crucified, and the third day
riſe again.
8 And they remembered his
words,
9 And returned from the ſe-
pulchre, and told all theſe
things unto the eleven, and to
all the reſt.
10 It was Mary Magdalene,
and Joanna, and Mary *the mo-
ther* of James, and other *women
that were* with them, which
told theſe things unto the
apoſtles.
11 And their words ſeemed
to them as idle tales, and they
believed them not.
12 Then aroſe Peter, and
ran unto the ſepulchre; and
ſtooping down, he beheld the
linen clothes laid by themſelves,
and departed, wondering in
himſelf at that which was come
to paſs.
13 ¶ And, behold, two of
them went that ſame day to a
village called Emmaus, which
was from Jeruſalem *about* there-
ſcore furlongs.
14 And they talked together
of all theſe things which had
happened.
15 And it came to paſs, that
while they communed *together*
and reaſoned, Jeſus himſelf
drew near and went with them.
16 But their eyes were hold-
en that they ſhould not know
him.
17 And he ſaid unto them,
What manner of communica-
tions *are* theſe that ye have one
to another, as ye walk, and are
ſad?
18 And the one of them, whoſe
name was Cleopas, anſwering,
ſaid unto him, Art thou only
a ſtranger in Jeruſalem, and
haſt not known the things
which are come to paſs there
in theſe days?
19 And he ſaid unto them,
What things? And they ſaid
unto him, Concerning Jeſus of
Nazareth, which was a prophet
mighty in deed and word be-
fore God and all the people:
20 And how the chief prieſts
and our rulers delivered him to
be condemned to death, and
have crucified him.
21 But we truſted that it had
been he which ſhould have re-
deemed Iſrael. And beſide all
this, to day is the third day
ſince theſe things were done.
22 Yea, and certain women
alſo of our company made us
aſtoniſhed, which were early at
the ſepulchre;
23 And when they found not
his body, they came, ſaying,
That they had alſo ſeen a viſion
of angels, which ſaid, That he
was alive.
24 And certain of them which
were with us went to the ſe-
pulchre, and found *it* even ſo
as the women had ſaid: but
him they ſaw not.

25 Then he said unto them,
O fools, and slow of heart to
believe all that the prophets
have spoken!
26 Ought not Christ to have
suffered these things, and to
enter into his glory?
27 And beginning at Moses
and all the prophets, he ex-
pounded unto them in all the
scriptures the things concern-
ing himself.
28 And they drew nigh unto
the village whither they went:
and he made as though he
would have gone further.
29 But they constrained him,
saying, Abide with us: for it is
toward evening, and the day
is far spent. And he went in
to tarry with them.
30 And it came to pass, as
he sat at meat with them, he
took bread, and blessed *it*, and
brake, and gave to them.
31 And their eyes were open-
ed, and they knew him; and
he vanished out of their sight.
32 And they said one to ano-
ther, Did not our heart burn
within us, while he talked with
us by the way, and while he
opened to us the scriptures?
33 And they rose up the
same hour, and returned to Je-
rusalem, and found the eleven
gathered together, and them
that were with them,
34 Saying, The Lord is risen
indeed, and hath appeared to
Simon.
35 And they told what things
were done in the way, and how
he was known of them in break-
ing of bread.
36 ¶ And as they thus spake,
Jesus himself stood in the midst
of them, and saith unto them,
peace *be* unto you.
37 But they were terrified
and affrighted, and supposed
that they had seen a spirit.
38 And he said unto them,
Why are ye troubled? and why
do thoughts arise in your
hearts?
39 Behold my hands and my
feet, that it is I myself. Handle
me, and see: for a spirit hath
not flesh and bones as ye see
me have.
40 And when he had thus
spoken, he shewed them *his*
hands and *his* feet.
41 And while they yet be-
lieved not for joy, and wonder-
ed, he said unto them, Have
ye here any meat?
42 And they gave him a piece
of a broiled fish, and of an ho-
neycomb.
43 And he took *it*, and did
eat before them.
44 And he said unto them,
These *are* the words which I
spake unto you, while I was yet
with you, that all things must
be fulfilled which were written
in the law of Moses, and *in* the
prophets, and *in* the psalms,
concerning me.
45 Then opened he their un-
derstanding, that they might
understand the scriptures,
46 And said unto them, Thus
it is written, and thus it behov-
ed Christ to suffer, and to rise
from the dead the third day:
47 And that repentance and
remission of sins should be
preached in his name among all
nations, beginning at Jerusalem.
48 And ye are witnesses of
these things.
49 And, behold, I send the
promise of my Father upon
you: but tarry ye in the city
of Jerusalem, until ye be en-
dued with power from on high.
50 ¶ And he led them out as
far

far as to Bethany, and he lifted up his hands, and blessed them.

51 And it came to pass, while he blessed them, he was parted from them, and carried up into heaven.

52 And they worshipped him, and returned to Jerusalem with great joy:

53 And were continually in the temple praising and blessing God. Amen.

The Gospel according to Saint JOHN.

CHAP. I.

The divinity, &c. of Christ.

IN the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.

2 The same was in the beginning with God.

3 All things were made by him; and without him was not any thing made that was made.

4 In him was life; and the life was the light of men.

5 And the light shineth in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not.

6 There was a man sent from God, whose name *was* John.

7 The same came for a witness, to bear witness of the Light, that all *men* through him might believe.

8 He was not that Light, but *was sent* to bear witness of that Light.

9 *That* was the true Light which lighteth every man that cometh into the world.

10 He was in the world, and the world was made by him, and the world knew him not.

11 He came unto his own, and his own received him not.

12 But as many as received him to them gave he power to become the sons of God, *even* to them that believe on his name:

13 Which were born, not of blood, nor of the will of the flesh, nor of the will of man, but of God.

14 And the Word was made flesh, and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory as of the only begotten of the Father,) full of grace and truth.

15 ¶ John bare witness of him, and cried, saying, This was he of whom I spake, He that cometh after me is preferred before me: for he was before me.

16 And of his fulness have all we received, and grace for grace.

17 For the law was given by Moses, *but* grace and truth came by Jesus Christ.

18 No man hath seen God at any time; the only begotten Son, which is in the bosom of the Father, he hath declared *him*.

19 And this is the record of John, when the Jews sent priests and Levites from Jerusalem to ask him, Who art thou?

20 And he confessed and denied not: but confessed I am not the Christ.

21 And they asked him, What then? Art thou Elias? And he saith, I am not. Art thou that prophet? And he answered, No.

22 Then said they unto him, Who art thou? that we may give an answer to them that sent us. What sayest thou of thyself?

23 He said, I *am* the voice of one crying in the wilderness, Make straight the way of the Lord, as said the prophet Esaias.

24 And

24 And they which were ſent
were of the Phariſees.
25 And they aſked him, and
ſaid unto him, Why baptizeſt
thou then, if thou be not that
Chriſt, nor Elias, neither that
prophet?
26 John anſwered them, ſay-
ing, I baptize with water: but
there ſtandeth one among you,
whom ye know not;
27 He it is, who coming after
me, is preferred before me,
whoſe ſhoe's latchet I am not
worthy to unlooſe.
28 Theſe things were done
in Bethabara beyond Jordan,
where John was baptizing.
29 The next day John ſeeth
Jeſus coming unto him, and
ſaith, Behold the Lamb of God,
which taketh away the ſin of
the world.
30 This is he of whom I ſaid,
After me cometh a man which
is preferred before me: for he
was before me.
31 And I knew him not: but
that he ſhould be made mani-
feſt to Iſrael, therefore am I
come baptizing with water.
32 And John bare record,
ſaying, I ſaw the ſpirit deſcend-
ing from heaven like a dove,
and it abode upon him.
33 And I knew him not:
but he that ſent me to baptize
with water, the ſame ſaid unto
me, Upon whom thou ſhalt ſee
the Spirit deſcending and re-
maining on him, the ſame is
he which baptizeth with the
Holy Ghoſt.
34 And I ſaw, and bare re-
cord that this is the Son of
God.
35 ¶ Again the next day af-
ter John ſtood, and two of his
diſciples;
36 And looking upon Jeſus as
he walked, he ſaith, Behold the
Lamb of God!
37 And the two diſciples
heard him ſpeak, and they fol-
lowed Jeſus.
38 Then Jeſus turned, and
ſaw them following, and ſaith
unto them, What ſeek ye?
They ſaid unto him, Rabbi,
(which is to ſay, being in-
terpreted, Maſter,) where dwell-
eſt thou?
39 He ſaith unto them, Come
and ſee. They came and ſaw
were he dwelt, and abode with
him that day: for it was about
the tenth hour.
40 One of the two which
heard John *ſpeak*, and followed
him, was Andrew, Simon Pe-
ter's brother.
41 He firſt findeth his own
brother Simon, and ſaith unto
him, We have found the Meſſi-
as, which is, being interpreted,
the Chriſt.
42 And he brought him to
Jeſus. And when Jeſus beheld
him, he ſaid, Thou art Simon
the ſon of Jona: thou ſhalt be
called Cephas, which is by in-
terpretation, a ſtone.
43 The day following Jeſus
would go forth into Galilee,
and findeth Philip, and ſaith
unto him, Follow me.
44 Now Philip was of Beth-
ſaida, the city of Andrew and
Peter.
45 Philip findeth Nathanael,
and ſaith unto him, We have
found him of whom Moſes in
the law, and the prophets, did
write, Jeſus of Nazareth, the
ſon of Joſeph.
46 And Nathanael ſaid unto
him, Can there any good thing
come out of Nazareth? Philip
ſaith unto him, Come and ſee.
47 Jeſus ſaw Nathanael com-
ing

ing to him, and ſaith of him, Behold, an Iſraelite indeed, in whom is no guile!

48 Nathanael ſaith unto him, Whence knoweſt thou me? Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, Before that Philip called thee, when thou waſt under the fig tree, I ſaw thee

49 Nathanael anſwered and ſaith unto him, Rabbi, thou art the Son of God; thou art the King of Iſrael.

50 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, Becauſe I ſaid unto thee, I ſaw thee under the fig tree, believeſt thou? thou ſhalt ſee greater things than theſe.

51 And he ſaith unto him, Verily, verily, I ſay unto you, Hereafter ye ſhall ſee heaven open, and the angels of God aſcending and deſcending upon the Son of man.

C H A P. II.

Water turned into wine.

AND the third day there was a marriage in Cana of Galilee: and the mother of Jeſus was there:

2 And both Jeſus was called and his diſciples to the marriage.

3 And when they wanted wine, the mother of Jeſus ſaith unto him, They have no wine.

4 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Woman, what have I to do with thee? mine hour is not yet come.

5 His mother ſaith unto the ſervants, Whatſoever he ſaith unto you, do *it*.

6 And there were ſet there ſix waterpots of ſtone, after the manner of the purifying of the Jews, containing two or three firkins apiece.

7 Jeſus ſaith unto them, Fill the waterpots with water. And they filled them up to the brim.

8 And he ſaith unto them, Drew out now, and bear unto the governor of the feaſt. And they bare *it*.

9 When the ruler of the feaſt had taſted the water that was made wine, and knew not whence it was: (but the ſervants which drew the water knew;) the governor of the feaſt called the bridegroom,

10 And ſaith unto him, Every man at the beginning doth ſet forth good wine; and when men have well drunk, then that which is worſe: *but* thou haſt kept the good wine until now.

11 This beginning of miracles did Jeſus in Cana of Galilee, and manifeſted forth his glory: and his diſciples believed on him.

12 ¶ After this he went down to Capernaum, he, and his mother, and his brethren, and his diſciples: and they continued there not many days.

13 ¶ And the Jews' paſſover was at hand, and Jeſus went up to Jeruſalem,

14 And found in the temple thoſe that ſold oxen, and ſheep, and doves, and the changers of money ſitting:

15 And when he had made a ſcourge of ſmall cords, he drove them all out of the temple, and the ſheep, and the oxen; and poured out the changers' money, and overthrew the tables;

16 And ſaid unto them that ſold doves, Take theſe things hence; make not my Father's houſe an houſe of merchandiſe.

17 And his diſciples remembered that it was written, The zeal of thine houſe hath eaten me up.

18 Then anſwered the Jews, and ſaid unto him, What ſign ſheweſt thou unto us, ſeeing that thou doeſt theſe things?

19 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, Deſtroy this temple, and in three days I will raiſe it up.

20 Then ſaid the Jews, Forty and ſix years was this temple in building, and wilt thou rear it up in three days?

21 But he ſpake of the temple of his body.

22 When therefore he was riſen from the dead, his diſciples remembered that he had ſaid this unto them: and they believed the ſcripture, and the word which Jeſus had ſaid.

23 Now when he was in Jeruſalem at the paſſover in the feaſt *day*, many believed in his name, when they ſaw the miracles which he did.

24 But Jeſus did not commit himſelf unto them, becauſe he knew all *men*,

25 And needed not that any ſhould teſtify of man: for he knew what was in man.

CHAP. III.

The neceſſity of regeneration.

THERE was a man of the Phariſees, named Nicodemus, a ruler of the Jews:

2 The ſame came to Jeſus by night, and ſaid unto him, Rabbi, we know that thou art a teacher come from God: for no man can do theſe miracles that thou doeſt, except God be with him.

3 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, Verily, verily, I ſay unto thee, Except a man be born again, he cannot ſee the kingdom of God.

4 Nicodemus ſaith unto him, How can a man be born when he is old? can he enter the ſecond time into his mother's womb, and be born?

5 Jeſus anſwered, Verily, verily, I ſay unto thee, Except a man be born of water and of the Spirit, he cannot enter into the kingdom of God.

6 That which is born of the fleſh is fleſh; and that which is born of the Spirit is ſpirit.

7 Marvel not that I ſaid unto thee, Ye muſt be born again.

8 The wind bloweth where it liſteth, and thou heareſt the ſound thereof, but canſt not tell whence it cometh, and whither it goeth: ſo is every one that is born of the Spirit.

9 Nicodemus anſwered and ſaid unto him, How can theſe things be?

10 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto him, Art thou a maſter of Iſrael, and knoweſt not theſe things?

11 Verily, verily, I ſay unto thee, We ſpeak that we do know, and teſtify that we have ſeen; and ye receive not our witneſs.

12 If I have told you earthly things, and ye believe not, how ſhall ye believe if I tell you *of* heavenly things?

13 And no man hath aſcended up to heaven but he that came down from heaven, *even* the Son of man, which is in heaven.

14 And as Moſes lifted up the ſerpent in the wilderneſs, even ſo muſt the Son of man be lifted up:

15 That whoſoever believeth in him ſhould not periſh, but have eternal life.

16 For God ſo loved the world, that he gave his only-begotten Son, that whoſoever believeth in him ſhould not periſh, but have everlaſting life.

17 For

17 For God ſent not his Son
nto the world to condemn the
world, but that the world
through him might be ſaved.
18 He that believeth on
him is not condemned: but
he that believeth not is con-
demned already, becauſe he hath
not believed in the name of
the onlybegotten Son of God.
19 And this is the condem-
nation, that light is come into
the world, and men loved dark-
neſs rather than light, becauſe
their deeds were evil.
20 For every one that doeth
evil hateth the light, neither
cometh to the light, leſt his
deeds ſhould be reproved.
21 But he that doeth truth
cometh to the light, that his
deeds may be made manifeſt,
that they are wrought in God.
22 ¶ After theſe things came
Jeſus and his diſciples into the
land of Judea; and there he tar-
ried with them, and baptized.
23 And John alſo was bap-
tizing in Ænon near to Salim;
becauſe there was much water
there: and they came, and were
baptized.
24 For John was not yet caſt
into priſon.
25 Then there aroſe a queſ-
tion beween *ſome* of John's
diſciples and the Jews about
purifying.
26 And they came unto John,
and ſaid unto him, Rabbi, he
that was with thee beyond Jor-
dan, to whom thou bareſt wit-
neſs, behold, the ſame baptiz-
eth, and all *men* come to him.
27 John anſwered and ſaid,
A man can receive nothing,
except it be given him from
heaven.
28 Ye yourſelves bear me
witneſs, that I ſaid, I am not
the Chriſt, but that I am ſent
before him.
29 He that hath the bride is
the bridegroom: but the friend
of the bridegroom, which ſtand-
eth and heareth him, rejoiceth
greatly becauſe of the bride-
groom's voice. This my joy
therefore is fulfilled.
30 He muſt increaſe, but I
muſt decreaſe.
31 He that cometh from
above is above all: he that is of
the earth is earthly, and ſpeak-
eth of the earth: he that com-
eth from heaven is above all.
32 And what he hath ſeen
and heard, that he teſtifieth;
and no man receiveth his teſti-
mony.
33 He that hath received his
teſtimony hath ſet to his ſeal
that God is true.
34 For he whom God hath
ſent ſpeaketh the words of
God: for God giveth not the
Spirit by meaſure *unto him.*
35 The Father loveth the
Son, and hath given all things
into his hand.
36 He that believeth on the
Son hath everlaſting life: and
he that believeth not the Son
ſhall not ſee life; but the wrath
of God abideth on him.

CHAP. IV.

The woman of Samaria.

WHEN therefore the Lord
knew how the Phariſees
had heard that Jeſus made
and baptized more diſciples
than John,
2 (Though Jeſus himſelf bap-
tized not, but his diſciples,)
3 He left Judea, and depart-
ed again into Galilee.
4 And he muſt needs go
through Samaria.
5 Then cometh he to a city
of Samaria which is called
Si-

Sichar, near to the parcel of
ground that Jacob gave to his
ſon Joſeph.
6 Now Jacob's well was there.
Jeſus therefore being wearied
with *his* journey ſat thus on
the well: *and* it was about
the ſixth hour.
7 There cometh a woman of
Samaria to draw water. Jeſus
ſaith unto her, Give me to
drink.
8 (For his diſciples were gone
away unto the city to buy meat.)
9 Then ſaith the woman of
Samaria unto him, How is it
that thou being a Jew aſkeſt
drink of me which am a wo-
man of Samaria? For the Jews
have no dealings with the Sa-
maritans.
10 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid
unto her, If thou kneweſt the
gift of God, and who it is that
ſaith to thee, Give me to drink;
thou wouldeſt have aſked of
him, and he would have given
thee living water.
11 The woman ſaith unto
him, Sir, thou haſt nothing to
draw with, and the well is
deep: from whence then haſt
thou that living water?
12 Art thou greater than our
father Jacob, which gave us the
well, and drank thereof himſelf,
and his children, and his cat-
tle?
13 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid
unto her, Whoſoever drinketh
of this water ſhall thirſt again:
14 But whoſoever drinketh
of the water that I ſhall give
him ſhall never thirſt; but the
water that I ſhall give him ſhall
be in him a well of water
ſpringing up into everlaſting
life.
15 The woman ſaith unto
him, Sir, give me this water,
that I thirſt not, neither come
hither to draw.
16 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Go,
call thy huſband, and come
hither.
17 The woman anſwered and
ſaid, I have no huſband. Jeſus
ſaid unto her, Thou haſt well
ſaid, I have no huſband:
18 For thou haſt had five
huſbands, and he whom thou
now haſt is not thy huſband:
in that ſaidſt thou truly.
19 The woman ſaith unto
him, Sir, I perceive that thou
art a prophet.
20 Our fathers worſhipped
in this mountain; and ye ſay
that in Jeruſalem is the place
where men ought to worſhip.
21 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Wo-
man, believe me, the hour
cometh when ye ſhall neither in
this mountain, nor yet at Jeru-
ſalem, worſhip the Father.
22 Ye worſhip ye know not
what: we know what we wor-
ſhip: for ſalvation is of the Jews.
23 But the hour cometh, and
now is, when the true wor-
ſhippers ſhall worſhip the Fa-
ther in ſpirit and in truth: for
the Father ſeeketh ſuch to wor-
ſhip him.
24 God *is* a Spirit: and they
that worſhip him, muſt worſhip
him in ſpirit and in truth.
25 The woman ſaith unto
him, I know that Meſſias com-
eth, which is called Chriſt:
when he is come, he will tell
us all things.
26 Jeſus ſaith unto her, I
that ſpeak unto thee am *he*.
27 ¶ And upon this came his
diſciples, and marvelled that he
talked with the woman: yet no
man ſaid, What ſeekeſt thou?
or, Why talkeſt thou with her?
28 The woman then left her
water-

waterpot, and went her way
into the city, and ſaith to the
men,

29 Come, ſee a man which
told me all things that ever I
did: is not this the Chriſt?

30 Then they went out of
the city, and came unto him.

31 ¶ In the mean while his
diſciples prayed him, ſaying,
Maſter, eat.

32 But he ſaid unto them, I
have meat to eat that ye know
not of.

33 Therefore ſaid the diſciples
one to another, Hath any man
brought him *ought* to eat?

34 Jeſus ſaith unto them,
My meat is to do the will of
him that ſent me, and to finiſh
his work.

35 Say not ye, There are yet
four months, and *then* cometh
harveſt? behold, I ſay unto you,
Lift up your eyes, and look on
the fields; for they are white
already to harveſt.

36 And he that reapeth re-
ceiveth wages, and gathereth
fruit unto life eternal: that both
he that ſoweth and he that
reapeth may rejoice together.

37 And herein is that ſaying
true, One ſoweth, and another
reapeth.

38 I ſent you to reap that
whereon ye beſtowed no la-
bour: other men laboured,
and ye are entered into their
labours.

39 And many of the Sa-
maritans of that city believed
on him, for the ſaying of the
woman, which teſtified, He
told me all that ever I did.

40 So when the Samaritans
were come unto him, they be-
ſought him that he would tarry
with them. And he abode there
two days.

41 And many more believed
becauſe of his own word;

42 And ſaid unto the woman,
Now we believe, not becauſe
of thy ſaying: for we have
heard *him* ourſelves, and know
that this is indeed the Chriſt,
the Saviour of the world.

43 ¶ Now after two days he
departed thence, and went into
Galilee.

44 For Jeſus himſelf teſtified
that a prophet hath no honour
in his own country.

45 Then when he was come
into Galilee, the Galileans re-
ceived him, having ſeen all the
things that he did at Jeruſalem
at the feaſt: for they alſo went
unto the feaſt.

46 So Jeſus came again into
Cana of Galilee, where he made
the water wine. And there was
a certain nobleman whoſe ſon
was ſick at Capernaum.

47 When he heard that Je-
ſus was come out of Judea into
Galilee, he went unto him,
and beſought him, that he
would come down, and heal his
ſon: for he was at the point of
death.

48 Then ſaid Jeſus unto him,
Except ye ſee ſigns and won-
ders, ye will not believe.

49 The nobleman ſaith unto
him, Sir, come down ere my
child die.

50 Jeſus ſaith unto him, Go
thy way: thy ſon liveth. And
the man believed the word that
Jeſus had ſpoken unto him,
and he went his way.

51 And as he was now going
down, his ſervants met him
and told *him*, ſaying, Thy ſon
liveth.

52 Then enquired he of them
the hour when he began to
amend. And they ſaid unto him.

Yesterday at the seventh hour the fever left him.

53 So the father knew that *it was* at the same hour in the which Jesus said unto him, Thy son liveth. And himself believed, and his whole house.

54 This *is* again the second miracle *that* Jesus did when he was come out of Judea into Galilee.

CHAP. V.

The impotent man healed.

AFTER this there was a feast of the Jews; and Jesus went up to Jerusalem.

2 Now there is at Jerusalem by the sheep *market* a pool, which is called in the Hebrew tongue Bethesda, having five porches.

3 In these lay a great multitude of impotent folk, of blind, halt, withered, waiting for the moving of the water.

4 For an angel went down at a certain season into the pool, and troubled the water: whosoever then first after the troubling of the water stepped in, was made whole of whatsoever disease he had.

5 And a certain man was there which had an infirmity thirty and eight years.

6 When Jesus saw him lie, and knew that he had been now a long time *in that case*, he saith unto him, Wilt thou be made whole?

7 The impotent man answered him, Sir, I have no man, when the water is troubled, to put me into the pool; but while I am coming, another steppeth down before me.

8 Jesus saith unto him, Rise, take up thy bed, and walk.

9 And immediately the man was made whole, and took up his bed, and walked. And on the same day was the sabbath.

10 ¶ The Jews therefore said unto him that was cured, It is the sabbath day: it is not lawful for thee to carry *thy* bed.

11 He answered them, He that made me whole, the same said unto me, Take up thy bed, and walk.

12 Then asked they him, What man is that which said unto thee, Take up thy bed, and walk?

13 And he that was healed wist not who it was. For Jesus had conveyed himself away, a multitude being in *that* place.

14 Afterward Jesus findeth him in the temple, and said unto him, Behold, thou art made whole: sin no more, lest a worse thing come unto thee.

15 The man departed, and told the Jews that it was Jesus which had made him whole.

16 And therefore did the Jews persecute Jesus, and sought to slay him, because he had done these things on the sabbath day.

17 But Jesus answered them, My Father worketh hitherto, and I work.

18 Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because he not only had broken the sabbath, but said also, that God was his Father, making himself equal with God.

19 Then answered Jesus, and said unto them, Verily, verily, I say unto you, The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise.

20 For the Father loveth the Son, and sheweth him all things that himself doeth: and he will

ſhew him greater works than theſe, that ye may marvel.

21 For as the Father raiſeth up the dead, and quickeneth *them*; even ſo the Son quickeneth whom he will.

22 For the Father judgeth no man; but hath committed all judgement unto the Son:

23 That all *men* ſhould honour the Son, even as they honour the Father. He that honoureth not the Son honoureth not the Father which hath ſent him.

24 Verily, verily, I ſay unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that ſent me, hath everlaſting life, and ſhall not come into condemnation, but is paſſed from death unto life.

25 Verily, verily, I ſay unto you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead ſhall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear ſhall live.

26 For as the Father hath life in himſelf, ſo hath he given to the Son to have life in himſelf;

27 And hath given him authority to execute judgement alſo, becauſe he is the Son of man.

28 Marvel not at this: for the hour is coming in the which all that are in the graves ſhall hear his voice,

29 And ſhall come forth, they that have done good, unto the reſurrection of life; and they that have done evil, unto the reſurrection of damnation.

30 I can of mine own ſelf do nothing: as I hear, I judge: and my judgement is juſt; becauſe I ſeek not my own will, but the will of the Father which hath ſent me.

31 If I bear witneſs of myſelf, my witneſs is not true.

32 There is another that beareth witneſs of me, and I know that the witneſs which he witneſſeth of me is true.

33 Ye ſent unto John, and he bare witneſs unto the truth.

34 But I receive not teſtimony from man: but theſe things I ſay that ye might be ſaved.

35 He was a burning and a ſhining light: and ye were willing for a ſeaſon to rejoice in his light.

36 But I have greater witneſs than *that* of John: for the works which the Father hath given me to finiſh, the ſame works that I do, bear witneſs of me, that the Father hath ſent me.

37 And the Father himſelf which hath ſent me hath borne witneſs of me. Ye have neither heard his voice at any time, nor ſeen his ſhape.

38 And ye have not his word abiding in you: for whom he hath ſent, him ye believe not.

39 Search the ſcriptures: for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which teſtify of me.

40 And ye will not come to me, that ye might have life.

41 I receive not honour from men.

42 But I know you, that ye have not the love of God in you.

43 I am come in my Father's name, and ye receive me not: if another ſhall come in his own name, him ye will receive.

44 How can ye believe, which receive honour one of another, and ſeek not the honour that *cometh* from God only?

45 Do not think that I will accuſe you to the Father; there is *one* that accuſeth you, *even* Moſes, in whom ye truſt.

46 For

46 For had ye believed Moses, ye would have believed me: for he wrote of me.
47 But if ye believe not his writings, how shall ye believe my words?

CHAP. VI.

Five thousand miraculously fed.

AFTER these things Jesus went over the sea of Galilee, which is *the sea* of Tiberias.
2 And a great multitude followed him, because they saw his miracles which he did on them that were diseased.
3 And Jesus went up into a mountain, and there he sat with his disciples.
4 And the passover, a feast of the Jews, was nigh.
5 When Jesus then lifted up *his* eyes and saw a great company come unto him, he saith unto Philip, Whence shall we buy bread that these may eat?
6 And this he said to prove him: for he himself knew what he would do.
7 Philip answered him, Two hundred pennyworth of bread is not sufficient for them, that every one of them may take a little.
8 One of his disciples, Andrew, Simon Peter's brother, saith unto him,
9 There is a lad here which hath five barley loaves, and two small fishes: but what are they among so many?
10 And Jesus said, Make the men sit down. Now there was much grass in the place. So the men sat down, in number about five thousand.
11 And Jesus took the loaves: and when he had given thanks, he distributed to the disciples, and the disciples to them that were set down; and likewise of the fishes as much as they would.
12 When they were filled, he said unto his disciples, Gather up the fragments that remain, that nothing be lost.
13 Therefore they gathered *them* together, and filled twelve baskets with the fragments of the five barley loaves, which remained over and above unto them that had eaten.
14 Then those men, when they had seen the miracle that Jesus did, said, This is of a truth that prophet that should come into the world.
15 ¶ When Jesus therefore perceived that they would come and take him by force to make him a king, he departed again into a mountain himself alone.
16 And when even was *now* come, his disciples went down unto the sea,
17 And entered into a ship, and went over the sea toward Capernaum. And it was now dark, and Jesus was not come to them.
18 And the sea arose, by reason of a great wind that blew.
19 So when they had rowed about five and twenty or thirty furlongs, they see Jesus walking on the sea, and drawing nigh unto the ship: and they were afraid.
20 But he saith unto them, It is I, be not afraid.
21 Then they willingly received him into the ship: and immediately the ship was at the land whither they went.
22 ¶ The day following, when the people which stood on the other side of the sea saw that there was none other boat there, save that one whereinto his disciples were entered, and that

that Jeſus went not with his diſciples into the boat, but *that* his diſciples were gone away alone;

23 (Howbeit there came other boats from Tiberias, nigh unto the place where they did eat bread, after that the Lord had given thanks:)

24 When the people therefore ſaw that Jeſus was not there, neither his diſciples, they alſo took ſhipping, and came to Capernaum, ſeeking for Jeſus.

25 And when they had found him on the other ſide of the ſea, they ſaid unto him, Rabbi, when cameſt thou hither?

26 Jeſus anſwered them and ſaid, Verily, verily, I ſay unto you, Ye ſeek me, not becauſe ye ſaw the miracles, but becauſe ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled.

27 Labour not for the meat which periſheth, but for that meat which endureth unto everlaſting life, which the Son of man ſhall give unto you: for him hath God the Father ſealed.

28 Then ſaid they unto him, What ſhall we do, that we might work the works of God?

29 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, This is the work of God, that ye believe on him whom he hath ſent.

30 They ſaid therefore unto him, What ſign ſheweſt thou then, that we may ſee, and believe thee? what doſt thou work?

31 Our fathers did eat manna in the deſert; as it is written, He gave them bread from heaven to eat.

32 Then Jeſus ſaid unto them, Verily, verily, I ſay unto you, Moſes gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.

33 For the bread of God is he which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.

34 Then ſaid they unto him, Lord, evermore give us this bread.

35 And Jeſus ſaid unto them, I am the bread of life. He that cometh to me ſhall never hunger; and he that believeth on me ſhall never thirſt.

36 But I ſaid unto you, That ye alſo have ſeen me, and believe not.

37 All that the Father giveth me ſhall come to me; and him that cometh to me I will in no wiſe caſt out.

38 For I came down from heaven, not to do mine own will, but the will of him that ſent me.

39 And this is the Father's will which hath ſent me, that of all which he hath given me I ſhould loſe nothing, but ſhould raiſe it up again at the laſt day.

40 And this is the will of him that ſent me, That every one which ſeeth the Son and believeth on him, may have everlaſting life: and I will raiſe him up at the laſt day.

41 The Jews then murmured at him, becauſe he ſaid, I am the bread which came down from heaven.

42 And they ſaid, Is not this Jeſus the ſon of Joſeph, whoſe father and mother we know? how is it then that he ſaith, I came down from heaven?

43 Jeſus therefore anſwered and ſaid unto them, Murmur not among yourſelves.

44 No man can come to me, except the Father which hath ſent me draw him: and I will raiſe him up at the laſt day.

45 It is written in the prophets, And they ſhall be all taught of God. Every man therefore that hath heard, and hath learned of the Father cometh unto me.

46 Not that any man hath ſeen the Father, ſave he which is of God, he hath ſeen the Father.

47 Verily, verily, I ſay unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlaſting life.

48 I am that bread of life.

49 Your fathers did eat manna in the wilderneſs, and are dead.

50 This is the bread which cometh down from heaven, that a man may eat thereof, and not die.

51 I am the living bread which came down from heaven: if any man eat of this bread, he ſhall live for ever: and the bread that I will give is my fleſh, which I will give for the life of the world.

52 The Jews therefore ſtrove among themſelves, ſaying, How can this man give us *his* fleſh to eat?

53 Then Jeſus ſaid unto them, Verily, verily, I ſay unto you, Except ye eat the fleſh of the Son of man, and drink his blood, ye have no life in you.

54 Whoſo eateth my fleſh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life: and I will raiſe him up at the laſt day.

55 For my fleſh is meat indeed, and my blood is drink indeed.

56 He that eateth my fleſh, and drinketh my blood, dwelleth in me, and I in him.

57 As the living Father hath ſent me, and I live by the Father: ſo he that eateth me, even he ſhall live by me.

58 This is that bread which came down from heaven: not as your fathers did eat manna, and are dead: he that eateth of this bread ſhall live for ever.

59 Theſe things ſaid he in the ſynagogue, as he taught in Capernaum.

60 Many therefore of his diſciples, when they had heard *this*, ſaid, This is an hard ſaying; who can hear it?

61 When Jeſus knew in himſelf that his diſciples murmured at it, he ſaid unto them, Doth this offend you?

62 *What* and if ye ſhall ſee the Son of man aſcend up where he was before?

63 It is the ſpirit that quickeneth; the fleſh profiteth nothing: the words that I ſpeak unto you, *they* are ſpirit, and *they* are life.

64 But there are ſome of you that believe not. For Jeſus knew from the beginning who they were that believed not, and who ſhould betray him.

65 And he ſaid, Therefore ſaid I unto you, That no man can come unto me except it were given unto him of my Father.

66 ¶ From that *time* many of his diſciples went back, and walked no more with him.

67 Then ſaid Jeſus unto the twelve, Will ye alſo go away?

68 Then Simon Peter anſwered him, Lord, to whom ſhall we go? thou haſt the words of eternal life.

69 And we believe and are ſure that thou art that Chriſt, the Son of the living God.

70 Jeſus anſwered them, Have not I choſen you twelve, and one of you is a devil?

71 He ſpake of Judas Iſcariot

the

the ſon of Simon: for he it was that ſhould betray him, being one of the twelve.

CHAP. VII.

Chriſt reproveth ambition.

AFTER theſe things Jeſus walked in Galilee: for he would not walk in Jewry, becauſe the Jews ſought to kill him.

2 Now the Jews' feaſt of tabernacles was at hand.

3 His brethren therefore ſaid unto him, Depart hence, and go into Judea, that thy diſciples alſo may ſee the works that thou doeſt.

4 For *there is* no man *that* doeth any thing in ſecret, and he himſelf ſeeketh to be known openly. If thou do theſe things ſhew thyſelf to the world.

5 For neither did his brethren believe in him.

6 Then Jeſus ſaid unto them, My time is not yet come: but your time is alway ready.

7 The world cannot hate you; but me it hateth, becauſe I teſtify of it that the works thereof are evil.

8 Go ye up unto this feaſt: I go not up yet unto this feaſt; for my time is not yet full come.

9 When he had ſaid theſe words unto them, he abode *ſtill* in Galilee.

10 ¶ But when his brethren were gone up, then went he alſo up unto the feaſt, not openly, but as it were in ſecret.

11 Then the Jews ſought him at the feaſt, and ſaid, Where is he?

12 And there was much murmuring among the people concerning him. For ſome ſaid, He is a good man: others ſaid, Nay; but he deceiveth the people.

13 Howbeit no man ſpake openly of him for fear of the Jews.

14 ¶ Now about the midſt of the feaſt Jeſus went up into the temple, and taught.

15 And the Jews marvelled, ſaying, How knoweth this man letters, having never learned?

16 Jeſus anſwered them and ſaid, My doctrine is not mine, but his that ſent me.

17 If any man will do his will, he ſhall know of the doctrine, whether it be of God, or *whether* I ſpeak of myſelf.

18 He that ſpeaketh of himſelf ſeeketh his own glory: but he that ſeeketh his glory that ſent him, the ſame is true, and no unrighteouſneſs is in him.

19 Did not Moſes give you the law, and *yet* none of you keepeth the law? Why go ye about to kill me?

20 The people anſwered and ſaid, Thou haſt a devil: who goeth about to kill thee?

21 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid unto them, I have done one work, and ye all marvel.

22 Moſes therefore gave unto you circumciſion; (not becauſe it is of Moſes, but of the fathers;) and ye on the ſabbath day circumciſe a man.

23 If a man on the ſabbath day receive circumciſion, that the law of Moſes ſhould not be broken: are ye angry at me becauſe I have made a man every whit whole on the ſabbath day?

24 Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgement.

25 Then ſaid ſome of them of Jeruſalem, Is not this he whom they ſeek to kill?

26 But, lo, he ſpeaketh boldly, and they ſay nothing unto him.

Do the rulers know indeed that this is the very Chriſt?

27 Howbeit we know this man whence he is: but when Chriſt cometh, no man knoweth whence he is.

28 Then cried Jeſus in the temple, as he taught, ſaying, Ye both know me, and ye know whence I am; and I am not come of myſelf, but he that ſent me is true, whom ye know not.

29 But I know him: for I am from him, and he hath ſent me.

30 Then they ſought to take him: but no man laid hands on him, becauſe his hour was not yet come.

31 And many of the people believed on him, and ſaid, When Chriſt cometh, will he do more miracles than theſe which this *man* hath done?

32 The Phariſees heard that the people murmured ſuch things concerning him; and the Phariſees and the chief prieſts ſent officers to take him.

33 Then ſaid Jeſus unto them, Yet a little while am I with you, and *then* I go unto him that ſent me.

34 Ye ſhall ſeek me, and ſhall not find *me:* and where I am, *thither* ye cannot come.

35 Then ſaid the Jews among themſelves, Whither will he go, that we ſhall not find him? will he go unto the diſperſed among the Gentiles, and teach the Gentiles?

36 What *manner of* ſaying is this that he ſaid, Ye ſhall ſeek me, and ſhall not find *me:* and where I am, *thither* ye cannot come?

37 In the laſt day, that great *day* of the feaſt, Jeſus ſtood and cried, ſaying, If any man thirſt, let him come unto me, and drink.

38 He that believeth on me, as the ſcripture hath ſaid, out of his belly ſhall flow rivers of living water.

39 (But this ſpake he of the Spirit, which they that believe on him ſhould receive. For the Holy Ghoſt was not yet *given;* becauſe that Jeſus was not yet glorified.)

40 ¶ Many of the people therefore, when they heard this ſaying, ſaid, Of a truth this is the Prophet.

41 Others ſaid, This is the Chriſt. But ſome ſaid, Shall Chriſt come out of Galilee?

42 Hath not the ſcripture ſaid, That Chriſt cometh of the ſeed of David, and out of the town of Bethlehem, where David was?

43 So there was a diviſion among the people becauſe of him.

44 And ſome of them would have taken him: but no man laid hands on him.

45 ¶ Then came the officers to the chief prieſts and Phariſees; and they ſaid unto them, Why have ye not brought him?

46 The officers anſwered, Never man ſpake like this man.

47 Then anſwered them the Phariſees, Are ye alſo deceived?

48 Have any of the rulers or of the Phariſees believed on him?

49 But this people who knoweth not the law are curſed.

50 Nicodemus ſaith unto them, (he that came to Jeſus by night, being one of them,)

51 Doth our law judge *any* man, before it hear him, and know what he doeth?

52 They anſwered and ſaid unto him, Art thou alſo of Galilee? Search and look: for

out

out of Galilee ariseth no prophet.
53 And every man went unto his own house.

CHAP. VIII.

Of the adulterous woman.

JESUS went unto the mount of Olives.
2 And early in the morning he came again into the temple, and all the people came unto him; and he sat down, and taught them.
3 And the scribes and Pharisees brought unto him a woman taken in adultery: and when they had set her in the midst,
4 They say unto him, Master, this woman was taken in adultery, in the very act.
5 Now Moses in the law commanded us, that such should be stoned: but what sayest thou?
6 This they said, tempting him, that they might have to accuse him. But Jesus stooped down, and with *his* finger wrote on the ground, *as though he heard them not.*
7 So when they continued asking him, he lifted up himself, and said unto them, He that is without sin among you, let him first cast a stone at her.
8 And again he stooped down, and wrote on the ground.
9 And they which heard *it*, being convicted by *their own* conscience, went out one by one, beginning at the eldest, *even* unto the last: and Jesus was left alone, and the woman standing in the midst.
10 When Jesus had lifted up himself, and saw none but the woman, he said unto her, Woman, where are those thine accusers? hath no man condemned thee?
11 She said, No man, Lord. And Jesus said unto her, Neither do I condemn thee: go, and sin no more.
12 ¶ Then spake Jesus again unto them, saying, I am the light of the world: he that followeth me shall not walk in darkness, but shall have the light of life.
13 The Pharisees therefore said unto him, Thou bearest record of thyself; thy record is not true.
14 Jesus answered and said unto them, Though I bear record of myself, *yet* my record is true: for I know whence I came, and whither I go; but ye cannot tell whence I come, and whither I go.
15 Ye judge after the flesh; I judge no man.
16 And yet if I judge, my judgement is true: for I am not alone, but I and the Father that sent me.
17 It is also written in your law, that the testimony of two men is true.
18 I am one that bear witness of myself, and the Father that sent me beareth witness of me.
19 Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father? Jesus answered, Ye neither know me, nor my Father; if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also.
20 These words spake Jesus in the treasury as he taught in the temple: and no man laid hands on him; for his hour was not yet come.
21 Then said Jesus again unto them, I go my way, and ye shall seek me, and shall die in your sins. Whither I go, ye cannot come.

22 Then ſaid the Jews, Will
he kill himſelf? becauſe he ſaith,
Whither I go, ye cannot come.
23 And he ſaid unto them,
Ye are from beneath; I am from
above: ye are of this world; I
am not of this world.
24 I ſaid therefore unto you,
That ye ſhall die in your ſins:
for if ye believe not that I am
he, ye ſhall die in your ſins.
25 Then ſaid they unto him,
Who art thou? And Jeſus ſaith
unto them, Even *the ſame* that
I ſaid unto you from the begin-
ning.
26 I have many things to ſay
and to judge of you: but he
that ſent me is true; and I
ſpeak to the world thoſe things
which I have heard of him.
27 They underſtood not that
he ſpake to them of the Father.
28 Then ſaid Jeſus unto
them, When ye have lifted up
the Son of man, then ſhall ye
know that I am *he*, and *that* I do
nothing of myſelf; but as my
Father hath taught me, I
ſpeak theſe things.
29 And he that ſent me is
with me: the Father hath not
left me alone; for I do always
thoſe things that pleaſe him.
30 As he ſpake theſe words,
many believed on him.
31 Then ſaid Jeſus to thoſe
Jews which believed on him, If
ye continue in my word, *then*
are ye my diſciples indeed;
32 And ye ſhall know the
truth, and the truth ſhall make
you free.
33 They anſwered him, We
be Abraham's ſeed, and were
never in bondage to any man:
how ſayeſt thou, Ye ſhall be
made free?
34 Jeſus anſwered them, Ve-
rily, verily, I ſay unto you,
Whoſoever committeth ſin is
the ſervant of ſin.
35 And the ſervant abideth
not in the houſe for ever: *but*
the Son abideth ever.
36 If the ſon therefore ſhall
make you free, ye ſhall be free
indeed.
37 I know that ye are Abra-
ham's ſeed; but ye ſeek to kill
me, becauſe my word hath no
place in you.
38 I ſpeak that which I have
ſeen with my Father: and ye
do that which ye have ſeen with
your father.
39 They anſwered and ſaid
unto him, Abraham is our fa-
ther. Jeſus ſaith unto them, If
ye were Abraham's children, ye
would do the works of Abra-
ham.
40 But now ye ſeek to kill
me, a man that hath told you
the truth, which I have heard of
God: this did not Abraham.
41 Ye do the deeds of your
father. Then ſaid they to him,
We be not born of fornica-
tion: we have one Father, *even*
God.
42 Jeſus ſaid unto them, If
God were your Father, ye
would love me: for I proceed-
ed forth and came from God;
neither came I of myſelf, but
he ſent me.
43 Why do ye not underſtand
my ſpeech? *even* becauſe ye
cannot hear my word.
44 Ye are of *your* father the
devil, and the luſts of your fa-
ther ye will do. He was a mur-
derer from the beginning, and
abode not in the truth, becauſe
there is no truth in him. When
he ſpeaketh a lie, he ſpeaketh
of his own: for he is a liar, and
the father of it.
45 And becauſe I tell *you* the
truth,

truth, ye believe me not.
46 Which of you convinceth me of ſin? and if I ſay the truth, why do ye not believe me?
47 He that is of God heareth God's words: ye therefore hear *them* not, becauſe ye are not of God.
48 Then anſwered the Jews, and ſaid unto him, Say we not well that thou art a Samaritan, and haſt a devil?
49 Jeſus anſwered, I have not a devil; but I honour my Father, and ye do diſhonour me.
50 And I ſeek not mine own glory: there is one that ſeeketh and judgeth.
51 Verily, verily, I ſay unto you, If a man keep my ſaying, he ſhall never ſee death.
52 Then ſaid the Jews unto him, Now we know that thou haſt a devil. Abraham is dead, and the prophets; and thou ſayeſt, If a man keep my ſaying, he ſhall never taſte of death.
53 Art thou greater than our father Abraham, which is dead? and the prophets are dead: whom makeſt thou thyſelf?
54 Jeſus anſwered, If I honour myſelf, my honour is nothing: it is my Father that honoureth me; of whom ye ſay, that he is your God:
55 Yet ye have not known him: but I know him. And if I ſhould ſay, I know him not, I ſhall be a liar like unto you: but I know him, and keep his ſaying.
56 Your father Abraham rejoiced to ſee my day: and he ſaw *it*, and was glad.
57 Then ſaid the Jews unto him, Thou art not yet fifty years old, and haſt thou ſeen Abraham?
58 Jeſus ſaid unto them, Verily, verily, I ſay unto you, Before Abraham was, I am.
59 Then took they up ſtones to caſt at him; but Jeſus hid himſelf, and went out of the temple, going through the midſt of them, and ſo paſſed by.

CHAP. IX.

A blind man reſtored to ſight.

AND as *Jeſus* paſſed by, he ſaw a man which was blind from *his* birth.
2 And his diſciples aſked him, ſaying, Maſter, who did ſin, this man, or his parents, that he was born blind?
3 Jeſus anſwered, Neither hath this man ſinned, nor his parents: but that the works of God ſhould be made manifeſt in him.
4 I muſt work the works of him that ſent me while it is day: the night cometh, when no man can work.
5 As long as I am in the world, I am the light of the world.
6 When he had thus ſpoken, he ſpat on the ground, and made clay of the ſpittle, and he anointed the eyes of the blind man with the clay,
7 And ſaid unto him, Go, waſh in the pool of Siloam, (which is by interpretation, Sent.) He went his way therefore, and waſhed, and came ſeeing.
8 The neighbours therefore, and they which before had ſeen him that he was blind, ſaid, Is not this he that ſat and begged?
9 Some ſaid, This is he: others *ſaid*, He is like him: *but* he ſaid, I am *he*.
10 Therefore ſaid they unto him, How were thine eyes opened?

11 He anſwered and ſaid, A
man that is called Jeſus made
clay, and anointed mine eyes,
and ſaid unto me, Go to the
pool of Siloam, and waſh. And
I went and waſhed, and I re-
ceived ſight.

12 Then ſaid they unto him,
Where is he? He ſaid, I know
not.

13 ¶ They brought to the
Phariſees him that aforetime
was blind.

14 And it was the ſabbath
day when Jeſus made the clay,
and opened his eyes.

15 Then again the Phariſees
alſo aſked him, how he had re-
ceived his ſight? He ſaid unto
them, He put clay upon mine
eyes, and I waſhed, and do ſee.

16 Therefore ſaid ſome of
the Phariſees, This man is not
of God, becauſe he keepeth not
the ſabbath day. Others ſaid,
How can a man that is a ſinner
do ſuch miracles? And there
was a diviſion among them.

17 They ſay unto the blind
man again, What ſayeſt thou of
him, that he hath opened thine
eyes? He ſaid, He is a prophet.

18 But the Jews did not be-
lieve concerning him, that he
had been blind, and received
his ſight, until they called the
parents of him that had re-
ceived his ſight.

19 And they aſked them,
ſaying, Is this your ſon, who
ye ſay was born blind? how
then doth he now ſee?

20 His parents anſwered them
and ſaid, We know that this
is our ſon, and that he was born
blind:

21 But by what means he
now ſeeth, we know not; or
who hath opened his eyes, we
know not: he is of age; aſk
him: he ſhall ſpeak for himſelf.

22 Theſe *words* ſpake his
parents, becauſe they feared
the Jews: for the Jews had
agreed already, that if any man
did confeſs that he was Chriſt,
he ſhould be put out of the ſy-
nagogue.

23 Therefore ſaid his parents,
He is of age; aſk him.

24 Then again called they
the man that was blind, and
ſaid unto him, Give God the
praiſe; we know that this man
is a ſinner.

25 He anſwered and ſaid,
Whether he be a ſinner *or no*, I
know not: one thing I know,
that, whereas I was blind, now
I ſee.

26 Then ſaid they to him
again, What did he to thee?
how opened he thine eyes?

27 He anſwered them, I have
told you already, and ye did
not hear: wherefore would ye
hear *it* again? will ye alſo be
his diſciples?

28 Then they reviled him,
and ſaid, Thou art his diſciple;
but we are Moſes' diſciples.

29 We know that God ſpake
unto Moſes: *as for* this *fellow*,
we know not from whence he is.

30 The man anſwered and
ſaid unto them, Why herein is a
marvellous thing, that ye know
not from whence he is, and *yet*
he hath opened mine eyes.

31 Now we know that God
heareth not ſinners: but if any
man be a worſhipper of God,
and doeth his will, him he
heareth.

32 Since the world began,
was it not heard that any man
opened the eyes of one that
was born blind.

33 If this man were not of
God, he could do nothing.

34 They anſwered and ſaid
unto him, Thou waſt altoge-
ther born in ſins, and doſt thou
teach us? And they caſt him
out.
35 ¶ Jeſus heard that they had
caſt him out; and when he had
found him, he ſaid unto him,
Doſt thou believe on the Son
of God?
36 He anſwered and ſaid,
Who is he, Lord, that I might
believe on him?
37 And Jeſus ſaid unto him,
Thou haſt both ſeen him, and
it is he that talketh with thee.
38 And he ſaid, Lord, I be-
lieve. And he worſhipped him.
39 And Jeſus ſaid, For
judgement I am come into this
world: that they which ſee not
might ſee, and that they which
ſee might be made blind.
40 And *ſome* of the Phariſees
which were with him heard
theſe words, and ſaid unto him,
Are we blind alſo?
41 Jeſus ſaid unto them, If
ye were blind, ye ſhould have
no ſin: but now ye ſay, We ſee;
therefore your ſin remaineth.

CHAP. X.

Chriſt the good ſhepherd.

VERILY, verily, I ſay unto
you, He that entereth not
by the door into the ſheepfold,
but climbeth up ſome other
way, the ſame is a thief and a
robber.
2 But he that entereth in by
the door is the ſhepherd of the
ſheep.
3 To him the porter open-
eth, and the ſheep hear his
voice: and he calleth his own
ſheep by name, and leadeth
them out.
4 And when he putteth forth
his own ſheep, he goeth before
them, and the ſheep follow him;
for they know his voice.
5 And a ſtranger will they
not follow, but will flee from
him: for they know not the
voice of ſtrangers.
6 This parable ſpake Jeſus
unto them: but they under-
ſtood not what things they were
which he ſpake unto them.
7 Then ſaid Jeſus unto them
again, Verily, verily, I ſay unto
you, I am the door of the ſheep.
8 All that ever came before
me are thieves and robbers: but
the ſheep did not hear them.
9 I am the door: by me if
any man enter in, he ſhall be
ſaved, and ſhall go in and out,
and find paſture.
10 The thief cometh not but
for to ſteal, and to kill, and
to deſtroy: I am come that
they might have life, and that
they might have *it* more abun-
dantly.
11 I am the good ſhepherd.
The good ſhepherd giveth his
life for the ſheep.
12 But he that is an hireling
and not the ſhepherd, whoſe
own the ſheep are not, ſeeth the
wolf coming, and leaveth the
ſheep, and fleeth; and the wolf
catcheth them, and ſcattereth
the ſheep.
13 The hireling fleeth becauſe
he is an hireling, and careth
not for the ſheep.
14 I am the good ſhepherd,
and know my *ſheep*, and am
known of mine.
15 As the Father knoweth
me, even ſo know I the Father:
and I lay down my life for the
ſheep.
16 And other ſheep I have
which are not of this fold:
them alſo I muſt bring, and
they ſhall hear my voice: and
there ſhall be one fold, *and* one
ſhepherd.

17 Therefore doth my Father love me, becaufe I lay down my life, that I might take it again.

18 No man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myfelf. I have power to lay it down, and I have power to take it again. This commandment have I received of my Father.

19 ¶ There was a divifion therefore again among the Jews for thefe fayings.

20 And many of them faid, He hath a devil, and is mad; why hear ye him?

21 Others faid, Thefe are not the words of him that hath a devil. Can a devil open the eyes of the blind?

22 ¶ And it was at Jerufalem the feaft of the dedication, and it was winter.

23 And Jefus walked in the temple in Solomon's porch.

24 Then came the Jews round about him, and faid unto him, How long doft thou make us to doubt? If thou be the Chrift, tell us plainly.

25 Jefus anfwered them, I told you, and ye believed not. The works that I do in my Father's name, they bear witnefs of me.

26 But ye believe not, becaufe ye are not of my fheep, as I faid unto you.

27 My fheep hear my voice, and I know them, and they follow me:

28 And I give unto them eternal life; and they fhall never perifh, neither fhall any *man* pluck them out of my hand.

29 My Father which gave *them* me, is greater than all; and no *man* is able to pluck *them* out of my Father's hand.

30 I and *my* Father are one.

31 Then the Jews took up ftones again to ftone him.

32 Jefus anfwered them, Many good works have I fhewed you from my Father; for which of thofe works do ye ftone me?

33 The Jews anfwered him, faying, For a good work we ftone thee not: but for blafphemy; and becaufe that thou, being a man, makeft thyfelf God.

34 Jefus anfwered them, Is it not written in your law, I faid, Ye are gods?

35 If he called them gods unto whom the word of God came, and the fcripture cannot be broken;

36 Say ye of him, whom the Father hath fanctified, and fent into the world, Thou blafphemeft; becaufe I faid, I am the Son of God?

37 If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not.

38 But if I do, though ye believe not me, believe the works: that ye may know and believe that the Father *is* in me, and I in him.

39 Therefore they fought again to take him: but he efcaped out of their hand,

40 And went away again beyond Jordan, into the place where John at firft baptized; and there he abode.

41 And many reforted unto him, and faid, John did no miracle: but all things that John fpake of this man were true.

42 And many believed on him there.

CHAP. XI.

Lazarus raifed from the dead.

NOW a certain *man* was fick *named* Lazarus, of Bethany, the town of Mary and her

her ſiſter Martha.
2 (It was *that* Mary which anointed the Lord with ointment, and wiped his feet with her hair, whoſe brother Lazarus was ſick.)
3 Therefore his ſiſters ſent unto him, ſaying, Lord, behold, he whom thou loveſt is ſick.
4 When Jeſus heard *that*, he ſaid, This ſickneſs is not unto death, but for the glory of God, that the Son of God might be glorified thereby.
5 Now Jeſus loved Martha, and her ſiſter, and Lazarus.
6 When he had heard therefore that he was ſick, he abode two days ſtill in the ſame place where he was.
7 Then after that ſaith he to *his* diſciples, Let us go into Judea again.
8 *His* diſciples ſay unto him, Maſter, the Jews of late ſought to ſtone thee; and goeſt thou thither again?
9 Jeſus anſwered, Are there not twelve hours in the day? If any man walk in the day, he ſtumbleth not, becauſe he ſeeth the light of this world.
10 But if a man walk in the night he ſtumbleth, becauſe there is no light in him.
11 Theſe things ſaid he: and after that he ſaith unto them, Our friend Lazarus ſleepeth; but I go that I may awake him out of ſleep.
12 Then ſaid his diſciples, Lord, if he ſleep, he ſhall do well.
13 Howbeit Jeſus ſpake of his death: but they thought that he had ſpoken of taking of reſt in ſleep.
14 Then ſaid Jeſus unto them plainly, Lazarus is dead.
15 And I am glad for your ſakes that I was not there, to the intent ye may believe: nevertheleſs let us go unto him.
16 Then ſaid Thomas, which is called Didymus, unto his fellowdiſciples, Let us alſo go, that we may die with him,
17 Then when Jeſus came, he found that he had *lain* in the grave four days already.
18 Now Bethany was nigh unto Jeruſalem, about fifteen furlongs off:
19 And many of the Jews came to Martha and Mary, to comfort them concerning their brother.
20 Then Martha, as ſoon as ſhe heard that Jeſus was coming, went and met him: but Mary ſat *ſtill* in the houſe.
21 Then ſaid Martha unto Jeſus, Lord, if thou hadſt been here, my brother had not died.
22 But I know, that even now, whatſoever thou wilt aſk of God, God will give *it* thee.
23 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Thy brother ſhall riſe again.
24 Martha ſaith unto him, I know that he ſhall riſe again in the reſurrection at the laſt day.
25 Jeſus ſaid unto her, I am the reſurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me, though he were dead, yet ſhall he live:
26 And whoſoever liveth and believeth in me ſhall never die. Believeſt thou this?
27 She ſaith unto him, Yea, Lord, I believe that thou art the Chriſt, the Son of God, which ſhould come into the world.
28 And when ſhe had ſo ſaid, ſhe went her way, and called Mary her ſiſter ſecretly, ſaying, The Maſter is come, and calleth for thee.

29 As ſoon as ſhe heard *that*, ſhe aroſe quickly, and came unto him.

30 Now Jeſus was not yet come into the town, but was in that place where Martha met him.

31 The Jews then which were with her in the houſe, and comforted her, when they ſaw Mary, that ſhe aroſe up haſtily and went out, followed her, ſaying, She goeth unto the grave to weep there.

32 Then when Mary was come where Jeſus was, and ſaw him, ſhe fell down at his feet, ſaying unto him, Lord, if thou hadſt been here, my brother had not died.

33 When Jeſus therefore ſaw her weeping, and the Jews alſo weeping which came with her, he groaned in the ſpirit and was troubled,

34 And ſaid, Where have ye laid him? They ſaid unto him, Lord, come and ſee.

35 Jeſus wept.

36 Then ſaid the Jews, Behold, how he loved him!

37 And ſome of them ſaid, Could not this man, which opened the eyes of the blind, have cauſed that even this man ſhould not have died?

38 Jeſus therefore again groaning in himſelf, cometh to the grave: it was a cave, and a ſtone lay upon it.

39 Jeſus ſaid, Take ye away the ſtone. Martha, the ſiſter of him that was dead, ſaith unto him, Lord, by this time he ſtinketh: for he hath been *dead* four days.

40 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Said I not unto thee, that, if thou wouldeſt believe, thou ſhouldeſt ſee the glory of God?

41 Then they took away the ſtone *from the place* where the dead was laid. And Jeſus lifted up *his* eyes, and ſaid, Father, I thank thee that thou haſt heard me.

42 And I knew that thou heareſt me always: but becauſe of the people which ſtand by I ſaid *it*, that they may believe that thou haſt ſent me.

43 And when he thus had ſpoken, he cried with a loud voice, Lazarus, come forth.

44 And he that was dead came forth, bound hand and foot with graveclothes: and his face was bound about with a napkin. Jeſus ſaith unto them, Looſe him, and let him go.

45 Then many of the Jews which came to Mary, and had ſeen the things which Jeſus did, believed on him.

46 But ſome of them went their ways to the Phariſees, and told them what things Jeſus had done.

47 ¶ Then gathered the chief prieſts and the Phariſees a council, and ſaid, What do we? for this man doeth many miracles.

48 If we let him thus alone, all *men* will believe on him; and the Romans ſhall come and take away both our place and nation.

49 And one of them, *named* Caiaphas, being the high prieſt that ſame year, ſaid unto them, Ye know nothing at all,

50 Nor conſider that it is expedient for us, that one man ſhould die for the people, and that the whole nation periſh not.

51 And this ſpake he not of himſelf: but, being high prieſt that year, he propheſied that Jeſus ſhould die for that nation;

52 And

52 And not for that nation only, but that alſo he ſhould gather together in one the children of God that were ſcattered abroad.

53 Then from that day forth they took council together for to put him to death.

54 Jeſus therefore walked no more openly among the Jews; but went thence unto a country near to the wilderneſs, into a city called Ephraim, and there continued with his diſciples.

55 And the Jews' paſſover was nigh at hand: and many went out of the country up to Jeruſalem before the paſſover to purify themſelves.

56 Then ſought they for Jeſus, and ſpake among themſelves as they ſtood in the temple, What think ye, that he will not come to the feaſt?

57 Now both the chief prieſts and the Phariſees had given a commandment, that if any man knew where he were, he ſhould ſhew *it*, that they might take him.

CHAP. XII.

Mary anointeth Chriſt's feet.

THEN Jeſus ſix days before the paſſover came to Bethany, where Lazarus was which had been dead, whom he raiſed from the dead.

2 There they made him a ſupper; and Martha ſerved: but Lazarus was one of them that ſat at the table with him.

3 Then took Mary a pound of ointment of ſpikenard, very coſtly, and anointed the feet of Jeſus, and wiped his feet with her hair: and the houſe was filled with the odour of the ointment.

4 Then ſaith one of his diſciples, Judas Iſcariot, Simon's *ſon*, which ſhould betray him,

5 Why was not this ointment ſold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor?

6 This he ſaid, not that he cared for the poor; but becauſe he was a thief, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein.

7 Then ſaid Jeſus, Let her alone: againſt the day of my burying hath ſhe kept this.

8 For the poor always ye have with you; but me ye have not always.

9 Much people of the Jews therefore knew that he was there: and they came, not for Jeſus' ſake only, but that they might ſee Lazarus alſo, whom he had raiſed from the dead.

10 But the chief prieſts conſulted that they might put Lazarus alſo to death;

11 Becauſe that by reaſon of him many of the Jews went away, and believed on Jeſus.

12 ¶ On the next day much people that were come to the feaſt, when they heard that Jeſus was coming to Jeruſalem,

13 Took branches of palm trees, and went forth to meet him, and cried, Hoſanna: Bleſſed *is* the King of Iſrael that cometh in the name of the Lord.

14 And Jeſus, when he had found a young aſs, ſat thereon, as it is written,

15 Fear not, daughter of Sion: behold, thy King cometh, ſitting on an aſs's colt.

16 Theſe things underſtood not his diſciples at the firſt: but when Jeſus was glorified, then remembered they that theſe things were written of him, and *that* they had done theſe things unto him.

17 The people therefore that

was with him when he called
Lazarus out of his grave, and
raiſed him from the dead, bare
record.
18 For this cauſe the people
alſo met him, for that they heard
that he had done this miracle.
19 The Phariſees therefore
ſaid among themſelves, Per-
ceive ye how ye prevail no-
thing? behold, the world is
gone after him.
20 ¶ And there were certain
Greeks among them that came
up to worſhip at the feaſt:
21 The ſame came therefore
to Philip, which was of Beth-
ſaida of Galilee, and deſired him,
ſaying, Sir, we would ſee Jeſus.
22 Philip cometh and telleth
Andrew: and again Andrew
and Philip tell Jeſus.
23 And Jeſus anſwered them,
ſaying, The hour is come that
the Son of man ſhould be glo-
rified.
24 Verily, verily, I ſay unto
you, Except a corn of wheat
fall into the ground and die, it
abideth alone: but if it die, it
bringeth forth much fruit.
25 He that loveth his life
ſhall loſe it: and he that hateth
his life in this world ſhall keep
it unto life eternal.
26 If any man ſerve me, let
him follow me: and where I
am, there ſhall alſo my ſervant
be: if any man ſerve me, him
will *my* Father honour.
27 Now is my ſoul troubled,
and what ſhall I ſay? Father,
ſave me from this hour: but
for this cauſe came I unto this
hour.
28 Father, glorify thy name.
Then came there a voice from
heaven, *ſaying*, I have both
glorified *it*, and will glorify *it*
again.
29 The people therefore that
ſtood by, and heard *it*, ſaid
that it thundered: others ſaid,
An angel ſpake to him.
30 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid,
This voice came not becauſe
of me, but for your ſakes.
31 Now is the judgement of
this world: now ſhall the prince
of this world be caſt out.
32 And I, if I be lifted up
from the earth, will draw all
men unto me.
33 This he ſaid, ſignifying
what death he ſhould die.
34 The people anſwered
him, We have heard out of the
law that Chriſt abideth for
ever: and how ſayeſt thou, The
Son of man muſt be lifted up?
Who is this Son of man?
35 Then Jeſus ſaid unto them,
Yet a little while is the light
with you: walk while ye have
the light, leſt darkneſs come
upon you: for he that walk-
eth in darkneſs knoweth not
whither he goeth.
36 While ye have light be-
lieve in the light, that ye may
be the children of light. Theſe
things ſpake Jeſus, and departed,
and did hide himſelf from them.
37 But though he had done
ſo many miracles before them,
yet they believed not on him:
38 That the ſaying of Eſaias
the prophet might be fulfilled,
which he ſpake, Lord, who
hath believed our report? and
to whom hath the arm of the
Lord been revealed?
39 Therefore they could not
believe, becauſe that Eſaias ſaid
again,
40 He hath blinded their eyes,
and hardened their heart;
that they ſhould not ſee with
their eyes, nor underſtand with
their heart, and be converted,
and

and I ſhould heal them.
41 Theſe things ſaid Eſaias
when he ſaw his glory, and
ſpake of him.
42 Nevertheleſs among the
chief rulers alſo many believed
on him; but becauſe of the
Phariſees, they did not confeſs
him, leſt they ſhould be put out
of the ſynagogue:
43 For they loved the praiſe
of men more than the praiſe
of God.
44 Jeſus cried and ſaid, He
that believeth on me, believ-
eth not on me, but on him that
ſent me.
45 And he that ſeeth me,
ſeeth him that ſent me.
46 I am come a light into
the world, that whoſoever be-
lieveth on me ſhould not abide
in darkneſs.
47 And if any man hear my
words, and believe not, I judge
him not: for I came not to
judge the world, but to ſave
the world.
48 He that rejecteth me,
and receiveth not my words,
hath one that judgeth him:
the word that I have ſpoken,
the ſame ſhall judge him in the
laſt day.
49 For I have not ſpoken of
myſelf: but the Father which
ſent me, he gave me a com-
mandment, what I ſhould ſay,
and what I ſhould ſpeak.
50 And I know that his com-
mandment is life everlaſting:
whatſoever I ſpeak therefore,
even as the Father ſaid unto
me, ſo I ſpeak.

CHAP. XIII.

Jeſus waſheth his diſciples' feet.

NOW before the feaſt of
the paſſover, when Jeſus
knew that his hour was come
that he ſhould depart out of
this world unto the Father,
having loved his own which
were in the world, he loved
them unto the end.
2 And ſupper being ended,
the devil having now put into
the heart of Judas Iſcariot, Si-
mon's *ſon*, to betray him;
3 Jeſus knowing that the Fa-
ther had given all things into
his hands, and that he was come
from God, and went to God;
4 He riſeth from ſupper, and
laid aſide his garments; and took
a towel, and girded himſelf.
5 After that he poureth wa-
ter into a baſon, and began to
waſh the diſciples' feet, and to
wipe *them* with the towel
wherewith he was girded.
6 Then cometh he to Simon
Peter: and Peter ſaid unto him,
Lord, doſt thou waſh my feet?
7 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid
unto him, What I do, thou
knoweſt not now; but thou
ſhalt know hereafter.
8 Peter ſaith unto him, Thou
ſhalt never waſh my feet. Jeſus
anſwered him, If I waſh thee
not, thou haſt no part with me.
9 Simon Peter ſaith unto him,
Lord, not my feet only, but al-
ſo *my* hands and *my* head.
10 Jeſus ſaith to him, He
that is waſhed, needeth not
ſave to waſh *his* feet, but is
clean every whit: and ye are
clean, but not all.
11 For he knew who ſhould
betray him; therefore ſaid he,
Ye are not all clean.
12 So after he had waſhed
their feet, and had taken his gar-
ments, and was ſet down again,
he ſaid unto them, Know ye
what I have done to you?
13 Ye call me Maſter and
Lord: and ye ſay well: for *ſo* I
am.

14 If I then, *your* Lord and Maſter, have waſhed your feet: ye alſo ought to waſh one another's feet.

15 For I have given you an example, that ye ſhould do as I have done to you.

16 Verily, verily, I ſay unto you, The ſervant is not greater than his Lord: neither he that is ſent, greater than he that ſent him.

17 If ye know theſe things, happy are ye if ye do them.

18 I ſpeak not of you all; I know whom I have choſen: but that the ſcripture may be fulfilled, He that eateth bread with me hath lifted up his heel againſt me.

19 Now I tell you before it come, that, when it is come to paſs, ye may believe that I am *he*.

20 Verily, verily, I ſay unto you, He that receiveth whomſoever I ſend, receiveth me; and he that receiveth me, receiveth him that ſent me.

21 When Jeſus had thus ſaid, he was troubled in ſpirit, and teſtified, and ſaid, Verily, verily, I ſay unto you, That one of you ſhall betray me.

22 Then the diſciples looked one on another, doubting of whom he ſpake.

23 Now there was leaning on Jeſus' boſom one of his diſciples, whom Jeſus loved.

24 Simon Peter therefore beckoned to him that he ſhould aſk who it ſhould be of whom he ſpake.

25 He then lying on Jeſus' breaſt ſaith unto him, Lord, who is it?

26 Jeſus anſwered, He it is to whom I ſhall give a ſop, when I have dipped *it*. And when he had dipped the ſop, he gave *it* to Judas Iſcariot, *the ſon* of Simon.

27 And after the ſop, Satan entered into him. Then ſaid Jeſus unto him, That thou doeſt, do quickly.

28 Now no man at the table knew for what intent he ſpake this unto him.

29 For ſome *of them* thought, becauſe Judas had the bag, that Jeſus had ſaid unto him, Buy *thoſe things* that we have need of againſt the feaſt; or, that he ſhould give ſomething to the poor.

30 He then having received the ſop, went immediately out. And it was night.

31 Therefore when he was gone out, Jeſus ſaid, Now is the Son of man glorified, and God is glorified in him.

32 If God be glorified in him, God ſhall alſo glorify him in himſelf, and ſhall ſtraightway glorify him.

33 Little children, yet a little while I am with you. Ye ſhall ſeek me: and, as I ſaid unto the Jews, Whither I go, ye cannot come; ſo now I ſay to you.

34 A new commandment I give unto you, That ye love one another; as I have loved you, that ye alſo love one another.

35 By this ſhall all *men* know that ye are my diſciples, if ye have love one to another.

36 ¶ Simon Peter ſaid unto him, Lord, whither goeſt thou? Jeſus anſwered him, Whither I go, thou canſt not follow me now; but thou ſhalt follow me afterwards.

37 Peter ſaid unto him, Lord, why cannot I follow thee now? I will lay down my life for thy ſake.

38 Jeſus anſwered him, Wilt thou lay down thy life for my ſake?

ſake? Verily, verily, I ſay unto
thee, The cock ſhall not crow,
till thou haſt denied me thrice.

CHAP. XIV.

Chriſt comforteth his diſciples.

LET not your heart be
troubled; ye believe in
God, believe alſo in me.
2 In my Father's houſe are
many manſions: if *it were* not
ſo, I would have told you. I go
to prepare a place for you.
3 And if I go and prepare a
place for you, I will come
again, and receive you unto my-
ſelf; that where I am *there* ye
may be alſo.
4 And whither I go ye know,
and the way ye know.
5 Thomas ſaith unto him,
Lord, we know not whither
thou goeſt; and how can we
know the way?
6 ¶ Jeſus ſaith unto him, I am
the way, and the truth, and the
life: no man cometh unto the
Father, but by me.
7 If ye had known me, ye
ſhould have known my Father
alſo: and from henceforth ye
know him, and have ſeen him.
8 Philip ſaith unto him,
Lord, ſhew us the Father, and
it ſufficeth us.
9 Jeſus ſaith unto him, Have I
been ſo long time with you, and
yet haſt thou not known me, Phi-
lip? he that hath ſeen me, hath
ſeen the Father; and how ſayeſt
thou *then*, Shew us the Father?
10 Believeſt thou not that I am
in the Father, and the Father in
me: the words that I ſpeak un-
to you I ſpeak not of myſelf:
but the Father, that dwelleth
in me, he doeth the works.
11 Believe me that I *am* in
the Father, and the Father in
me: or elſe believe me for the
very work's ſake.
12 Verily, verily, I ſay unto
you, He that believeth on me,
the works that I do ſhall he do
alſo; and greater *works* than
these ſhall he do: becauſe I go
unto my Father.
13 And whatſoever ye ſhall
aſk in my name, that will I do,
that the Father may be glori-
fied in the Son.
14 If ye ſhall aſk any thing
in my name, I will do *it*.
15 If ye love me, keep my
commandments.
16 And I will pray the Fa-
ther, and he ſhall give you
another Comforter, that he may
abide with you for ever;
17 *Even* the Spirit of truth;
whom the world cannot receive,
becauſe it ſeeth him not, nei-
ther knoweth him: but ye
know him; for he dwelleth
with you, and ſhall be in you.
18 I will not leave you com-
fortleſs: I will come to you.
19 Yet a little while, and
the world ſeeth me no more;
but ye ſee me: becauſe I live,
ye ſhall live alſo.
20 At that day ye ſhall know
that I *am* in my Father, and ye
in me, and I in you.
21 He that hath my com-
mandments, and keepeth them,
he it is that loveth me: and he
that loveth me ſhall be loved
of my Father, and I will love
him, and will manifeſt myſelf
to him.
22 Judas ſaith unto him, not
Iſcariot, Lord, how is it that
thou wilt manifeſt thyſelf unto
us, and not unto the world?
23 Jeſus anſwered and ſaid
unto him, If a man love me, he
will keep my words: and my
Father will love him, and we
will come unto him, and make
our abode with him.

24 He

24 He that loveth me not keepeth not my sayings: and the word which ye hear is not mine, but the Father's which sent me.
25 These things have I spoken unto you, being *yet* present with you.
26 But the Comforter, *which is* the Holy Ghost, whom the Father will send in my name, he shall teach you all things, and bring all things to your remembrance, whatsoever I have said unto you.
27 Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid.
28 Ye have heard how I said unto you, I go away, and come *again* unto you. If ye loved me, ye would rejoice, because I said, I go unto the Father: for my Father is greater than I.
29 And now I have told you before it come to pass, that, when it is come to pass, ye might believe.
30 Hereafter I will not talk much with you: for the prince of this world cometh, and hath nothing in me.
31 But that the world may know that I love the Father; and as the Father gave me commandment, even so I do. Arise, let us go hence.

CHAP. XV.

Christ's love to his disciples.

I AM the true vine, and my Father is the husbandman.
2 Every branch in me that beareth not fruit he taketh away: and every *branch* that beareth fruit, he purgeth it, that it may bring forth more fruit.
3 Now ye are clean through the word which I have spoken unto you.
4 Abide in me, and I in you. As the branch cannot bear fruit of itself, except it abide in the vine; no more can ye, except ye abide in me.
5 I am the vine, ye *are* the branches: He that abideth in me, and I in him, the same bringeth forth much fruit: for without me ye can do nothing.
6 If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered: and men gather them, and cast *them* into the fire, and they are burned.
7 If ye abide in me, and my words abide in you, ye shall ask what ye will, and it shall be done unto you.
8 Herein is my Father glorified, that ye bear much fruit; so shall ye be my disciples.
9 As the Father hath loved me, so have I loved you: continue ye in my love.
10 If ye keep my commandments, ye shall abide in my love; even as I have kept my Father's commandments, and abide in his love.
11 These things have I spoken unto you, that my joy might remain in you, and *that* your joy might be full.
12 This is my commandment, That ye love one another, as I have loved you.
13 Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends.
14 Ye are my friends, if ye do whatsoever I command you.
15 Henceforth I call you not servants; for the servant knoweth not what his lord doeth: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made

known unto you.
16 Ye have not chosen me, but I have chosen you, and ordained you, that ye should go and bring forth fruit, and *that* your fruit should remain: that whatsoever ye shall ask of the Father in my name, he may give it you.
17 These things I command you, that ye love one another
18 If the world hate you, ye know that it hated me before *it hated* you.
19 If ye were of the world the world would love his own: but because ye are not of the world, but I have chosen you out of the world, therefore the world hateth you.
20 Remember the word that I said unto you, The servant is not greater than his lord. If they have persecuted me, they will also persecute you: if they have kept my saying, they will keep your's also.
21 But all these things will they do unto you for my name's sake, because they know not him that sent me.
22 If I had not come and spoken unto them, they had not had sin: but now they have no cloke for their sin.
23 He that hateth me hateth my Father also.
24 If I had not done among them the works which none other man did, they had not had sin: but now they have both seen and hated both me and my Fatther.
25 But *this cometh to pass* that the word might be fulfilled that is written in their law, They hated me without a cause.
26 But when the Comforter is come, whom I will send unto you from the Father, *even* the Spirit of truth, which proceedeth from the Father, he shall testify of me:
27 And ye also shall bear witness, because ye have been with me from the beginning.

CHAP. XVI.

The Holy Ghost promised.

THESE things have I spoken unto you, that ye should not be offended.
2 They shall put you out of the synagogues: yea, the time cometh that whosoever killeth you will think that he doeth God service.
3 And these things will they do unto you, because they have not known the Father, nor me.
4 But these things have I told you, that when the time shall come, ye may remember that I told you of them. And these things I said not unto you at the beginning, because I was with you.
5 But now I go my way to him that sent me; and none of you asketh me, Whither goest thou?
6 But because I have said these things unto you, sorrow hath filled your heart.
7 Nevertheless I tell you the truth; It is expedient for you that I go away, for if I go not away, the Comforter will not come unto you; but if I depart, I will send him unto you.
8 And when he is come, he will reprove the world of sin, and of righteousness, and of judgement:
9 Of sin, because they believe not on me;
10 Of righteousness, because I go to my Father, and ye see me no more;
11 Of judgement, because the prince

prince of this world is judged.
12 I have yet many things to
ſay unto you, but ye cannot
bear them now.
13 Howbeit when he, the
Spirit of truth, is come, he will
guide you into all truth: for he
ſhall not ſpeak of himſelf; but
whatſoever he ſhall hear, *that*
ſhall he ſpeak: and he will
ſhew you things to come.
14 He ſhall glorify me: for
he ſhall receive of mine, and
ſhall ſhew *it* unto you.
15 All things that the Father
hath are mine: therefore ſaid
I, that he ſhall take of mine,
and ſhew *it* unto you
16 A little while, and ye
ſhall not ſee me: and again
a little while, and ye ſhall ſee
me, becauſe I go to the Father.
17 Then ſaid *ſome* of his
diſciples among themſelves,
What is this that ye ſaith unto
us, A little while, and ye ſhall
not ſee me: and again a lit-
tle while, and ye ſhall ſee me:
and, Becauſe I go to the Fa-
ther?
18 They ſaid therefore, What
is this that he ſaith, A little
while? We cannot tell what he
ſaith.
19 Now Jeſus knew that they
were deſirous to aſk him, and
ſaid unto them, Do ye en-
quire among yourſelves of that
I ſaid, A little while, and ye
ſhall not ſee me: and again a
little while, and ye ſhall ſee
me?
20 Verily, verily, I ſay unto
you, That ye ſhall weep and la-
ment, but the world ſhall re-
joice; and ye ſhall be ſorrow-
ful, but your ſorrow ſhall be
turned into joy.
21 A woman when ſhe is in
travail hath ſorrow, becauſe
her hour is come: but as ſoon
as ſhe is delivered of the child,
ſhe remembereth no more the
anguiſh, for joy that a man is
born into the world.
22 And ye now therefore
have ſorrow: but I will ſee you
again, and your heart ſhall re-
joice, and your joy no man tak-
eth from you.
23 And in that day ye ſhall
aſk me nothing. Verily, verily,
I ſay unto you, Whatſoever ye
ſhall aſk the Father in my name,
he will give *it* you.
24 Hitherto have ye aſked
nothing in my name: aſk, and
ye ſhall receive, that your joy
may be full.
25 Theſe things have I ſpok-
en unto you in proverbs: but
the time cometh when I ſhall
no more ſpeak unto you in pro-
verbs, but I ſhall ſhew you
plainly of the Father.
26 At that day ye ſhall aſk
in my name: and I ſay not un-
to you, that I will pray the
Father for you:
27 For the Father himſelf
loveth you, becauſe ye have lov-
ed me, and have believed that
I came out from God.
28 I came forth from the
Father, and am come into the
world: again, I leave the world,
and go to the Father.
29 His diſciples ſaid unto
him, Lo, now ſpeakeſt thou
plainly, and ſpeakeſt no proverb.
30 Now are we ſure that
thou knoweſt all things, and
needeſt not that any man ſhould
aſk thee: by this we believe that
thou cameſt forth from God.
31 Jeſus anſwered them, Do
ye now believe?
32 Behold, the hour cometh,
yea, is now come, that ye ſhall
be ſcattered every man to his
own,

own, and ſhall leave me alone;
and yet I am not alone, becauſe
the Father is with me.
33 Theſe things I have ſpok-
en unto you, that in me ye
might have peace. In the world
ye ſhall have tribulation: but
be of good cheer; I have over-
come the world.

CHAP. XVII.

Chriſt prayeth for his diſciples.

THESE words ſpake Jeſus,
and lifted up his eyes to
heaven, and ſaid, Father, the
hour is come; glorify thy Son,
that thy Son alſo may glorify
thee:
2 As thou haſt given him
power over all fleſh, that he
ſhould give eternal life to as
many as thou haſt given him.
3 And this is life eternal,
that they might know thee
the only true God, and Jeſus
Chriſt whom thou haſt ſent.
4 I have glorified thee on the
earth: I have finiſhed the work
which thou gaveſt me to do.
5 And now, O Father, glorify
thou me with thine own ſelf,
with the glory which I had with
thee before the world was.
6 I have manifeſted thy name
unto the men which thou gav-
eſt me out of the world: thine
they were, and thou gaveſt
them me: and they have kept
thy word.
7 Now they have known that
all things whatſoever thou haſt
given me are of thee.
8 For I have given unto them
the words which thou gaveſt
me; and they have received
them, and have known ſurely
that I came out from thee, and
they have believed that thou
didſt ſend me.
9 I pray for them: I pray
not for the world, but for them
which thou haſt given me; for
they are thine.
10 And all mine are thine,
and thine are mine; and I am
glorified in them.
11 And now I am no more in
the world, but theſe are in the
world, and I come to thee.
Holy Father, keep through
thine own name thoſe whom
thou haſt given me, that they
may be one, as we *are*.
12 While I was with them
in the world, I kept them in
thy name: thoſe that thou
gaveſt me I have kept, and
none of them is loſt, but the ſon
of perdition; that the ſcripture
might be fulfilled.
13 And now come I to thee,
and theſe things I ſpeak in the
world, that they might have
my joy fulfilled in themſelves.
14 I have given them thy
word; and the world hath
hated them, becauſe they are
not of the world, even as I am
not of the world.
15 I pray not that thou
ſhouldeſt take them out of the
world, but that thou ſhouldeſt
keep them from the evil.
16 They are not of the
world, even as I am not of the
world.
17 Sanctify them through
thy truth: thy word is truth.
18 As thou haſt ſent me into
the world, even ſo have I alſo
ſent them into the world.
19 And for their ſakes I
ſanctify myſelf, that they alſo
might be ſanctified through
the truth.
20 Neither pray I for theſe
alone, but for them alſo which
ſhall believe on me through
their word;
21 That they all may be one,
as thou, Father, *art* in me, and

I in thee, that they alſo may be one in us: that the world may believe that thou haſt ſent me.

22 And the glory which thou gaveſt me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one:

23 I in them, and thou in me, that they may be made perfect in one, and that the world may know that thou haſt ſent me, and haſt loved them, as thou haſt loved me.

24 Father, I will that they alſo, whom thou haſt given me, be with me where I am; that they may behold my glory which thou haſt given me: for thou lovedſt me before the foundation of the world.

25 O righteous Father, the world hath not known thee: but I have known thee, and theſe have known that thou haſt ſent me.

26 And I have declared unto them thy name, and will declare *it:* that the love wherewith thou haſt loved me may be in them, and I in them.

CHAP. XVIII.

Judas betrayeth Jeſus.

WHEN Jeſus had ſpoken theſe words, he went forth with his diſciples over the brook Cedron, where was a garden, into the which he entered, and his diſciples.

2 And Judas alſo, which betrayed him, knew the place: for Jeſus ofttimes reſorted thither with his diſciples.

3 Judas then, having received a band *of men*, and officers from the chief prieſts and Phariſees, cometh thither with lanterns and torches, and weapons.

4 Jeſus therefore, knowing all things that ſhould come upon him, went forth, and ſaid unto them, Whom ſeek ye?

5 They anſwered him, Jeſus of Nazareth. Jeſus ſaith unto them, I am *he*. And Judas alſo, which betrayed him, ſtood with them.

6 As ſoon then as he had ſaid unto them, I am *he*, they went backward, and fell to the ground.

7 Then aſked he them again, Whom ſeek ye? And they ſaid, Jeſus of Nazareth.

8 Jeſus anſwered, I have told you that I am *he*. If therefore ye ſeek me, let theſe go their way:

9 That the ſaying might be fulfilled, which he ſpake, Of them which thou gaveſt me have I loſt none.

10 Then Simon Peter having a ſword, drew it, and ſmote the high prieſt's ſervant, and cut off his right ear. The ſervant's name was Malchus.

11 Then ſaid Jeſus unto Peter, Put up thy ſword into the ſheath: the cup which my Father hath given me, ſhall I not drink it?

12 Then the band and the captain and officers of the Jews took Jeſus, and bound him,

13 And led him away to Annas firſt: for he was father in law to Caiaphas, which was the high prieſt that ſame year.

14 Now Caiaphas was he, which gave counſel to the Jews, that it was expedient that one man ſhould die for the people.

15 And Simon Peter followed Jeſus, and *ſo did* another diſciple. That diſciple was known unto the high prieſt, and went in with Jeſus into the palace of the high prieſt.

16 But Peter ſtood at the door without. Then went out that other diſciple, which was

known unto the high prieſt,
and ſpake unto her that kept
the door, and brought in Peter.
17 Then ſaith the damſel that
kept the door unto Peter, Art
not thou alſo *one* of this man's
diſciples? He ſaith, I am not.
18 And the ſervants and
officers ſtood there, who had
made a fire of coals; for it was
cold: and they warmed them-
ſelves: and Peter ſtood with
them, and warmed himſelf.
19 The high prieſt then aſk-
ed Jeſus of his diſciples, and of
his doctrine.
20 Jeſus anſwered him, I
ſpake openly to the world; I
ever taught in the ſynagogue,
and in the temple, whither the
Jews always reſort; and in ſe-
cret have I ſaid nothing.
21 Why aſkeſt thou me? aſk
them which heard me, what I
have ſaid unto them: behold,
they know what I ſaid.
22 And when he had thus
ſpoken, one of the officers which
ſtood by ſtruck Jeſus with the
palm of his hand, ſaying, An-
ſwereſt thou the high prieſt ſo?
23 Jeſus anſwered him, If I
have ſpoken evil, bear witneſs
of the evil: but if well, why
ſmiteſt thou me?
24 Now Annas had ſent
him bound unto Caiaphas the
high prieſt.
25 And Simon Peter ſtood
and warmed himſelf. They
ſaid therefore unto him, Art
not thou alſo *one* of his diſci-
ples? He denied *it*, and ſaid, I
am not.
26 One of the ſervants of
the high prieſt, being *his* kinſ-
man whoſe ear Peter cut off,
ſaith, Did not I ſee thee in the
garden with him?
27 Peter then denied again:
and immediately the cock crew.
28 ¶ Then led they Jeſus
from Caiaphas unto the hall of
judgement: and it was early:
and they themſelves went not
into the judgement hall, leſt
they ſhould be defiled; but that
they might eat the paſſover.
29 Pilate then went out unto
them, and ſaid, What accuſa-
tion bring ye againſt this man?
30 They anſwered and ſaid
unto him, If he were not a
malefactor, we would not have
delivered him up unto thee.
31 Then ſaid Pilate unto
them, Take ye him, and judge
him according to your law.
The Jews therefore ſaid unto
him, It is not lawful for us to
put any man to death:
32 That the ſaying of Jeſus
might be fulfilled, which he
ſpake, ſignifying what death he
ſhould die.
33 Then Pilate entered into
the judgement hall again, and
called Jeſus, and ſaid unto him,
Art thou the King of the Jews?
34 Jeſus anſwered him, Say-
eſt thou this thing of thyſelf,
or did others tell it thee of me?
35 Pilate anſwered, Am I a
Jew? thine own nation and
the chief prieſts have delivered
thee unto me: What haſt thou
done?
36 Jeſus anſwered, My king-
dom is not of this world: if my
kingdom were of this world,
then would my ſervants fight,
that I ſhould not be delivered
to the Jews; but now is my
kingdom not from hence.
37 Pilate therefore ſaid un-
to him, Art thou a king then?
Jeſus anſwered, Thou ſayeſt
that I am a king. To this
end was I born, and for this
cauſe came I into the world,
that

that I ſhould bear witneſs unto the truth. Every one that is of the truth heareth my voice.

38 Pilate ſaith unto him, What is truth? And when he had ſaid this, he went out again unto the Jews, and ſaith unto them, I find in him no fault *at all.*

39 But ye have a cuſtom that I ſhould releaſe unto you one at the paſſover: will ye therefore that I releaſe unto you the King of the Jews?

40 Then cried they all again, ſaying, Not this man, but Barabbas. Now Barabbas was a robber.

CHAP. XIX.

Chriſt's arraignment.

THEN Pilate therefore took Jeſus and ſcourged *him.*

2 And the ſoldiers platted a crown of thorns, and put *it* on his head, and they put on him a purple robe,

3 And ſaid, Hail, King of the Jews! And they ſmote him with their hands.

4 Pilate therefore went forth again, and ſaith unto them, Behold, I bring him forth to you, that ye may know that I find no fault in him.

5 Then came Jeſus forth, wearing the crown of thorns, and the purple robe. And *Pilate* ſaith unto them, Behold the man!

6 When the chief prieſts therefore and officers ſaw him, they cried out, ſaying, Crucify *him*, crucify *him*. Pilate ſaith unto them, Take ye him, and crucify *him*: for I find no fault in him.

7 The Jews anſwered him, We have a law, and by our law he ought to die, becauſe he made himſelf the Son of God.

8 When Pilate therefore heard that ſaying, he was the more afraid;

9 And went again into the judgement hall, and ſaith unto Jeſus, Whence art thou? But Jeſus gave him no anſwer.

10 Then ſaith Pilate unto him, Speakeſt thou not unto me? knoweſt thou not that I have power to crucify thee, and have power to releaſe thee?

11 Jeſus anſwered, Thou couldeſt have no power *at all* againſt me, except it were given thee from above: therefore he that delivered me unto thee hath the greater ſin.

12 And from thenceforth Pilate ſought to releaſe him: but the Jews cried out, ſaying, If thou let this man go, thou art not Ceſar's friend. Whoſoever maketh himſelf a king ſpeaketh againſt Ceſar.

13 When Pilate therefore heard that ſaying, he brought Jeſus forth, and ſat down in the judgement ſeat, in a place that is called the Pavement, but in the Hebrew, Gabbatha.

14 And it was the preparation of the paſſover, and about the ſixth hour: and he ſaith unto the Jews, Behold your King!

15 But they cried out, Away with *him*, away with *him*, crucify him. Pilate ſaith unto them, Shall I crucify your King? the chief prieſts anſwered, We have no king but Ceſar.

16 Then delivered he him therefore unto them to be crucified. And they took Jeſus, and led *him* away.

17 And he bearing his croſs went forth into a place called *the place* of a ſkull, which is called in the Hebrew, Golgotha:

18 Where they crucified him, and two other with him, on either ſide one, and Jeſus in the midſt.

19 And

19 And Pilate wrote a title,
and put *it* on the croſs: and
the writing was, JESUS OF
NAZARETH THE KING
OF THE JEWS.
20 This title then read many
of the Jews: for the place
where Jeſus was crucified was
nigh to the city: and it was
written in Hebrew, *and* Greek,
and Latin.
21 Then ſaid the chief prieſts
of the Jews to Pilate, Write
not, The King of the Jews; but
that he ſaid, I am King of the
Jews.
22 Pilate anſwered, What I
have written I have written.
23 Then the ſoldiers, when
they had crucified Jeſus, took
his garments, and made four
parts, to every ſoldier a part;
and alſo *his* coat: now the coat
was without ſeam, woven from
the top throughout.
24 They ſaid therefore
among themſelves, Let us not
rend it, but caſt lots for it,
whoſe it ſhall be: that the
ſcripture might be fulfilled,
which ſaith, They parted my
raiment among them, and for
my veſture they did caſt lots.
Theſe things therefore the ſol-
diers did.
25 Now there ſtood by the
croſs of Jeſus his mother, and
his mother's ſiſter, Mary the
wife of Cleophas, and Mary
Magdalene.
26 When Jeſus therefore ſaw
his mother, and the diſciple
ſtanding by whom he loved, he
ſaith unto his mother, Wo-
man, behold thy Son!
27 Then ſaith he to the diſci-
ple, Behold thy mother! And
from that hour that diſciple
took her unto his own *home*.
28 ¶ After this, Jeſus know-
ing that all things were now
accompliſhed, that the ſcrip-
ture might be fulfilled, ſaith, I
thirſt.
29 Now there was ſet a veſ-
ſel full of vinegar; and they
filled a ſpunge with vinegar,
and put *it* upon hyſſop, and
put *it* to his mouth.
30 When Jeſus therefore had
received the vinegar, he ſaid, It
is finiſhed. And he bowed his
head, and gave up the ghoſt.
31 The Jews therefore, be-
cauſe it was the preparation,
that the bodies ſhould not re-
main upon the croſs on the
ſabbath day, (for that ſabbath
day was an high day,) beſought
Pilate that their legs might
be broken, and *that* they might
be taken away.
32 Then came the ſoldiers,
and brake the legs of the firſt,
and of the other which was
crucified with him.
33 But when they came to Je-
ſus, and ſaw that he was dead
already, they brake not his legs:
34 But one of the ſoldiers
with a ſpear pierced his ſide,
and forthwith came thereout
blood and water.
35 And he that ſaw *it*, bare
record, and his record is true:
and he knoweth that he ſaith
true; that ye might believe.
36 For theſe things were
done, that the ſcripture ſhould
be fulfilled, A bone of him
ſhall not be broken.
37 And again another ſcrip-
ture ſaith, They ſhall look on
him whom they pierced.
38 ¶ And after this, Joſeph
of Arimathea, being a diſciple
of Jeſus, but ſecretly for fear
of the Jews, beſought Pilate
that he might take away the
body of Jeſus: and Pilate gave

him

him leave. He came therefore, and took the body of Jeſus.

39 And there came alſo Nicodemus, which at the firſt came to Jeſus by night, and brought a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about an hundred pound *weight.*

40 Then took they the body of Jeſus and wound it in linen clothes, with the ſpices, as the manner of the Jews is to bury.

41 Now in the place where he was crucified there was a garden; and in the garden a new ſepulchre, wherein was never man yet laid.

42 There laid they Jeſus therefore, becauſe of the Jews' preparation *day*, for the ſepulchre was nigh at hand.

CHAP. XX.

Christ's reſurrection.

THE firſt *day* of the week cometh Mary Magdalene early, when it was yet dark, unto the ſepulchre, and ſeeth the ſtone taken away from the ſepulchre.

2 Then ſhe runneth, and cometh to Simon Peter, and to the other diſciple, whom Jeſus loved, and ſaith unto them, They have taken away the Lord out of the ſepulchre, and we know not where they have laid him.

3 Peter therefore went forth, and that other diſciple, and came to the ſepulchre.

4 So they ran both together: and the other diſciple did outrun Peter, and came firſt to the ſepulchre.

5 And he ſtooping down, *and looking in*, ſaw the linen clothes lying; yet went he not in.

6 Then cometh Simon Peter following him, and went into the ſepulchre, and ſeeth the linen clothes lie,

7 And the napkin that was about his head, not lying with the linen clothes, but wrapped together in a place by itſelf.

8 Then went in alſo that other diſciple which came firſt to the ſepulchre, and he ſaw, and believed.

9 For as yet they knew not the ſcripture, that he muſt riſe again from the dead.

10 Then the diſciples went away again unto their own home.

11 ¶ But Mary ſtood without at the ſepulchre weeping: and as ſhe wept, ſhe ſtooped down, *and looked* into the ſepulchre,

12 And ſeeth two angels in white, ſitting, the one at the head, and the other at the feet, where the body of Jeſus had lain.

13 And they ſay unto her, Woman, why weepeſt thou? She ſaith unto them, Becauſe they have taken away my Lord, and I know not where they have laid him.

14 And when ſhe had thus ſaid, ſhe turned herſelf back, and ſaw Jeſus ſtanding, and knew not that it was Jeſus.

15 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Woman, why weepeſt thou? whom ſeekeſt thou? She, ſuppoſing him to be the gardener, ſaith unto him, Sir, if thou have borne him hence, tell me where thou haſt laid him, and I will take him away.

16 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Mary. She turned herſelf, and ſaith unto him, Rabboni; which is to ſay, Maſter.

17 Jeſus ſaith unto her, Touch me not; for I am not yet aſcended to my Father; but go to my brethren, and ſay unto them, I aſcend unto my Father, and your Father;

Father; and *to* my God, and your God.

18 Mary Magdalene came and told the diſciples that ſhe had ſeen the Lord, and *that* he had ſpoken theſe things unto her.

19 ¶ Then the ſame day at evening, being the firſt *day* of the week, when the doors were ſhut where the diſciples were aſſembled for fear of the Jews, came Jeſus and ſtood in the midſt, and ſaith unto them, Peace *be* unto you.

20 And when he had ſo ſaid, he ſhewed unto them *his* hands and his ſide. Then were the diſciples glad, when they ſaw the Lord.

21 Then ſaid Jeſus to them again, Peace *be* unto you. As *my* Father hath ſent me, even ſo ſend I you.

22 And when he had ſaid this, he breathed on *them*, and ſaith unto them, Receive ye the Holy Ghoſt:

23 Whoſe ſoever ſins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; *and* whoſe ſoever *ſins* ye retain, they are retained.

24 ¶ But Thomas, one of the twelve, called Didymus, was not with them when Jeſus came.

25 The other diſciples therefore ſaid unto him, We have ſeen the Lord. But he ſaid unto them, Except I ſhall ſee in his hands the print of the nails, and put my finger into the print of the nails, and thruſt my hand into his ſide, I will not believe.

26 ¶ And after eight days again his diſciples were within, and Thomas with them: *then* came Jeſus, the doors being ſhut, and ſtood in the midſt, and ſaid, Peace *be* unto you.

27 Then ſaith he to Thomas, Reach hither thy finger, and behold my hands; and reach hither thy hand, and *thruſt* it into my ſide: and be not faithleſs, but believing.

28 And Thomas anſwered and ſaid unto him, My Lord and my God.

29 Jeſus ſaith unto him, Thomas, becauſe thou haſt ſeen me, thou haſt believed: bleſſed *are* they that have not ſeen, and *yet* have believed.

30 And many other ſigns truly did Jeſus in the preſence of his diſciples, which are not written in this book:

31 But theſe are written, that ye might believe that Jeſus is the Chriſt, the Son of God, and that believing ye might have life through his name.

CHAP. XXI.

Chriſt appeareth again.

AFTER theſe things Jeſus ſhewed himſelf again to the diſciples at the ſea of Tiberias: and on this wiſe ſhewed he *himſelf*.

2 There were together Simon Peter, and Thomas called Didymus, and Nathanael of Cana in Galilee, and the *ſons* of Zebedee, and two other of his diſciples.

3 Simon Peter ſaith unto them, I go a fiſhing. They ſay unto him, We alſo go with thee. They went forth, and entered into a ſhip immediately; and that night they caught nothing.

4 But when the morning was now come, Jeſus ſtood on the ſhore: but the diſciples knew not that it was Jeſus.

5 Then Jeſus ſaith unto them, Children, have ye any meat? They anſwered him, No.

6 And he ſaid unto them,
Caſt the net on the right ſide
of the ſhip, and ye ſhall find.
They caſt therefore, and now
they were not able to draw it
for the multitude of fiſhes.
7 Therefore that diſciple
whom Jeſus loved ſaith unto
Peter, It is the Lord. Now when
Simon Peter heard that it was
the Lord, he girt *his* fiſher's coat
unto him, (for he was naked,)
and did caſt himſelf into the ſea.
8 And the other diſciples
came in a little ſhip, (for they
were not far from land, but as
it were two hundred cubits,)
dragging the net with fiſhes.
9 As ſoon then as they were
come to land, they ſaw a fire of
coals there, and fiſh laid there-
on, and bread.
10 Jeſus ſaith unto them,
Bring of the fiſh which ye have
now caught.
11 Simon Peter went up,
and drew the net to land full
of great fiſhes, an hundred and
fifty and three. And for all
there were ſo many, yet was
not the net broken.
12 Jeſus ſaith unto them,
Come *and* dine. And none of
the diſciples durſt aſk him,
Who art thou? knowing that
it was the Lord.
13 Jeſus then cometh, and
taketh bread, and giveth them,
and fiſh likewiſe.
14 This is now the third time
that Jeſus ſhewed himſelf to
his diſciples, after that he was
riſen from the dead.
15 ¶ So when they had din-
ed, Jeſus ſaith to Simon Peter,
Simon, *ſon* of Jonas, loveſt thou
me more than theſe? He ſaith
unto him, Yea, Lord: thou
knoweſt that I love thee. He
ſaith unto him, Feed my lambs.
16 He ſaith to him again the
ſecond time, Simon, *ſon* of Jo-
nas, loveſt thou me? He ſaith
unto him, Yea, Lord: thou
knoweſt that I love thee. He
ſaith unto him, Feed my ſheep.
17 He ſaith unto him the third
time, Simon, *ſon* of Jonas, loveſt
thou me? Peter was grieved
becauſe he ſaid unto him the
third time, Loveſt thou me?
And he ſaid unto him, Lord,
thou knoweſt all things; thou
knoweſt that I love thee. Jeſus
ſaith unto him, Feed my ſheep.
18 Verily, verily, I ſay unto
thee, When thou waſt young,
thou girdedſt thyſelf, and
walkedſt whither thou wouldeſt:
but when thou ſhalt be old,
thou ſhalt ſtretch forth thy
hands, and another ſhall gird
thee, and carry *thee* whither
thou wouldeſt not.
19 This ſpake he, ſignifying
by what death he ſhould glo-
rify God. And when he had
ſpoken this, he ſaith unto him,
Follow me.
20 ¶ Then Peter, turning
about, ſeeth the diſciple whom
Jeſus loved following, which
alſo leaned on his breaſt at ſup-
per, and ſaid, Lord, which is
he that betrayeth thee?
21 Peter ſeeing him ſaith
to Jeſus, Lord; and what *ſhall*
this man *do?*
22 Jeſus ſaith unto him, If I
will that he tarry till I come,
what *is that* to thee? Follow
thou me.
23 Then went this ſaying
abroad among the brethren,
that that diſciple ſhould not
die: yet Jeſus ſaid not unto
him, He ſhall not die; but, If I
will that he tarry till I come,
what *is that* to thee?
24 This is the diſciple which
teſti-

teſtifieth of theſe things, and
wrote theſe things; and we
know that his teſtimony is true.
25 And there are alſo many
other things which Jeſus did,
the which, if they ſhould be
written every one, I ſuppoſe
that even the world itſelf could
not contain the books that
ſhould be written. Amen.

The ACTS of the Apoſtles.

CHAP. I.

Matthias choſen an apoſtle.

THE former treatiſe have
I made, O Theophilus,
of all that Jeſus began
both to do and teach,
2 Until the day in which he
was taken up, after that he
through the Holy Ghoſt had
given commandments unto the
apoſtles whom he had choſen:
3 To whom alſo he ſhewed
himſelf alive after his paſſion
by many infallible proofs, being
ſeen of them forty days, and
ſpeaking of the things pertain-
ing to the kingdom of God:
4 And, being aſſembled toge-
ther with *them*, commanded
them that they ſhould not de-
part from Jeruſalem, but wait for
the promiſe of the Father, which,
ſaith he, ye have heard of me.
5 For John truly baptized
with water; but ye ſhall be
baptized with the Holy Ghoſt
not many days hence.
6 When they therefore were
come together, they aſked of
him, ſaying, Lord, wilt thou at
this time reſtore again the king-
dom to Iſrael?
7 And he ſaid unto them, It
is not for you to know the times
or the ſeaſons, which the Fa-
ther hath put in his own power.
8 But ye ſhall receive power
after that the Holy Ghoſt is
come upon you: and ye ſhall be
witneſſes unto me both in Je-
ruſalem, and in all Judea, and
in Samaria, and unto the utter-
moſt part of the earth.
9 And when he had ſpoken
theſe things, while they beheld,
he was taken up; and a cloud
received him out of their ſight.
10 And while they looked
ſtedfaſtly toward heaven as he
went up, behold, two men ſtood
by them in white apparel;
11 Which alſo ſaid, Ye men
of Galilee, why ſtand ye gazing
up into heaven? this ſame Je-
ſus which is taken up from
you into heaven, ſhall ſo come
in like manner as ye have ſeen
him go into heaven.
12 Then returned they unto
Jeruſalem from the mount call-
ed Olivet, which is from Jeru-
ſalem a ſabbath day's journey.
13 And when they were
come in, they went up into an
upper room, where abode
both Peter, and James, and
John, and Andrew, Philip, and
Thomas, Bartholomew, and
Matthew, James *the ſon* of Al-
pheus, and Simon Zelotes, and
Judas, *the brother* of James.
14 Theſe all continued with
one accord in prayer and ſup-
plication, with the women, and
Mary the mother of Jeſus, and
with his brethren.
15 ¶ And in thoſe days Peter
ſtood up in the midſt of the
diſciples, and ſaid, (the number
of the names together, were
about an hundred and twenty,)
16 Men *and* brethren, this

scripture must needs have been fulfilled which the Holy Ghost by the mouth of David spake before concerning Judas, which was guide to them that took Jesus.

17 For he was numbered with us, and had obtained part of this ministry.

18 Now this man purchased a field with the reward of iniquity; and falling headlong, he burst asunder in the midst, and all his bowels gushed out.

19 And it was known unto all the dwellers at Jerusalem; insomuch as that field is called in their proper tongue, Aceldama, that is to say, The field of blood.

20 For it is written in the book of Psalms, Let his habitation be desolate, and let no man dwell therein: and his bishoprick let another take.

21 Wherefore of these men which have companied with us all the time that the Lord Jesus went in and out among us,

22 Beginning from the baptism of John unto that same day that he was taken up from us, must one be ordained to be a witness with us of his resurrection.

23 And they appointed two, Joseph called Barsabas, who was surnamed Justus, and Matthias.

24 And they prayed, and said, Thou, Lord, which knowest the hearts of all *men*, shew whether of these two thou hast chosen,

25 That he may take part of this ministry and apostleship, from which Judas by transgression fell, that he might go to his own place.

26 And they gave forth their lots: and the lot fell upon Matthias; and he was numbered with the eleven apostles.

CHAP. II.

The apostles inspired.

AND when the day of Pentecost was fully come, they were all with one accord in one place.

2 And suddenly there came a sound from heaven as of a rushing mighty wind, and it filled all the house where they were sitting.

3 And there appeared unto them cloven tongues like as of fire, and it sat upon each of them.

4 And they were all filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the Spirit gave them utterance.

5 And there were dwelling at Jerusalem Jews, devout men, out of every nation under heaven.

6 Now when this was noised abroad, the multitude came together, and were confounded, because that every man heard them speak in his own language.

7 And they were all amazed, and marvelled, saying one to another, Behold, are not all these which speak Galileans?

8 And how hear we every man in our own tongue, wherein we were born?

9 Parthians, and Medes, and Elamites, and the dwellers in Mesopotamia, and in Judea, and Cappadocia, in Pontus, and Asia,

10 Phrygia, and Pamphylia, in Egypt, and in the parts of Libya about Cyrene, and strangers of Rome, Jews and Proselytes,

11 Cretes and Arabians, we do hear them speak in our tongues the wonderful works of God.

12 And they were all amazed, and were in doubt, saying one

one to another, What meaneth
this?
13 Others mocking ſaid,
Theſe men are full of new
wine.
14 But Peter ſtanding up
with the eleven, lifted up his
voice, and ſaid unto them, Ye
men of Judea, and all *ye* that
dwell at Jeruſalem, be this
known unto you, and hearken
to my words:
15 For theſe are not drunken,
as ye ſuppoſe, ſeeing it is *but*
the third hour of the day.
16 But this is that which was
ſpoken by the prophet Joel;
17 And it ſhall come to paſs,
in the laſt days, ſaith God, I
will pour out of my Spirit up-
on all fleſh: and your ſons and
your daughters ſhall propheſy,
and your young men ſhall ſee
viſions, and your old men ſhall
dream dreams:
18 And on my ſervants and
on my handmaidens I will
pour out in thoſe days of my
Spirit; and they ſhall propheſy:
19 And I will ſhew wonders
in heaven above, and ſigns in
the earth beneath; blood, and
fire, and vapour of ſmoke:
20 The ſun ſhall be turned in-
to darkneſs, and the moon into
blood, before that great and
notable day of the Lord come:
21 And it ſhall come to paſs,
that whoſoever ſhall call on the
name of the Lord ſhall be ſaved.
22 Ye men of Iſrael, hear
theſe words: Jeſus of Nazareth,
a man approved of God among
you by miracles and wonders
and ſigns, which God did by
him in the midſt of you, as ye
yourſelves alſo know:
23 Him, being delivered by
the determinate counſel and
foreknowledge of God, ye have
taken, and by wicked hands
have crucified and ſlain:
24 Whom God hath raiſed
up, having looſed the pains of
death, becauſe it was not poſſi-
ble that he ſhould be holden
of it.
25 For David ſpeaketh con-
cerning him, I foreſaw the Lord
always before my face, for he
is on my right hand, that I
ſhould not be moved:
26 Therefore did my heart
rejoice, and my tongue was
glad; moreover alſo my fleſh
ſhall reſt in hope:
27 Becauſe thou wilt not
leave my ſoul in hell, neither
wilt thou ſuffer thine Holy
One to ſee corruption.
28 Thou haſt made known to
me the ways of life: thou ſhalt
make me full of joy with thy
countenance.
29 Men *and* brethren, let me
freely ſpeak unto you of the pa-
triarch David, that he is both
dead and buried, and his ſepul-
chre is with us unto this day.
30 Therefore being a prophet,
and knowing that God had
ſworn with an oath to him, that
of the fruit of his loins, accord-
ing to the fleſh, he would raiſe
up Chriſt to ſit on his throne;
31 He ſeeing this before,
ſpake of the reſurrection of
Chriſt, that his ſoul was not left
in hell, neither his fleſh did ſee
corruption.
32 This Jeſus hath God raiſed
up, whereof we all are witneſſes.
33 Therefore being by the
right hand of God exalted, and
having received of the Father
the promiſe of the Holy Ghoſt,
he hath ſhed forth this, which
ye now ſee and hear.
34 For David is not aſcended
into the heavens: but he ſaith

himſelf, The LORD ſaid unto my Lord, Sit thou on my right hand,

35 Until I make thy foes thy footſtool.

36 Therefore let all the houſe of Iſrael know aſſuredly, that God hath made that ſame Jeſus, whom ye have crucified, both Lord and Chriſt.

37 Now when they heard *this,* they were pricked in their heart, and ſaid unto Peter and to the reſt of the apoſtles, Men *and* brethren, what ſhall we do?

38 Then Peter ſaid unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jeſus Chriſt for the remiſſion of ſins, and ye ſhall receive the gift of the Holy Ghoſt.

39 For the promiſe is unto you, and to your children, and to all that are afar off, *even* as many as the Lord our God ſhall call.

40 And with many other words did he teſtify and exhort, ſaying, Save yourſelves from this untoward generation.

41 Then they that gladly received his word were baptized: and the ſame day there were added *unto them* about three thouſand ſouls.

42 And they continued ſtedfaſtly in the apoſtles' doctrine and fellowſhip, and in breaking of bread, and in prayers.

43 And fear came upon every ſoul: and many wonders and ſigns were done by the apoſtles.

44 And all that believed were together, and had all things common;

45 And ſold their poſſeſſions and goods, and parted them to all *men,* as every man had need.

46 And they, continuing daily with one accord in the temple, and breaking bread from houſe to houſe, did eat their meat with gladneſs and ſingleneſs of heart,

47 Praiſing God, and having favour with all the people. And the Lord added to the church daily ſuch as ſhould be ſaved.

CHAP. III.

A lame man healed.

NOW Peter and John went up together into the temple at the hour of prayer, *being* the ninth *hour.*

2 And a certain man lame from his mother's womb was carried, whom they laid daily at the gate of the temple which is called Beautiful, to aſk alms of them that entered into the temple;

3 Who ſeeing Peter and John about to go into the temple aſked an alms.

4 And Peter faſtening his eyes upon him, with John, ſaid, Look on us.

5 And he gave heed unto them, expecting to receive ſomething of them.

6 Then Peter ſaid, Silver and gold have I none; but ſuch as I have give I thee: In the name of Jeſus Chriſt of Nazareth riſe up and walk.

7 And he took him by the right hand, and lifted *him* up: and immediately his feet and ancle bones received ſtrength.

8 And he leaping up, ſtood, and walked, and entered with them into the temple, walking, and leaping, and praiſing God.

9 And all the people ſaw him walking and praiſing God:

10 And they knew that it was he which ſat for alms at the Beautiful gate of the temple: and they were filled with won-

wonder and amazement at that which had happened unto him.

11 And as the lame man which was healed held Peter and John, all the people ran together unto them in the porch that is called Solomon's, greatly wondering.

12 ¶ And when Peter ſaw *it*, he anſwered unto the people, Ye men of Iſrael, why marvel ye at this? or why look ye ſo earneſtly on us, as though by our own power or holineſs we had made this man to walk?

13 The God of Abraham, and of Iſaac, and of Jacob, the God of our fathers, hath glorified his Son Jeſus; whom ye delivered up, and denied him in the preſence of Pilate, when he was determined to let *him* go.

14 But ye denied the Holy One and the Juſt, and deſired a murderer to be granted unto you;

15 And killed the Prince of life, whom God hath raiſed from the dead; whereof we are witneſſes.

16 And his name, through faith in his name, hath made this man ſtrong, whom ye ſee and know: yea, the faith which is by him hath given him this perfect ſoundneſs in the preſence of you all.

17 And now, brethren, I wot that through ignorance ye did *it*, as *did* alſo your rulers.

18 But thoſe things, which God before had ſhewed by the mouth of all his prophets, that Chriſt ſhould ſuffer, he hath ſo fulfilled.

19 ¶ Repent ye therefore, and be converted, that your ſins may be blotted out, when the times of refreſhing ſhall come from the preſence of the Lord;

20 And he ſhall ſend Jeſus Chriſt, which before was preached unto you:

21 Whom the heaven muſt receive until the times of reſtitution of all things, which God hath ſpoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets ſince the world began.

22 For Moſes truly ſaid unto the fathers, A prophet ſhall the Lord your God raiſe up unto you of your brethren, like unto me; him ſhall ye hear in all things whatſoever he ſhall ſay unto you.

23 And it ſhall come to paſs, *that* every ſoul, which will not hear that prophet, ſhall be deſtroyed from among the people.

24 Yea, and all the prophets from Samuel and thoſe that follow after, as many as have ſpoken, have likewiſe foretold of theſe days.

25 Ye are the children of the prophets, and of the covenant which God made with our fathers, ſaying unto Abraham, And in thy ſeed ſhall all the kindreds of the earth be bleſſed.

26 Unto you firſt, God, having raiſed up his Son Jeſus, ſent him to bleſs you, in turning away every one of you from his iniquities.

CHAP. IV.

Peter and John impriſoned.

AND as they ſpake unto the people, the prieſts, and the captain of the temple, and the Sadducees, came upon them,

2 Being grieved that they taught the people, and preached through Jeſus the reſurrection from the dead.

3 And they laid hands on them, and put *them* in hold unto the next day; for it was now eventide.

4 Howbeit many of them which heard the word believed: and the number of the men was about five thouſand.

5 ¶ And it came to paſs on the morrow, that their rulers, and elders, and ſcribes,

6 [c]And Annas the high prieſt, and Caiaphas, and John, and Alexander, and as many as were of the kindred of the high prieſt, were gathered together at Jeruſalem.

7 And when they had ſet them in the midſt, they aſked, By what power, or by what name, have ye done this?

8 Then Peter filled with the Holy Ghoſt, ſaid unto them, Ye rulers of the people, and elders of Iſrael,

9 If we this day be [c]examined of the good deed done to the impotent man, by what means he is made whole;

10 Be it known unto you all, and to all the people of Iſrael, that by the name of Jeſus Chriſt of Nazareth, whom ye crucified, whom God raiſed from the dead, *even* by him doth this man ſtand here before you whole.

11 This is the ſtone which was ſet at nought of you builders, which is become the head of the corner.

12 Neither is there ſalvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we muſt be ſaved.

13 ¶ Now when they ſaw the boldneſs of Peter and John, and perceived that they were unlearned and ignorant men, they marvelled; and they took knowledge of them, that they had been with Jeſus.

14 And beholding the man which was healed ſtanding with them, they could ſay nothing againſt it.

15 But when they had commanded them to go aſide out of the council, they conferred among themſelves,

16 Saying, What ſhall we do to theſe men? for that indeed a notable miracle hath been done by them *is* manifeſt to all them that dwell in Jeruſalem; and we cannot deny *it*.

17 But that it ſpread no further among the people, let us ſtraitly threaten them, that they ſpeak henceforth to no man in this name.

18 And they called them, and commanded them not to ſpeak at all nor teach in the name of Jeſus.

19 But Peter and John anſwered and ſaid unto them, Whether it be right in the ſight of God to hearken unto you more than unto God, judge ye.

20 For we cannot but ſpeak the things which we have ſeen and heard.

21 So when they had further threatened them, they let them go, finding nothing how they might puniſh them, becauſe of the people: for all *men* glorified God for that which was done.

22 For the man was above forty years old on whom this miracle of healing was ſhewed.

23 And being let go, they went to their own company, and reported all that the chief prieſts and elders had ſaid unto them.

24 And when they heard that, they lifted up their voice to [c]God with one accord, and ſaid, Lord, thou *art* God, which haſt made heaven, and earth, and the ſea, and all that in them is:

25 Who by the mouth of thy

ſervant

ſervant David haſt ſaid, Why did the heathen rage, and the people imagine vain things?

26 The kings of the earth ſtood up, and the rulers were gathered together againſt the Lord, and againſt his Chriſt.

27 For of a truth againſt thy holy child Jeſus, whom thou haſt anointed, both Herod, and Pontius Pilate, with the Gentiles, and the people of Iſrael, were gathered together,

28 For to do whatſoever thy hand and thy counſel determined before to be done.

29 And now, Lord, behold their threatenings: and grant unto thy ſervants, that with all boldneſs they may ſpeak thy word,

30 By ſtretching forth thine hand to heal; and that ſigns and wonders may be done by the name of thy holy child Jeſus.

31 And when they had prayed, the place was ſhaken where they were aſſembled together; and they were all filled with the Holy Ghoſt, and they ſpake the word of God with boldneſs.

32 And the multitude of them that believed were of one heart and of one ſoul: neither ſaid any *of them*, that ought of the things which he poſſeſſed was his own; but they had all things common.

33 And with great power gave the apoſtles witneſs of the reſurrection of the Lord Jeſus: and great grace was upon them all.

34 Neither was there any among them that lacked: for as many as were poſſeſſors of lands or houſes ſold them, and brought the prices of the things that were ſold,

35 And laid *them* down at the apoſtles' feet: and diſtribution was made unto every man according as he had need.

36 And Joſes, who by the apoſtles was ſurnamed Barnabas, (which is, being interpreted, The ſon of conſolation,) a Levite, *and* of the country of Cyprus,

37 Having land, ſold *it*, and brought the money, and laid *it* at the apoſtles' feet.

CHAP. V.

Death of Ananias and Sapphira.

BUT a certain man named Ananias, with Sapphira his wife, ſold a poſſeſſion,

2 And kept back *part* of the price, his wife alſo being privy *to it*, and brought a certain part, and laid *it* at the apoſtles' feet.

3 But Peter ſaid, Ananias, why hath Satan filled thine heart to lie to the Holy Ghoſt, and to keep back *part* of the price of the land?

4 Whiles it remained, was it not thine own? and after it was ſold, was it not in thine own power? why haſt thou conceived this thing in thine heart? thou haſt not lied unto men, but unto God.

5 And Ananias hearing theſe words fell down, and gave up the ghoſt. And great fear came on all them that heard theſe things.

6 And the young men aroſe, wound him up, and carried *him* out, and buried *him*.

7 And it was about the ſpace of three hours after, when his wife, not knowing what was done, came in.

8 And Peter anſwered unto her, Tell me whether ye ſold the land for ſo much? And ſhe ſaid, Yea, for ſo much.

9 Then Peter ſaid unto her,

How is it that ye have agreed together to tempt the Spirit of the Lord? behold, the feet of them which have buried thy huſband *are* at the door, and ſhall carry thee out.

10 Then fell ſhe down ſtraightway at his feet, and yielded up the ghoſt. And the young men came in and found her dead, and, carrying *her* forth, buried *her* by her huſband.

11 And great fear came upon all the church, and upon as many as heard theſe things.

12 And by the hands of the apoſtles were many ſigns and wonders wrought among the people. (And they were all with one accord in Solomon's porch.

13 And of the reſt durſt no man join himſelf to them: but the people magnified them.

14 And believers were the more added to the Lord, multitudes both of men and women.)

15 Inſomuch that they brought forth the ſick into the ſtreets, and laid *them* on beds and couches, that at the leaſt the ſhadow of Peter paſſing by might overſhadow ſome of them.

16 There came alſo a multitude *out* of the cities round about unto Jeruſalem, bringing ſick folks, and them which were vexed with unclean ſpirits: and they were healed every one.

17 ¶ Then the high prieſt roſe up, and all they that were with him; (which is the ſect of the Sadducees;) and were filled with indignation,

18 And laid their hands on the apoſtles, and put them in the common priſon.

19 But the angel of the Lord by night opened the priſon doors, and brought them forth, and ſaid,

20 Go, ſtand and ſpeak in the temple to the people all the words of this life.

21 And when they heard *that*, they entered into the temple early in the morning, and taught. But the high prieſt came, and they that were with him, and called the council together, and all the ſenate of the children of Iſrael, and ſent to the priſon to have them brought.

22 But when the officers came, and found them not in the priſon, they returned, and told,

23 Saying, The priſon truly found we ſhut with all ſafety, and the keepers ſtanding without before the doors: but when we had opened, we found no man within.

24 Now when the high prieſt and the captain of the temple and the chief prieſts heard theſe things, they doubted of them whereunto this would grow.

25 Then came one and told them, ſaying, Behold, the men whom ye put in priſon are ſtanding in the temple, and teaching the people.

26 Then went the captain with the officers, and brought them without violence: for they feared the people, leſt they ſhould have been ſtoned.

27 And when they had brought them, they ſet *them* before the council. And the high prieſt aſked them,

28 Saying, Did not we ſtraitly command you that ye ſhould not teach in this name? and, behold, ye have filled Jeruſalem with your doctrine, and intend to bring this man's blood upon us.

29 Then Peter and the *other* apoſtles anſwered and ſaid, We

ought to obey God rather than men.

30 The God of our fathers raiſed up Jeſus, whom ye ſlew and hanged on a tree.

31 Him hath God exalted with his right hand *to be* a Prince and a Saviour, for to give repentance to Iſrael, and forgiveneſs of ſins.

32 And we are his witneſſes of theſe things; and *ſo is* alſo the Holy Ghoſt, whom God hath given to them that obey him.

33 When they heard *that*, they were cut *to the heart*, and took counſel to ſlay them.

34 Then ſtood there up one in the council, a Phariſee, named Gamaliel, a doctor of the law, had in reputation among all the people, and commanded to put the apoſtles forth a little ſpace;

35 And ſaid unto them, Ye men of Iſrael, take heed to yourſelves what ye intend to do as touching theſe men.

36 For before theſe days roſe up Theudas, boaſting himſelf to be ſomebody; to whom a number of men, about four hundred, joined themſelves: who was ſlain; and all, as many as obeyed him, were ſcattered, and brought to nought.

37 After this man roſe up Judas of Galilee in the days of the taxing, and drew away much people after him: he alſo periſhed; and all, *even* as many as obeyed him, were diſperſed.

38 And now I ſay unto you, Refrain from theſe men, and let them alone: for if this counſel or this work be of men, it will come to nought:

39 But if it be of God, ye cannot overthrow it; leſt haply ye be found even to fight againſt God.

40 And to him they agreed: and when they had called the apoſtles, and beaten *them*, they commanded that they ſhould not ſpeak in the name of Jeſus, and let them go.

41 And they departed from the preſence of the council, rejoicing that they were counted worthy to ſuffer ſhame for his name.

42 And daily in the temple, and in every houſe, they ceaſed not to teach and preach Jeſus Chriſt.

CHAP. VI.

Stephen falſely accuſed.

AND in thoſe days, when the number of the diſciples was multiplied, there aroſe a murmuring of the Grecians againſt the Hebrews, becauſe their widows were neglected in the daily miniſtration.

2 Then the twelve called the multitude of the diſciples *unto them*, and ſaid, It is not reaſon that we ſhould leave the word of God, and ſerve tables.

3 Wherefore, brethren, look ye out among you ſeven men of honeſt report, full of the Holy Ghoſt and wiſdom, whom we may appoint over this buſineſs.

4 But we will give ourſelves continually to prayer, and to the miniſtry of the word.

5 And the ſaying pleaſed the whole multitude: and they choſe Stephen, a man full of faith and of the Holy Ghoſt, and Philip, and Prochoras, and Nicanor, and Timon, and Parmenas, and Nicolas a proſelyte of Antioch:

6 Whom they ſet before the apoſtles: and when they had prayed, they laid *their* hands on them.

7 And the word of God in-
creaſed; and the number of the
diſciples multiplied in Jeruſa-
lem greatly; and a great com-
pany of the prieſts were obe-
dient to the faith.
8 And Stephen, full of faith
and power, did great wonders
and miracles among the people.
9 ¶ Then there aroſe certain
of the ſynagogue, which is called
the ſynagogue of the Libertines,
and Cyrenians, and Alexandri-
ans, and of them of Cilicia and
of Aſia, diſputing with Stephen.
10 And they were not able
to reſiſt the wiſdom and the
ſpirit by which he ſpake.
11 Then they ſuborned men,
which ſaid, We have heard
him ſpeak blaſphemous words
againſt Moſes, and *againſt* God.
12 And they ſtirred up the
people, and the elders, and the
ſcribes, and came upon *him*, and
caught him, and brought *him*
to the council,
13 And ſet up falſe witneſſes,
which ſaid, This man ceaſeth
not to ſpeak blaſphemous words
againſt this holy place, and the
law:
14 For we have heard him
ſay, That this Jeſus of Nazareth
ſhall deſtroy this place, and ſhall
change the cuſtoms which Mo-
ſes delivered us.
15 And all that ſat in the
council, looking ſtedfaſtly on
him, ſaw his face as it had been
the face of an angel.

CHAP. VII.

Stephen ſtoned to death.

THEN ſaid the high prieſt,
Are theſe things ſo?
2 And he ſaid, Men, bre-
thren, and fathers, hearken:
The God of glory appeared un-
to our father Abraham, when
he was in Meſopotamia, before
he dwelt in Charran,
3 And ſaid unto him, Get
thee out of thy country, and
from thy kindred, and come into
the land which I ſhall ſhew thee.
4 Then came he out of the
land of the Chaldeans, and
dwelt in Charran: and from
thence, when his father was
dead, he removed him into this
land, wherein ye now dwell.
5 And he gave him none in-
heritance in it, no, not *ſo much
as* to ſet his foot on: yet he
promiſed that he would give it
to him for a poſſeſſion, and to
his ſeed after him, when *as yet*
he had no child.
6 And God ſpake on this wiſe,
That his ſeed ſhould ſojourn in
a ſtrange land; and that they
ſhould bring them into bond-
age, and intreat *them* evil four
hundred years.
7 And the nation to whom
they ſhall be in bondage will I
judge, ſaid God: and after that
ſhall they come forth, and ſerve
me in this place.
8 And he gave him the cove-
nant of circumciſion: and ſo
Abraham begat Iſaac, and cir-
cumciſed him the eighth day;
and Iſaac *begat* Jacob; and Ja-
cob *begat* the twelve patriarchs.
9 And the patriarchs, moved
with envy, ſold Joſeph into
Egypt: but God was with him,
10 And delivered him out of
all his afflictions, and gave him
favour and wiſdom in the ſight
of Pharaoh king of Egypt; and
he made him governor over
Egypt and all his houſe.
11 Now there came a dearth
over all the land of Egypt and
Canaan, and great affliction:
and our fathers found no ſuſ-
tenance.
12 But when Jacob heard that
there was corn in Egypt, he ſent
out

out our fathers firſt.
13 And at the ſecond *time*
Joſeph was made known to his
brethren; and Joſeph's kindred
was made known unto Pharaoh.
14 Then ſent Joſeph, and
called his father Jacob to *him*,
and all his kindred, threeſcore
and fifteen ſouls.
15 So Jacob went down into
Egypt, and died, he, and our
fathers,
16 And were carried over
into Sychem, and laid in the ſe-
pulchre that Abraham bought
for a ſum of money of the ſons
of Emmor *the father* of Sychem.
17 But when the time of the
promiſe drew nigh, which God
had ſworn to Abraham, the
people grew and multiplied in
Egypt,
18 Till another king aroſe,
which knew not Joſeph.
19 The ſame dealt ſubtilly
with our kindred, and evil en-
treated our fathers, ſo that they
caſt out their young children,
to the end they might not live.
20 In which time Moſes was
born, and was exceeding fair,
and nouriſhed up in his father's
houſe three months:
21 And when he was caſt
out, Pharaoh's daughter took
him up, and nouriſhed him for
her own ſon.
22 And Moſes was learned
in all the wiſdom of the Egyp-
tians, and was mighty in words
and in deeds.
23 And when he was full
forty years old, it came into
his heart to viſit his brethren
the children of Iſrael.
24 And ſeeing one *of them*
ſuffer wrong, he defended *him*,
and avenged him that was op-
preſſed, and ſmote the Egyptain:
25 For he ſuppoſed his bre-
thren would have underſtood
how that God by his hand
would deliver them: but they
underſtood not.
26 And the next day he
ſhewed himſelf unto them as
they ſtrove, and would have ſet
them at one again, ſaying, Sirs,
ye are brethren; why do ye
wrong one to another?
27 But he that did his neigh-
bour wrong thruſt him away,
ſaying, Who made thee a ruler
and a judge over us?
28 Wilt thou kill me, as thou
diddeſt the Egyptian yeſter-
day?
29 Then fled Moſes at this
ſaying, and was a ſtranger in
the land of Madian, where he
begat two ſons.
30 And when forty years
were expired, there appeared to
him in the wilderneſs of mount
Sina an angel of the Lord in a
flame of fire in a buſh.
31 When Moſes ſaw *it*, he won-
dered at the ſight: and as he
drew near to behold *it*, the voice
of the Lord came unto him,
32 *Saying*, I *am* the God of
thy fathers, the God of Abra-
ham, and the God of Iſaac, and
the God of Jacob. Then Moſes
trembled, and durſt not behold.
33 Then ſaid the Lord to
him, Put off thy ſhoes from
thy feet: for the place where
thou ſtandeſt is holy ground.
34 I have ſeen, I have ſeen the
affliction of my people which is
in Egypt, and I have heard their
groaning, and am come down to
deliver them. And now, come,
I will ſend thee into Egypt.
35 This Moſes whom they
refuſed, ſaying, Who made thee
a ruler and a judge? the ſame
did God ſend *to be* a ruler and
a deliverer by the hand of the
angel

angel which appeared to him in
the bush.
36 He brought them out, after
that he had shewed wonders
and signs in the land of Egypt,
and in the Red sea, and in the
wilderness forty years.
37 This is that Moses which
said unto the children of Israel,
A prophet shall the Lord your
God raise up unto you of your
brethren, like unto me; him
shall ye hear.
38 This is he that was in the
church in the wilderness with
the angel which spake to him in
the mount Sina, and *with* our
fathers: who received the lively
oracles to give unto us:
39 To whom our fathers
would not obey, but thrust *him*
from them, and in their hearts
turned back again into Egypt,
40 Saying unto Aaron, Make
us gods to go before us: for *as
for* this Moses, which brought
us out of the land of Egypt, we
wot not what is become of him.
41 And they made a calf in
those days, and offered sacrifice
unto the idol, and rejoiced in
the works of their own hands.
42 Then God turned, and
gave them up to worship the
host of heaven; as it is written
in the book of the prophets, O
ye house of Israel, have ye of-
fered to me slain beasts and sa-
crifices *by the space of* forty
years in the wilderness?
43 Yea, ye took up the ta-
bernacle of Moloch, and the
star of your god Remphan,
figures which ye made to wor-
ship them: and I will carry you
away beyond Babylon.
44 Our fathers had the taber-
nacle of witness in the wilder-
ness, as he had appointed,
speaking unto Moses, that he
should make it according to the
fashion that he had seen.
45 Which also our fathers
that came after brought in
with Jesus into the possession of
the Gentiles, whom God drave
out before the face of our fa-
thers, unto the days of David:
46 Who found favour before
God, and desired to find a ta-
bernacle for the God of Jacob.
47 But Solomon built him
an house.
48 Howbeit the most High
dwelleth not in temples made
with hands; as saith the pro-
phet,
49 Heaven *is* my throne, and
earth *is* my footstool: what
house will ye build me? saith
the Lord: or what *is* the place
of my rest?
50 Hath not my hand made
all these things?
51 Ye stiffnecked and uncir-
cumcised in heart and ears, ye
do always resist the Holy Ghost:
as your fathers *did*, so *do* ye.
52 Which of the prophets
have not your fathers persecut-
ed? and they have slain them
which shewed before of the
coming of the Just One, of
whom ye have been now the
betrayers and murderers:
53 Who have received the
law by the disposition of an-
gels, and have not kept *it*.
54 ¶ When they heard these
things, they were cut to the
heart, and they gnashed on
him with *their* teeth.
55 But he, being full of the
Holy Ghost, looked up stedfast-
ly into heaven, and saw the glo-
ry of God, and Jesus standing
on the right hand of God,
56 And said, Behold, I see the
heavens opened, and the Son
of man standing on the right
hand

hand of God.

57 Then they cried out with a loud voice, and ſtopped their ears, and ran upon him with one accord,

58 And caſt *him* out of the city, and ſtoned *him:* and the witneſſes laid down their clothes at a young man's feet, whoſe name was Saul.

59 And they ſtoned Stephen, calling upon *God*, and ſaying, Lord Jeſus, receive my ſpirit.

60 And he kneeled down, and cried with a loud voice, Lord, lay not this ſin to their charge. And when he had ſaid this, he fell aſleep.

CHAP. VIII.

Simon the ſorcerer.

AND Saul was conſenting unto his death. And at that time there was a great perſecution againſt the Church which was at Jeruſalem; and they were all ſcattered abroad throughout the regions of Judea and Samaria, except the apoſtles.

2 And devout men carried Stephen *to his burial*, and made great lamentation over him.

3 As for Saul, he made havock of the Church, entering into every houſe, and haling men and women committed *them* to priſon.

4 Therefore they that were ſcattered abroad went every where preaching the word.

5 Then Philip went down to the city of Samaria, and preached Chriſt unto them.

6 And the people with one accord gave heed unto thoſe things which Philip ſpake, hearing and ſeeing the miracles which he did.

7 For unclean ſpirits, crying with loud voice, came out of many that were poſſeſſed *with them:* and many taken with palſies, and that were lame, were healed.

8 And there was great joy in that city.

9 But there was a certain man, called Simon, which beforetime in the ſame city uſed ſorcery, and bewitched the people of Samaria, giving out that himſelf was ſome great one:

10 To whom they all gave heed, from the leaſt to the greateſt, ſaying, This man is the great power of God.

11 And to him they had regard, becauſe that of long time he had bewitched them with ſorceries.

12 But when they believed Philip preaching the things concerning the kingdom of God, and the name of Jeſus Chriſt, they were baptized, both men and women.

13 Then Simon himſelf believed alſo: and when he was baptized, he continued with Philip, and wondered, beholding the miracles and ſigns which were done.

14 ¶ Now when the apoſtles which were at Jeruſalem heard that Samaria had received the word of God, they ſent unto them Peter and John:

15 Who, when they were come down, prayed for them, that they might receive the Holy Ghoſt:

16 For as yet he was fallen upon none of them: only they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jeſus.

17 Then laid they *their* hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghoſt.

18 And when Simon ſaw that through laying on of the apo-

ſtles' hands, the Holy Ghoſt was given, he offered them money,

19 Saying, Give me alſo this power, that on whomſoever I lay hands, he may receive the Holy Ghoſt.

20 But Peter ſaid unto him, Thy money periſh with thee, becauſe thou haſt thought that the gift of God may be purchaſed with money.

21 Thou haſt neither part nor lot in this matter: for thy heart is not right in the ſight of God.

22 Repent therefore of this thy wickedneſs, and pray God, if perhaps the thought of thine heart may be forgiven thee.

23 For I perceive that thou art in the gall of bitterneſs, and *in* the bond of iniquity.

24 Then anſwered Simon, and ſaid, Pray ye to the Lord for me, that none of theſe things which ye have ſpoken come upon me.

25 And they, when they had teſtified and preached the word of the Lord, returned to Jeruſalem, and preached the Goſpel in many villages of the Samaritans.

26 ¶ And the angel of the Lord ſpake unto Philip, ſaying, Ariſe, and go toward the ſouth unto the way that goeth down from Jeruſalem unto Gaza, which is deſert.

27 And he aroſe and went: and, behold, a man of Ethiopia, an eunuch of great authority under Candace queen of the Ethoipians, who had the charge of all her treaſure, and had come to Jeruſalem for to worſhip,

28 Was returning, and ſitting in his chariot read Eſaias the prophet.

29 Then the Spirit ſaid unto Philip, Go near, and join thyſelf to this chariot.

30 And Philip ran thither to *him*, and heard him read the prophet Eſaias, and ſaid, Underſtandeſt thou what thou readeſt?

31 And he ſaid, How can I, except ſome man ſhould guide me? and he deſired Philip that he would come up and ſit with him.

32 The place of the ſcripture which he read was this, He was led as a ſheep to the ſlaughter; and like a lamb dumb before his ſhearer, ſo opened he not his mouth:

33 In his humiliation his judgement was taken away: and who ſhall declare his generation? for his life is taken from the earth.

34 And the eunuch anſwered Philip, and ſaid, I pray thee, of whom ſpeaketh the prophet this? of himſelf, or of ſome other man?

35 Then Philip opened his mouth, and began at the ſame ſcripture, and preached unto him Jeſus.

36 And as they went on *their* way, they came unto a certain water: and the eunuch ſaid, See, *here is* water; what doth hinder me to be baptized?

37 And Philip ſaid, If thou believeſt with all thine heart, thou mayeſt. And he anſwered and ſaid, I believe that Jeſus Chriſt is the Son of God.

38 And he commanded the chariot to ſtand ſtill: and they went down both into the water, both Philip and the eunuch; and he baptized him.

39 And when they were come up out of the water, the Spirit of the Lord caught away Philip, that the eunuch ſaw him no more: and he went on his way rejoicing.

40 But

40 But Philip was found at Azotus: and paſſing through he preached in all the cities, till he came to Ceſarea.

CHAP. IX.

Saul's miraculous converſion.

AND Saul, yet breathing out threatenings and ſlaughter againſt the diſciples of the Lord, went unto the high prieſt,

2 And deſired of him letters to Damaſcus to the ſynagogues, that if he found any of this way, whether they were men or women, he might bring them bound unto Jeruſalem.

3 And as he journeyed, he came near Damaſcus: and ſuddenly there ſhined round about him a light from heaven:

4 And he fell to the earth, and heard a voice ſaying unto him, Saul, Saul, why perſecuteſt thou me?

5 And he ſaid, Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord ſaid, I am Jeſus whom thou perſecuteſt. *It is* hard for thee to kick againſt the pricks.

6 And he trembling and aſtoniſhed, ſaid, Lord, what wilt thou have me to do? And the Lord *ſaid* unto him, Ariſe, and go into the city, and it ſhall be told thee what thou muſt do.

7 And the men which journeyed with him ſtood ſpeechleſs, hearing a voice, but ſeeing no man.

8 And Saul aroſe from the earth; and when his eyes were opened, he ſaw no man: but they led him by the hand, and brought *him* into Damaſcus.

9 And he was three days without ſight, and neither did eat nor drink.

10 ¶ And there was a certain diſciple at Damaſcus, named Ananias: and to him ſaid the Lord in a viſion, Ananias. And he ſaid, Behold, I *am here*, Lord.

11 And the Lord *ſaid* unto him, Ariſe, and go into the ſtreet which is called Straight, and enquire in the houſe of Judas for *one* called Saul of Tarſus: for, behold, he prayeth,

12 And hath ſeen in a viſion a man named Ananias coming in, and putting *his* hand on him, that he might receive his ſight.

13 Then Ananias anſwered, Lord, I have heard by many of this man, how much evil he hath done to thy ſaints at Jeruſalem:

14 And here he hath authority from the chief prieſts to bind all that call on thy name.

15 But the Lord ſaid unto him, Go thy way: for he is a choſen veſſel unto me, to bear my name before the Gentiles, and kings, and the children of Iſrael:

16 For I will ſhew him how great things he muſt ſuffer for my name's ſake.

17 And Ananias went his way, and entered into the houſe; and putting his hands on him, ſaid, Brother Saul, the Lord, *even* Jeſus, that appeared unto thee in the way as thou cameſt, hath ſent me, that thou mighteſt receive thy ſight, and be filled with the Holy Ghoſt.

18 And immediately there fell from his eyes as it had been ſcales: and he received ſight forthwith, and aroſe, and was baptized.

19 And when he had received meat, he was ſtrengthened. Then was Saul certain days with the diſciples which were at Damaſcus.

20 And ſtraightway he preached Chriſt in the ſynagogues,

gogues, that he is the Son of God.

21 But all that heard *him* were amazed, and said, Is not this he that destroyed them which called on this name in Jerusalem, and came hither for that intent, that he might bring them bound unto the chief priests?

22 But Saul increased the more in strength, and confounded the Jews which dwelt at Damascus, proving that this is very Christ.

23 ¶ And after that many days were fulfilled, the Jews took counsel to kill him:

24 But their laying await was known of Saul. And they watched the gates day and night to kill him.

25 Then the disciples took him by night, and let *him* down by the wall in a basket.

26 And when Saul was come to Jerusalem, he assayed to join himself to the disciples: but they were all afraid of him, and believed not that he was a disciple.

27 But Barnabas took him, and brought *him* to the apostles, and declared unto them how he had seen the Lord in the way, and that he had spoken to him, and how he had preached boldly at Damascus in the name of Jesus.

28 And he was with them coming in and going out at Jerusalem.

29 And he spake boldly in the name of the Lord Jesus, and disputed against the Grecians: but they went about to slay him.

30 *Which* when the brethren knew, they brought him down to Cesarea, and sent him forth to Tarsus.

31 Then had the churches rest throughout all Judea and Galilee and Samaria, and were edified; and walking in the fear of the Lord, and in the comfort of the Holy Ghost, were multiplied.

32 ¶ And it came to pass, as Peter passed throughout all *quarters*, he came down also to the saints which dwelt at Lydda.

33 And there he found a certain man named Eneas, which had kept his bed eight years, and was sick of the palsy.

34 And Peter said unto him, Eneas, Jesus Christ maketh thee whole; arise, and make thy bed. And he arose immediately.

35 And all that dwelt in Lydda and Saron saw him, and turned to the Lord.

36 ¶ Now there was at Joppa, a certain disciple named Tabitha, which by interpretation is called Dorcas: this woman was full of good works and almsdeeds which she did.

37 And it came to pass in those days, that she was sick, and died: whom when they had washed, they laid *her* in an upper chamber.

38 And forasmuch as Lydda was nigh to Joppa, and the disciples had heard that Peter was there; they sent unto him two men, desiring *him* that he would not delay to come to them.

39 Then Peter arose and went with them. When he was come, they brought him into the upper chamber: and all the widows stood by him weeping, and shewing the coats and garments which Dorcas made, while she was with them.

40 But Peter put them all forth, and kneeled down and prayed; and turning *him* to the

the body, ſaid, Tabitha, ariſe.
And ſhe opened her eyes: and
when ſhe ſaw Peter, ſhe ſat up.
41 And he gave her *his*
hand, and lifted her up: and
when he had called the ſaints
and widows, he preſented her
alive.
42 And it was known
throughout all Joppa; and many
believed in the Lord.
43 And it came to paſs, that
he tarried many days in Joppa
with one Simon a tanner.

CHAP. X.

Peter's viſion.

THERE was a certain man
in Ceſarea called Corneli-
us, a centurion of the band
called the Italian *band*,
2 *A* devout *man*, and one
that feared God with all his
houſe, which gave much alms
to the people, and prayed to
God alway.
3 He ſaw in a viſion evidently
about the ninth hour of the day
an angel of God coming in to
him, and ſaying unto him, Cor-
nelius.
4 And when he looked on
him, he was afraid, and ſaid,
What is it, Lord? And he ſaid
unto him, Thy prayers and
thine alms are come up for a
memorial before God.
5 And now ſend men to
Joppa, and call for *one* Simon
whoſe ſurname is Peter:
6 He lodgeth with one Simon,
a tanner, whoſe houſe is by the
ſea ſide: he ſhall tell thee what
thou oughteſt to do.
7 And when the angel which
ſpake unto Cornelius was de-
parted, he called two of his
houſhold ſervants, and a devout
ſoldier of them that waited on
him continually;
8 And when he had declared
all *theſe* things unto them, he
ſent them to Joppa.
9 ¶ On the morrow, as they
went on their journey, and
drew nigh unto the city, Peter
went up upon the houſetop to
pray about the ſixth hour:
10 And he became very hun-
gry, and would have eaten:
but while they made ready, he
fell into a trance,
11 And ſaw heaven opened,
and a certain veſſel deſcending
unto him, as it had been a great
ſheet knit at the four corners,
and let down to the earth:
12 Wherein were all manner
of fourfooted beaſts of the
earth, and wild beaſts, and
creeping things, and fowls of
the air.
13 And there came a voice to
him, Riſe, Peter; kill, and eat.
14 But Peter ſaid, Not ſo,
Lord: for I have never eaten
any thing that is common or
unclean.
15 And the voice *ſpake* unto
him again the ſecond time,
What God hath cleanſed, *that*
call not thou common.
16 This was done thrice:
and the veſſel was received up
again into heaven.
17 Now while Peter doubted
in himſelf what this viſion
which he had ſeen ſhould
mean, behold, the men which
were ſent from Cornelius had
made enquiry for Simon's houſe,
and ſtood before the gate,
18 And called, and aſked
whether Simon, which was
ſurnamed Peter, were lodged
there.
19 While Peter thought on
the viſion, the Spirit ſaid unto
him, Behold, three men ſeek
thee.
20 Ariſe therefore, and get
thee

thee down, and go with them, doubting nothing: for I have ſent them.

21 Then Peter went down to the men which were ſent unto him from Cornelius, and ſaid, Behold, I am he whom ye ſeek: what *is* the cauſe whereof ye are come?

22 And they ſaid, Cornelius the centurion, a juſt man, and one that feareth God, and of good report among all the nation of the Jews, was warned from God by an holy angel to ſend for thee into his houſe, and to hear words of thee.

23 Then called he them in, and lodged *them*. And on the morrow Peter went away with them, and certain brethren from Joppa accompanied him.

24 And the morrow after they entered into Ceſarea. And Cornelius waited for them, and had called together his kinſmen and near friends.

25 And as Peter was coming in, Cornelius met him, and fell down at his feet, and worſhipped *him*.

26 But Peter took him up, ſaying, Stand up; I myſelf alſo am a man.

27 And as he talked with him, he went in, and found many that were come together.

28 And he ſaid unto them, Ye know how that it is an unlawful thing for a man that is a Jew to keep company, or come unto one of another nation: but God hath ſhewed me that I ſhould not call any man common or unclean.

29 Therefore came I *unto you* without gainſaying, as ſoon as I was ſent for. I aſk therefore for what intent ye have ſent for me?

30 And Cornelius ſaid, Four days ago I was faſting until this hour, and at the ninth hour I prayed in my houſe; and, behold, a man ſtood before me in bright clothing,

31 And ſaid, Cornelius, thy prayer is heard, and thine alms are had in remembrance in the ſight of God.

32 Send therefore to Joppa, and call hither Simon, whoſe ſurname is Peter; he is lodged in the houſe of *one* Simon a tanner by the ſea ſide: who, when he cometh, ſhall ſpeak unto thee.

33 Immediately therefore I ſent to thee: and thou haſt well done that thou art come. Now therefore are we all here preſent before God, to hear all things that are commanded thee of God.

34 ¶ Then Peter opened *his* mouth, and ſaid, Of a truth I perceive that God is no reſpecter of perſons:

35 But in every nation he that feareth him, and worketh righteouſneſs, is accepted with him.

36 The word which *God* ſent unto the children of Iſrael, preaching peace by Jeſus Chriſt: (he is Lord of all:)

37 That word, *I ſay*, ye know, which was publiſhed throughout all Judea, and began from Galilee, after the baptiſm which John preached;

38 How God anointed Jeſus of Nazareth with the Holy Ghoſt and with power: who went about doing good, and healing all that were oppreſſed of the devil: for God was with him.

39 And we are witneſſes of all things which he did both in the land of the Jews, and in Jeruſalem; whom they ſlew and hanged on a tree:

40 Him God raiſed up the third day, and ſhewed him openly;

41 Not to all the people, but unto witneſſes choſen before of God, *even* to us, who did eat and drink with him after he roſe from the dead.

42 And he commanded us to preach unto the people, and to teſtify that it is he which was ordained of God *to be* the Judge of quick and dead.

43 To him give all the prophets witneſs, that through his name whoſoever believeth in him ſhall receive remiſſion of ſins.

44 ¶ While Peter yet ſpake theſe words, the Holy Ghoſt fell on all them which heard the word.

45 And they of the circumciſion which believed were aſtoniſhed, as many as came with Peter, becauſe that on the Gentiles alſo was poured out the gift of the Holy Ghoſt.

46 For they heard them ſpeak with tongues, and magnify God. Then anſwered Peter,

47 Can any man forbid water, that theſe ſhould not be baptized, which have received the Holy Ghoſt as well as we?

48 And he commanded them to be baptized in the Name of the Lord. Then prayed they him to tarry certain days.

CHAP. XI.

Peter's defence, being accuſed.

AND the apoſtles and brethren that were in Judea heard that the Gentiles had alſo received the word of God.

2 And when Peter was come up to Jeruſalem, they that were of the circumciſion contended with him,

3 Saying, Thou wenteſt in to men uncircumciſed, and didſt eat with them.

4 But Peter rehearſed *the matter* from the beginning, and expounded *it* by order unto them, ſaying,

5 I was in the city of Joppa praying; and in a trance I ſaw a viſion, A certain veſſel deſcend; as it had been a great ſheet, let down from heaven by four corners; and it came even to me:

6 Upon the which when I had faſtened mine eyes, I conſidered, and ſaw fourfooted beaſts of the earth, and wild beaſts, and creeping things, and fowls of the air.

7 And I heard a voice ſaying unto me, Ariſe, Peter; ſlay, and eat.

8 But I ſaid, Not ſo, Lord: for nothing common or unclean hath at any time entered into my mouth.

9 But the voice anſwered me again from heaven, What God hath cleanſed, *that* call not thou common.

10 And this was done three times: and all were drawn up again into heaven.

11 And, behold, immediately there were three men already come unto the houſe where I was, ſent from Ceſarea unto me.

12 And the ſpirit bade me go with them, nothing doubting. Moreover theſe ſix brethren accompanied me, and we entered into the man's houſe:

13 And he ſhewed us how he had ſeen an angel in his houſe, which ſtood and ſaid unto him, Send men to Joppa, and call for Simon, whoſe ſurname is Peter;

14 Who ſhall tell thee words, whereby thou and all thy houſe ſhall be ſaved.

15 And as I began to ſpeak, the

the Holy Ghoſt fell on them, as
on us at the beginning.
16 Then remembered I the
word of the Lord, how that he
ſaid, John indeed baptized with
water; but ye ſhall be baptized
with the Holy Ghoſt.
17 Foraſmuch then as God
gave them the like gift as *he did*
unto us, who believed on the
Lord Jeſus Chriſt, what was I
that I could withſtand God?
18 When they heard theſe
things, they held their peace,
and glorified God, ſaying, Then
hath God alſo to the Gentiles
granted repentance unto life.
19 ¶ Now they which were
ſcattered abroad upon the per-
ſecution that aroſe about Ste-
phen, travelled as far as Phe-
nice, and Cyprus, and Antioch,
preaching the word to none but
unto the Jews only.
20 And ſome of them were
men of Cyprus and Cyrene,
which, when they were come to
Antioch, ſpake unto the Gre-
cians, preaching the Lord Jeſus.
21 And the hand of the Lord
was with them: and a great
number believed, and turned
unto the Lord.
22 Then tidings of theſe
things came unto the ears of
the church which was in Jeru-
ſalem: and they ſent forth Bar-
nabas, that he ſhould go as far
as Antioch.
23 Who, when he came, and
had ſeen the grace of God, was
glad, and exhorted them all,
that with purpoſe of heart they
would cleave unto the Lord.
24 For he was a good man,
and full of the Holy Ghoſt and
of faith: and much people was
added unto the Lord.
25 Then departed Barnabas
to Tarſus, for to ſeek Saul:
26 And when he had found
him, he brought him unto An-
tioch. And it came to paſs, that
a whole year they aſſembled
themſelves with the church, and
taught much people. And the
diſciples were called Chriſtians
firſt in Antioch.
27 ¶ And in theſe days came
prophets from Jeruſalem unto
Antioch.
28 And there ſtood up one
of them named Agabus, who
ſignified by the ſpirit that there
ſhould be great dearth through-
out all the world: which came
to paſs in the days of Claudius
Ceſar.
29 Then the diſciples, every
man according to his ability,
determined to ſend relief unto
the brethren which dwelt in
Judea:
30 Which alſo they did, and
ſent it to the elders by the hands
of Barnabas and Saul.

CHAP. XII.

Herod perſecuteth the Chriſtians.

NOW about that time He-
rod the king ſtretched
forth *his* hands to vex certain of
the church.
2 And he killed James the
brother of John with the ſword.
3 And becauſe he ſaw it
pleaſed the Jews, he proceeded
further to take Peter alſo. Then
were the days of unleavened
bread.
4 And when he had appre-
hended him, he put *him* in pri-
ſon, and delivered *him* to four
quaternions of ſoldiers to keep
him, intending after Eaſter to
bring him forth to the people.
5 Peter therefore was kept
in priſon: but prayer was made
without ceaſing of the church
unto God for him.
6 And when Herod would
have

have brought him forth, the ſame
night Peter was ſleeping be-
tween two ſoldiers, bound with
two chains: and the keepers be-
fore the door kept the priſon.
7 And, behold, the angel of
the Lord came upon *him*, and
a light ſhined in the priſon:
and he ſmote Peter on the ſide,
and raiſed him up, ſaying, Ariſe
up quickly. And his chains fell
off from *his* hands.
8 And the angel ſaid unto
him, Gird thyſelf, and bind on
thy ſandals. And ſo he did.
And he ſaith unto him, Caſt thy
garment about thee, and follow
me.
9 And he went out, and fol-
lowed him, and wiſt not that it
was true which was done by
the angel; but thought he ſaw
a viſion.
10 When they were paſt the
firſt and the ſecond ward, they
came unto the iron gate that
leadeth unto the city; which
opened to them of his own
accord: and they went out, and
paſſed on through one ſtreet;
and forthwith the angel depart-
ed from him.
11 And when Peter was come
to himſelf, he ſaid, Now I know
of a ſurety that the Lord hath
ſent his angel, and hath deliver-
ed me out of the hand of Herod,
and *from* all the expectation of
the people of the Jews.
12 And when he had conſi-
dered *the thing*, he came to the
houſe of Mary the mother of
John, whoſe ſurname was Mark;
where many were gathered to-
gether, praying.
13 And as Peter knocked at
the door of the gate, a damſel
came to hearken, named Rhoda.
14 And when ſhe knew Pe-
ter's voice, ſhe opened not the
gate for gladneſs, but ran in,
and told how Peter ſtood before
the gate.
15 And they ſaid unto her,
Thou art mad. But ſhe conſtant-
ly affirmed that it was even ſo.
Then ſaid they, It is his angel.
16 But Peter continued
knocking. And when they had
opened *the door*, and ſaw him,
they were aſtoniſhed.
17 But he, beckoning unto
them with the hand to hold
their peace, declared unto them
how the Lord had brought him
out of the priſon. And he ſaid,
Go ſhew theſe things unto
James, and to the brethren.
And he departed, and went
into another place.
18 Now as ſoon as it was
day, there was no ſmall ſtir
among the ſoldiers what was
become of Peter.
19 And when Herod had
ſought for him, and found him
not, he examined the keepers,
and commanded that *they* ſhould
be put to death. And he went
down from Judea to Ceſarea,
and *there* abode.
20 ¶ And Herod was highly
diſpleaſed with them of Tyre
and Sidon. But they came with
one accord to him, and, having
made Blaſtus the king's cham-
berlain their friend, deſired
peace; becauſe their country
was nouriſhed by the king's
country.
21 And upon a ſet day Herod,
arrayed in royal apparel, ſat
upon his throne, and made an
oration unto them.
22 And the people gave a
ſhout, *ſaying*, *It is* the voice of
a god, and not of a man.
23 And immediately the an-
gel of the Lord ſmote him, be-
cauſe he gave not God the glory:
and

ſpoken of in the prophets;

41 Behold, ye deſpiſers, and wonder, and periſh: for I work a work in your days, a work which ye ſhall in no wiſe believe, though a man declare it unto you.

42 ¶ And when the Jews were gone out of the ſynagogue, the Gentiles beſought that theſe words might be preached to them the next ſabbath.

43 Now when the congregation was broken up, many of the Jews and religious proſelytes followed Paul and Barnabas: who, ſpeaking to them, perſuaded them to continue in the grace of God.

44 ¶ And the next ſabbath day came almoſt the whole city together to hear the word of God.

45 But when the Jews ſaw the multitudes, they were filled with envy, and ſpake againſt thoſe things which were ſpoken by Paul, contradicting and blaſpheming.

46 Then Paul and Barnabas waxed bold, and ſaid, It was neceſſary that the word of God ſhould firſt have been ſpoken to you: but ſeeing ye put it from you, and judge yourſelves unworthy of everlaſting life, lo, we turn to the Gentiles.

47 For ſo hath the Lord commanded us, *ſaying*, I have ſet thee to be a light of the Gentiles, that thou ſhouldeſt be for ſalvation unto the ends of the earth.

48 And when the Gentiles heard this, they were glad, and glorified the word of the Lord: and as many as were ordained to eternal life believed.

49 And the word of the Lord was publiſhed throughout all the region.

50 But the Jews ſtirred up the devout and honourable women, and the chief men of the city, and raiſed perſecution againſt Paul and Barnabas, and expelled them out of their coaſts.

51 But they ſhook off the duſt of their feet againſt them, and came unto Iconium.

52 And the diſciples were filled with joy, and with the Holy Ghoſt.

CHAP. XIV.

Paul healeth a cripple at Lyſtra.

AND it came to paſs in Iconium, that they went both together into the ſynagogue of the Jews, and ſo ſpake, that a great multitude both of the Jews and alſo of the Greeks believed.

2 But the unbelieving Jews ſtirred up the Gentiles, and made their minds evil affected againſt the brethren.

3 Long time therefore abode they ſpeaking boldly in the Lord, which gave teſtimony unto the word of his grace, and granted ſigns and wonders to be done by their hands.

4 But the multitude of the city was divided: and part held with the Jews, and part with the apoſtles.

5 And when there was an aſſault made both of the Gentiles, and alſo of the Jews with their rulers, to uſe *them* deſpitefully, and to ſtone them,

6 They were ware of *it*, and fled unto Lyſtra and Derbe, cities of Lycaonia, and unto the region that lieth round about:

7 And there they preached the goſpel.

8 ¶ And there ſat a certain man at Lyſtra, impotent in his feet, being a cripple from his mother's womb, who never had walked:

9 The ſame heard Paul ſpeak:
who ſtedfaſtly beholding him,
and perceiving that he had faith
to be healed,
10 Said with a loud voice,
Stand upright on thy feet. And
he leaped and walked.
11 And when the people ſaw
what Paul had done, they lifted
up their voices, ſaying in the
ſpeech of Lycaonia, The gods
are come down to us in the
likeneſs of men.
12 And they called Barnabas,
Jupiter; and Paul, Mercurius,
becauſe he was the chief ſpeaker.
13 Then the prieſt of Jupiter,
which was before their city,
brought oxen and garlands unto
the gates, and would have done
ſacrifice with the people.
14 *Which* when the apoſtles,
Barnabas and Paul, heard *of*,
they rent their clothes, and ran
in among the people, crying out,
15 And ſaying, Sirs, why do
ye theſe things? we alſo are
men of like paſſions with you,
and preach unto you, that ye
ſhould turn from theſe vanities
unto the living God, which
made heaven, and earth, and
the ſea, and all things that are
therein:
16 Who in times paſt ſuffered
all nations to walk in their own
ways.
17 Nevertheleſs he left not
him[illegible]thout witneſs, in that
[illegible] did good, and gave us rain
from heaven, and fruitful ſea-
ſons, filling our hearts with
food and gladneſs.
18 And with theſe ſayings
ſcarce reſtrained they the peo-
ple, that they had not done ſa-
crifice unto them.
19 ¶ And there came thither
certain Jews from Antioch and
Iconium, who perſuaded the
people, and, having ſtoned Paul,
drew *him* out of the city, ſup-
poſing he had been dead.
20 Howbeit, as the diſciples
ſtood round about him, he roſe
up, and came into the city:
and the next day he departed
with Barnabas to Derbe.
21 ¶ And when they had preach-
ed the goſpel to that city, and
had taught many, they return-
ed again to Lyſtra, and *to* Iconi-
um, and Antioch,
22 Confirming the ſouls of
the diſciples, *and* exhorting
them to continue in the faith,
and that we muſt through
much tribulation enter into the
kingdom of God.
23 And when they had or-
dained them elders in every
church, and had prayed with
faſting, they commended them
to the Lord, on whom they be-
lieved.
24 And after they had paſſed
throughout Piſidia, they came
to Pamphylia.
25 And when they had
preached the word in Perga,
they went down into Attalia:
26 And thence ſailed to An-
tioch, from whence they had
been recommended to the
grace of God for the work
which they fulfilled.
27 And when they were come,
and had gathered the church
together, they rehearſed all that
God had done with them, and
how he had opened the door of
faith unto the Gentiles.
28 And there they abode long
time with the diſciples.

CHAP. XV.

Diſſenſion about circumciſion.

AND certain men which
came down from Judea
taught the brethren, *and ſaid*,
Ex[illegible]t ye be circumciſed after
the

the manner of Moſes, ye cannot be ſaved.

2 When therefore Paul and Barnabas had no ſmall diſſenſion and diſputation with them, they determined that Paul and Barnabas, and certain other of them, ſhould go up to Jeruſalem unto the apoſtles and elders about this queſtion.

3 And being brought on their way by the church, they paſſed through Phenice and Samaria, declaring the converſion of the Gentiles: and they cauſed great joy unto all the brethren.

4 And when they were come to Jeruſalem, they were received of the church, and *of* the apoſtles and elders, and they declared all things that God had done with them.

5 But there roſe up certain of the ſect of the Phariſees which believed, ſaying, That it was needful to circumciſe them, and to command *them* to keep the law of Moſes.

6 ¶ And the apoſtles and elders came together for to conſider of this matter.

7 And when there had been much diſputing, Peter roſe up, and ſaid unto them, Men *and* brethren, ye know how that a good while ago God made choice among us, that the Gentiles by my mouth ſhould hear the word of the goſpel, and believe.

8 And God, which knoweth the hearts, bare them witneſs, giving them the Holy Ghoſt, even as *he did* unto us;

9 And put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith.

10 Now therefore why tempt ye God, to put a yoke upon the neck of the diſciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear?

11 But we believe that through the grace of the Lord Jeſus Chriſt we ſhall be ſaved, even as they.

12 Then all the multitude kept ſilence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what miracles and wonders God had wrought among the Gentiles by them.

13 And after they had held their peace, James anſwered, ſaying, Men *and* brethren, hearken unto me:

14 Simeon hath declared how God at the firſt did viſit the Gentiles, to take out of them a people for his name.

15 And to this agree the words of the prophets; as it is written,

16 After this I will return, and will build again the tabernacle of David, which is fallen down; and I will build again the ruins thereof, and I will ſet it up:

17 That the reſidue of men might ſeek after the Lord, and all the Gentiles, upon whom my name is called, ſaith the Lord, who doeth all theſe things.

18 Known unto God are all his works from the beginning of the world.

19 Wherefore my ſentence is, that we trouble not them, which from among the Gentiles are turned to God:

20 But that we write unto them, that they abſtain from pollutions of idols, and *from* fornication, and *from* things ſtrangled, and *from* blood.

21 For Moſes of old time hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the ſynagogues every ſabbath day.

22 ¶ Then pleaſed it the apo-
ſtles and elders with the whole
church, to ſend choſen men of
their own company to Antioch
with Paul and Barnabas; *name-
ly*, Judas ſurnamed Barſabas,
and Silas, chief men among the
brethren:
23 And they wrote *letters* by
them after this manner; The
apoſtles and elders and bre-
thren *ſend* greeting unto the
brethren which are of the Gen-
tiles in Antioch and Syria and
Cilicia:
24 Foraſmuch as we have
heard, that certain which went
out from us have troubled you
with words, ſubverting your
ſouls, ſaying, *Ye muſt* be cir-
cumciſed, and keep the law:
to whom we gave no ſuch com-
mandment:
25 It ſeemed good unto us,
being aſſembled with one ac-
cord, to ſend choſen men unto
you with our beloved Barnabas
and Paul,
26 Men that have hazarded
their lives for the name of our
Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
27 We have ſent therefore Ju-
das and Silas, who ſhall alſo tell
you the ſame things by mouth.
28 For it ſeemed good to the
Holy Ghoſt, and to us, to lay
upon you no greater burden
than theſe neceſſary things;
29 That ye abſtain from
meats offered to idols, and from
blood, and from things ſtrang-
led, and from fornication: from
which if ye keep yourſelves, ye
ſhall do well. Fare ye well.
30 So when they were diſ-
miſſed, they came to Antioch:
and when they had gathered
the multitude together, they
delivered the epiſtle:
31 *Which* when they had read,
they rejoiced for the conſo-
lation.
32 And Judas and Silas, be-
ing prophets alſo themſelves,
exhorted the brethren with ma-
ny words, and confirmed *them*.
33 And after they had tarried
there a ſpace, they were let go
in peace from the brethren unto
the apoſtles.
34 Notwithſtanding it pleaſed
Silas to abide there ſtill.
35 Paul alſo and Barnabas
continued in Antioch, teaching
and preaching the word of the
Lord, with many others alſo.
36 ¶ And ſome days after
Paul ſaid unto Barnabas, Let us
go again and viſit our brethren
in every city where we have
preached the word of the Lord,
and ſee how they do.
37 And Barnabas determined
to take with them John, whoſe
ſurname was Mark.
38 But Paul thought not good
to take him with them, who
departed from them from Pam-
phylia, and went not with them
to the work.
39 And the contention was
ſo ſharp between them, that
they departed aſunder one from
the other: and ſo Barnabas took
Mark, and ſailed unto Cyprus;
40 And Paul choſe Silas, and
departed, being recommended
by the brethren unto the grace
of God.
41 And he went through Sy-
ria and Cilicia, confirming the
churches.

CHAP. XVI.

Paul circumciſeth Timothy.

THEN came he to Derbe
and Lyſtra: and, behold,
a certain diſciple was there,
named Timotheus, the ſon of
a certain woman, which was a
Jeweſs, and believed; but his
father

father *was* a Greek:
2 Which was well reported
of by the brethren that were at
Lyſtra and Iconium.
3 Him would Paul have to
go forth with him; and took
and circumciſed him becauſe of
the Jews which were in thoſe
quarters: for they knew all that
his father was a Greek.
4 And as they went through
the cities, they delivered them
the decrees for to keep, that were
ordained of the apoſtles and el-
ders which were at Jeruſalem.
5 And ſo were the churches
eſtabliſhed in the faith, and in-
creaſed in number daily.
6 Now when they had gone
throughout Phrygia and the
region of Galatia, and were
forbidden of the Holy Ghoſt
to preach the word in Aſia,
7 After they were come to
Myſia, they aſſayed to go into
Bithynia: but the Spirit ſuffer-
ed them not.
8 And they paſſing by Myſia
came down to Troas.
9 And a viſion appeared to
Paul in the night: there ſtood
a man of Macedonia, and pray-
ed him, ſaying, Come over into
Macedonia, and help us.
10 And after he had ſeen the
viſion, immediately we endea-
voured to go into Macedonia,
aſſuredly gathering that the
Lord had called us for to
preach the goſpel unto them.
11 Therefore looſing from
Troas, we came with a ſtraight
courſe to Samothracia, and the
next *day* to Neapolis;
12 And from thence to Phi-
lippi, which is the chief city of
that part of Macedonia, *and* a
colony: and we were in that
city abiding certain days.
13 And on the ſabbath we
went out of the city by a river
ſide, where prayer was wont to
be made; and we ſat down, and
ſpake unto the women which
reſorted *thither*.
14 ¶ And a certain woman
named Lydia, a ſeller of purple,
of the city of Thyatira, which
worſhipped God, heard *us*:
whoſe heart the Lord opened,
that ſhe attended unto the
things which were ſpoken of
Paul.
15 And when ſhe was bap-
tized, and her houſhold, ſhe
beſought *us*, ſaying, If ye have
judged me to be faithful to
the Lord, come into my houſe,
and abide *there*. And ſhe con-
ſtrained us.
16 ¶ And it came to paſs, as
we went to prayer, a certain
damſel poſſeſſed with a ſpirit
of divination met us, which
brought her maſters much gain
by ſoothſaying:
17 The ſame followed Paul
and us, and cried, ſaying, Theſe
men are the ſervants of the
moſt high God, which ſhew
unto us the way of ſalvation.
18 And this did ſhe many days.
But Paul, being grieved, turned
and ſaid to the ſpirit, I com-
mand thee in the name of Jeſus
Chriſt to come out of her. And
he came out the ſame hour.
19 ¶ And when her maſters
ſaw that the hope of their gains
was gone, they caught Paul and
Silas, and drew *them* into the
marketplace unto the rulers,
20 And brought them to the
magiſtrates, ſaying, Theſe men,
being Jews, do exceedingly
trouble our city,
21 And teach cuſtoms, which
are not lawful for us to receive,
neither to obſerve, being Ro-
mans.

22 And

22 And the multitude rofe up
together againft them: and the
magiftrates rent off their clothes,
and commanded to beat *them*.
23 And when they had laid
many ftripes upon them, they
caft *them* into prifon, charging
the jailor to keep them fafely:
24 Who, having received fuch
a charge, thruft them into the
inner prifon, and made their
feet faft in the ftocks.
25 ¶ And at midnight Paul
and Silas prayed, and fang
praifes unto God: and the pri-
foners heard them.
26 And fuddenly there was a
great earthquake, fo that the
foundations of the prifon were
fhaken: and immediately all the
doors were opened, and every
one's bands were loofed.
27 And the keeper of the
prifon awaking out of his fleep,
and feeing the prifon doors
open, he drew out his fword,
and would have killed himfelf,
fuppofing that the prifoners
had been fled.
28 But Paul cried with a loud
voice, faying, Do thyfelf no
harm: for we are all here.
29 Then he called for a light,
and fprang in, and came trem-
bling, and fell down before
Paul and Silas,
30 And brought them out,
and faid, Sirs, what muft I do
to be faved?
31 And they faid, Believe on
the Lord Jefus Chrift, and thou
fhalt be faved, and thy houfe.
32 And they fpake unto him
the word of the Lord, and to
all that were in his houfe.
33 And he took them the
fame hour of the night, and
wafhed *their* ftripes; and was
baptized, he and all his,
ftraightway.

34 And when he had brought
them into his houfe, he fet
meat before them, and rejoic-
ed, believing in God with all
his houfe.
35 And when it was day, the
magiftrates fent the ferjeants,
faying, Let thofe men go.
36 And the keeper of the pri-
fon told this faying to Paul,
The magiftirates have fent to let
you go: now therefore depart,
and go in peace.
37 But Paul faid unto them,
They have beaten us openly
uncondemned, being Romans,
and have caft *us* into prifon;
and now do they thruft us out
privily? nay verily; but let
them come themfelves and
fetch us out.
38 And the ferjeants told thefe
words unto the magiftrates;
and they feared, when they
heard that they were Romans.
39 And they came and be-
fought them, and brought *them*
out, and defired *them* to depart
out of the city.
40 And they went out of the
prifon, and entered into *the
houfe of* Lydia: and when they
had feen the brethren, they
comforted them, and departed.

CHAP. XVII.

Paul preacheth at Theffalonica.

NOW when they had paffed
through Amphipolis and
Apollonia, they came to Thef-
falonica, where was a fyna-
gogue of the Jews:
2 And Paul, as his manner
was, went in unto them, and
three fabbath days reafoned
with them out of the fcriptures,
3 Opening and alledging, that
Chrift muft needs have fuffered,
and rifen again from the dead:
and that this Jefus, whom I
preach unto you, is Chrift.

4 And

4 And ſome of them believed, and conſorted with Paul and Silas; and of the devout Greeks a great multitude, and of the chief women not a few.

5 But the Jews which believed not, moved with envy, took unto them certain lewd fellows of the baſer ſort, and gathered a company, and ſet all the city on an uproar, and aſſaulted the houſe of Jaſon, and ſought to bring them out to the people.

6 And when they found them not, they drew Jaſon and certain brethren unto the rulers of the city, crying, Theſe that have turned the world upſide down are come hither alſo;

7 Whom Jaſon hath received: and theſe all do contrary to the decrees of Ceſar, ſaying that there is another king, *one* Jeſus.

8 And they troubled the people and the rulers of the city, when they heard theſe things.

9 And when they had taken ſecurity of Jaſon, and of the other, they let them go.

10 ¶ And the brethren immediately ſent away Paul and Silas by night unto Berea: who coming *thither* went into the ſynagogue of the Jews.

11 Theſe were more noble than thoſe in Theſſalonica, in that they received the word with all readineſs of mind, and ſearched the ſcriptures daily, whether thoſe things were ſo.

12 Therefore many of them believed; alſo of honourable women which were Greeks, and of men, not a few.

13 But when the Jews of Theſſalonica had knowledge that the word of God was preached of Paul at Berea, they came thither alſo, and [illegible] up the people.

14 And then immediately the brethren ſent away Paul to go as it were to the ſea: but Silas and Timotheus abode there ſtill.

15 And they that conducted Paul brought him unto Athens: and receiving a commandment unto Silas and Timotheus for to come to him with all ſpeed, they departed.

16 ¶ Now while Paul waited for them at Athens, his ſpirit was ſtirred in him, when he ſaw the city wholly given to idolatry.

17 Therefore diſputed he in the ſynagogue with the Jews, and with the devout perſons, and in the market daily with them that met with him.

18 Then certain philoſophers of the Epicureans, and of the Stoicks, encountered him. And ſome ſaid, What will this babbler ſay? other ſome, He ſeemeth to be a ſetter forth of ſtrange gods: becauſe he preached unto them Jeſus, and the reſurrection.

19 And they took him, and brought him unto Areopagus, ſaying, May we know what this new doctrine, whereof thou ſpeakeſt, *is?*

20 For thou bringeſt certain ſtrange things to our ears: we would know therefore what theſe things mean.

21 (For all the Athenians and ſtrangers which were there ſpent their time in nothing elſe, but either to tell, or to hear ſome new thing.)

22 Then Paul ſtood in the midſt of Mars' hill, and ſaid, Ye men of Athens, I perceive that in all things ye are too ſuperſtitious.

23 For as I paſſed by, and beheld your devotions, I found an altar with this inſcription, TO THE

THE UNKNOWN GOD. Whom therefore ye ignorantly worſhip, him declare I unto you.

24 God that made the world and all things therein, ſeeing that he is Lord of heaven and earth, dwelleth not in temples made with hands;

25 Neither is worſhipped with men's hands, as though he needed any thing, ſeeing he giveth to all life, and breath, and all things;

26 And hath made of one blood all nations of men for to dwell on all the face of the earth, and hath determined the times before appointed, and the bounds of their habitation;

27 That they ſhould ſeek the Lord, if haply they might feel after him, and find him, though he be not far from every one of us:

28 For in him we live, and more, and have our being; as certain alſo of your own poets have ſaid, For we are alſo his offspring.

29 Foraſmuch then as we are the offspring of God, we ought not to think that the Godhead is like unto gold, or ſilver, or ſtone, graven by art and man's device.

30 And the times of this ignorance God winked at: but now commandeth all men every where to repent:

31 Becauſe he hath appointed a day, in the which he will judge the world in righteouſneſs by *that* man whom he hath ordained; *whereof* he hath given aſſurance unto all *men*, in that he hath raiſed him from the dead.

32 And when they heard of the reſurrection of the dead, ſome mocked: and others ſaid, We will hear thee again of this *matter.*

33 So Paul departed from among them.

34 ¶ Howbeit certain men clave unto him, and believed: among the which *was* Dionyſius the Areopagite, and a woman named Damaris, and others with them.

CHAP. XVIII.

Paul accuſed before Gallio.

AFTER theſe things Paul departed from Athens, and came to Corinth;

2 And found a certain Jew named Aquila, born in Pontus, lately come from Italy, with his wife Priſcilla; (becauſe that Claudius had commanded all Jews to depart from Rome:) and came unto them.

3 And becauſe he was of the ſame craft, he abode with them, and wrought; for by their occupation they were tentmakers.

4 And he reaſoned in the ſynagogue every ſabbath, and perſuaded the Jews and the Greeks.

5 And when Silas and Timotheus were come from Macedonia, Paul was preſſed in the ſpirit, and teſtified to the Jews *that* Jeſus *was* Chriſt.

6 And when they oppoſed themſelves, and blaſphemed, he ſhook *his* raiment, and ſaid unto them, Your blood *be* upon your own heads: I *am* clean: from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles.

7 And he departed thence, and entered into a certain *man's* houſe, named Juſtus, *one* that worſhipped God, whoſe houſe joined hard to the ſynagogue.

8 And Criſpus, the chief ruler of the ſynagogue, believed on the Lord with all his houſe; and many of the Corinthians

hearing believed, and were baptized.

9 ¶ Then ſpake the Lord to Paul in the night by a viſion, Be not afraid, but ſpeak, and hold not thy peace:

10 For I am with thee, and no man ſhall ſet on thee to hurt thee: for I have much people in this city.

11 And he continued *there* a year and ſix months, teaching the word of God among them.

12 ¶ And when Gallio was the deputy of Achaia, the Jews made inſurrection with one accord againſt Paul, and brought him to the judgement ſeat,

13 Saying, This *fellow* perſuadeth men to worſhip God contrary to the law.

14 And when Paul was now about to open *his* mouth, Gallio ſaid unto the Jews, If it were a matter of wrong or wicked lewdneſs, O *ye* Jews, reaſon would that I ſhould bear with you:

15 But if it be a queſtion of words and names, and *of* your law, look ye *to it;* for I will be no judge of ſuch *matters.*

16 And he drave them from the judgement ſeat.

17 Then all the Greeks took Soſthenes, the chief ruler of the ſynagogue, and beat *him* before the judgement ſeat. And Gallio cared for none of thoſe things.

18 And Paul *after this* tarried *there* yet a good while, and then took his leave of the brethren, and ſailed thence into Syria, and with him Priſcilla and Aquila: having ſhorn *his* head in Cenchrea: for he had a vow.

19 And he came to Epheſus, and left them there: but he himſelf entered into the ſynagogue, and reaſoned with the Jews.

20 When they deſired *him* to tarry longer time with them, he conſented not;

21 But bade them farewel, ſaying, I muſt by all means keep this feaſt that cometh in Jeruſalem: but I will return again unto you, if God will. And he ſailed from Epheſus.

22 And when he had landed at Ceſarea, and gone up, and ſaluted the church, he went down to Antioch.

23 And after he had ſpent ſome time *there,* he departed and went over *all* the country of Galatia and Phrygia in order, ſtrengthening all the diſciples.

24 ¶ And a certain Jew named Apollos, born at Alexandria, an eloquent man, *and* mighty in the ſcriptures, came to Epheſus.

25 This man was inſtructed in the way of the Lord; and being fervent in the ſpirit, he ſpake and taught diligently the things of the Lord, knowing only the baptiſm of John.

26 And he began to ſpeak boldly in the ſynagogue: whom when Aquila and Priſcilla had heard, they took him unto *them,* and expounded unto him the way of God more perfectly.

27 And when he was diſpoſed to paſs into Achaia, the brethren wrote, exhorting the diſciples to receive him: who, when he was come, helped them much which had believed through grace:

28 For he mightily convinced the Jews, *and that* publickly, ſhewing by the ſcriptures that Jeſus was Chriſt.

CHAP. XIX.

The Holy Ghost given.

AND it came to paſs, that, while Apollos was at Corinth, Paul having paſſed through the upper coaſts came to Epheſus: and finding certain diſciples,

2 He ſaid unto them, Have ye received the Holy Ghoſt ſince ye believed? And they ſaid unto him, We have not ſo much as heard whether there be any Holy Ghoſt.

3 And he ſaid unto them, Unto what then were ye baptized? And they ſaid, Unto John's baptiſm.

4 Then ſaid Paul, John verily baptized with the baptiſm of repentance, ſaying unto the people, That they ſhould believe on him which ſhould come after him, that is, on Chriſt Jeſus.

5 When they heard *this*, they were baptized in the name of the Lord Jeſus.

6 And when Paul had laid *his* hands upon them, the Holy Ghoſt came on them; and they ſpake with tongues, and propheſied.

7 And all the men were about twelve.

8 And he went into the ſynagogue, and ſpake boldly for the ſpace of three months, diſputing and perſuading the things concerning the kingdom of God.

9 But when divers were hardened, and believed not, but ſpake evil of that way before the multitude, he departed from them, and ſeparated the diſciples, diſputing daily in the ſchool of one Tyrannus.

10 And this continued by the ſpace of two years; ſo that all they which dwelt in Aſia heard the word of the Lord Jeſus, both Jews and Greeks.

11 And God wrought ſpecial miracles by the hands of Paul:

12 So that from his body were brought unto the ſick handkerchiefs or aprons, and the diſeaſes departed from them, and the evil ſpirits went out of them.

13 Then certain of the vagabond Jews, exorciſts, took upon them to call over them which had evil ſpirits the name of the Lord Jeſus, ſaying, We adjure you by Jeſus whom Paul preacheth.

14 And there were ſeven ſons of *one* Sceva, a Jew, *and* chief of the prieſts, which did ſo.

15 And the evil ſpirit anſwered and ſaid, Jeſus I know, and Paul I know; but who are ye?

16 And the man in whom the evil ſpirit was leaped on them, and overcame them, and prevailed againſt them, ſo that they fled out of that houſe naked and wounded.

17 And this was known to all the Jews and Greeks alſo dwelling at Epheſus; and fear fell on them all, and the name of the Lord Jeſus was magnified.

18 And many that believed came, and confeſſed, and ſhewed their deeds.

19 Many of them alſo which uſed curious arts brought their books together, and burned them before all *men*: and they counted the price of them, and found *it* fifty thouſand *pieces* of ſilver.

20 So mightily grew the word of God and prevailed.

21 After theſe things were ended, Paul purpoſed in the ſpirit, when he had paſſed

through Macedonia and Achaia, to go to Jerusalem, saying, After I have been there, I must also see Rome.

22 So he sent into Macedonia two of them that ministered unto him, Timotheus and Erastus; but he himself stayed in Asia for a season.

23 And the same time there arose no small stir about that way.

24 For a certain *man* named Demetrius, a silversmith, which made silver shrines for Diana, brought no small gain unto the craftmen;

25 Whom he called together with the workmen of like occupation, and said, Sirs, ye know that by this craft we have our wealth.

26 Moreover ye see and hear, that not alone at Ephesus, but almost throughout all Asia, this Paul hath persuaded and turned away much people, saying that they be no gods, which are made with hands:

27 So that not only this our craft is in danger to be set at nought; but also that the temple of the great goddess Diana should be despised, and her magnificence should be destroyed, whom all Asia and the world worshippeth.

28 And when they heard *these sayings*, they were full of wrath, and cried out, saying, Great *is* Diana of the Ephesians.

29 And the whole city was filled with confusion: and having caught Gaius and Aristarchus, men of Macedonia, Paul's companions in travail, they rushed with one accord into the theatre.

30 And when Paul would have entered in unto the people, the disciples suffered him not.

31 And certain of the chief of Asia, which were his friends, sent unto him, desiring *him* that he would not adventure himself into the theatre.

32 Some therefore cried one thing, and some another: for the assembly was confused; and the more part knew not wherefore they were come together.

33 And they drew Alexander out of the multitude, the Jews putting him forward: and Alexander beckoned with the hand, and would have made his defence unto the people.

34 But when they knew that he was a Jew, all with one voice about the space of two hours cried out, Great *is* Diana of the Ephesians.

35 And when the townclerk had appeased the people, he said, *Ye* men of Ephesus, what man is there that knoweth not how that the city of the Ephesians is a worshipper of the great goddess Diana, and of the *image* which fell down from Jupiter?

36 Seeing then that these things cannot be spoken against, ye ought to be quiet, and to do nothing rashly.

37 For ye have brought hither these men, which are neither robbers of churches, nor yet blasphemers of your goddess.

38 Wherefore if Demetrius and the craftsmen which are with him, have a matter against any man, the law is open, and there are deputies: let them implead one another.

39 But if ye enquire any thing concerning other matters, it shall be determined in a lawful assembly.

40 For we are in danger to
be called in queſtion for this
day's uproar, there being no
cauſe whereby we may give an
account of this concourſe.
41 And when he had thus ſpok-
en, he diſmiſſed the aſſembly.

CHAP. XX.

The Lord's ſupper inſtituted.

AND after the uproar was
ceaſed, Paul called unto
him the diſciples, and embraced
them, and departed for to go
into Macedonia.
2 And when he had gone
over thoſe parts, and had given
them much exhortation, he
came into Greece,
3 And *there* abode three
months. And when the Jews laid
wait for him, as he was about
to ſail into Syria, he purpoſed
to return through Macedonia.
4 And there accompanied
him into Aſia Sopater of Berea;
and of the Theſſalonians, Ari-
ſtarchus and Secundus; and
Gaius of Derbe, and Timothe-
us; and of Aſia, Tychicus and
Trophimus.
5 Theſe going before tarried
for us at Troas.
6 ¶ And we ſailed away from
Philippi after the days of un-
leavened bread, and came unto
them to Troas in five days;
where we abode ſeven days.
7 And upon the firſt *day* of
the week, when the diſciples
came together to break bread,
Paul preached unto them, rea-
dy to depart on the morrow;
and continued his ſpeech until
midnight.
8 And there were many lights
in the upper chamber, where
they were gathered together.
9 And there ſat in a window
a certain young man named
Eutychus, being fallen into a
deep ſleep: and as Paul was
long preaching, he ſunk down
with ſleep, and fell down from
the third loft, and was taken
up dead.
10 And Paul went down, and
fell on him, and embracing *him*
ſaid, Trouble not yourſelves;
for his life is in him.
11 When he therefore was
come up again, and had broken
bread, and eaten, and talked a
long while, even till break of
day, ſo he departed.
12 And they brought the
young man alive, and were not
a little comforted.
13 And we went before to
ſhip, and ſailed unto Aſſos, there
intending to take in Paul: for
ſo had he appointed, minding
himſelf to go afoot.
14 And when he met with
us at Aſſos, we took him in,
and came to Mitylene.
15 And we ſailed thence,
and came the next *day* over
againſt Chios; and the next
day we arrived at Samos, and
tarried at Trogyllium; and the
next *day* we came to Miletus.
16 For Paul had determined
to ſail by Epheſus, becauſe he
would not ſpend the time in
Aſia: for he haſted, if it were
poſſible for him, to be at Jeru-
ſalem the day of Pentecoſt.
17 ¶ And from Miletus he
ſent to Epheſus, and called the
elders of the church.
18 And when they were come to
him, he ſaid unto them, Ye know,
from the firſt day that I came
into Aſia, after what manner I
have been with you at all ſeaſons,
19 Serving the Lord with all
humility of mind, and with
many tears, and temptations,
which befel me by the lying in
wait of the Jews:

20 *And* how I kept back nothing that was profitable *unto you,* but have ſhewed you, and have taught you publickly, and from houſe to houſe,

21 Teſtifying both to the Jews, and alſo to the Greeks, repentance toward God, and faith toward our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

22 And now, behold, I go bound in the ſpirit unto Jeruſalem, not knowing the things that ſhall befal me there:

23 Save that the Holy Ghoſt witneſſeth in every city, ſaying that bonds and afflictions abide me.

24 But none of theſe things move me, neither count I my life dear unto myſelf, ſo that I might finiſh my courſe with joy, and the miniſtry, which I have received of the Lord Jeſus, to teſtify the goſpel of the grace of God.

25 And now, behold, I know that ye all, among whom I have gone preaching the kingdom of God, ſhall ſee my face no more.

26 Wherefore I take you to record this day, that I *am* pure from the blood of all *men.*

27 For I have not ſhunned to declare unto you all the counſel of God.

28 Take heed therefore unto yourſelves, and to all the flock, over the which the Holy Ghoſt hath made you overſeers, to feed the church of God, which he hath purchaſed with his own blood.

29 For I know this, that after my departing ſhall grievous wolves enter in among you, not ſparing the flock.

30 Alſo of your own ſelves ſhall men ariſe, ſpeaking perverſe things, to draw away diſciples after them.

31 Therefore watch, and remember, that by the ſpace of three years I ceaſed not to warn every one night and day with tears.

32 And now, brethren, I commend you to God, and to the word of his grace, which is able to build you up, and to give you an inheritance among all them which are ſanctified.

33 I have coveted no man's ſilver, or gold, or apparel.

34 Yea, ye yourſelves know, that theſe hands have miniſtered unto my neceſſities, and to them that were with me.

35 I have ſhewed you all things, how that ſo labouring ye ought to ſupport the weak, and to remember the words of the Lord Jeſus, how he ſaid, It is more bleſſed to give than to receive.

36 ¶ And when he had thus ſpoken, he kneeled down, and prayed with them all.

37 And they all wept ſore, and fell on Paul's neck, and kiſſed him,

38 Sorrowing moſt of all for the words which he ſpake, that they ſhould ſee his face no more. And they accompanied him unto the ſhip.

CHAP. XXI.

Paul impriſoned at Jeruſalem.

AND it came to paſs, that after we were gotten from them, and had launched, we came with a ſtraight courſe unto Coos, and the *day* following unto Rhodes, and from thence unto Patara:

2 And finding a ſhip ſailing over unto Phenicia, we went aboard, and ſet forth.

3 Now when we had diſcovered Cyprus, we left it on the left hand, and ſailed into Syria,

ria, and landed at Tyre: for
there the ſhip was to unlade
her burden.
4 And finding diſciples, we
tarried there ſeven days: who
ſaid to Paul through the Spi-
rit, that he ſhould not go up to
Jeruſalem.
5 And when we had accom-
pliſhed thoſe days, we depart-
ed and went our way: and
they all brought us on our way,
with wives and children, till
we were out of the city: and
we kneeled down on the ſhore,
and prayed.
6 And when we had taken
our leave one of another, we
took ſhip; and they returned
home again.
7 And when we had finiſhed
our courſe from Tyre, we came
to Ptolemais, and ſaluted the
brethren, and abode with them
one day.
8 And the next *day* we that
were of Paul's company de-
parted, and came unto Ceſarea:
and we entered into the houſe
of Philip the evangeliſt, which
was *one* of the ſeven, and abode
with him.
9 ¶ And the ſame man had
four daughters, virgins, which
did propheſy.
10 And as we tarried *there*
many days, there came down
from Judea a certain prophet,
named Agabus.
11 And when he was come
unto us, he took Paul's girdle,
and bound his own hands and
feet, and ſaid, Thus ſaith the
Holy Ghoſt, So ſhall the Jews
at Jeruſalem bind the man that
owneth this girdle, and ſhall
deliver *him* into the hands of
the Gentiles.
12 And when we heard theſe
things, both we, and they of
that place, beſought him not to
go up to Jeruſalem.
13 Then Paul anſwered,
What mean ye to weep, and to
break mine heart? for I am rea-
dy not to be bound only, but
alſo to die at Jeruſalem for the
name of the Lord Jeſus.
14 And when he would not
be perſuaded, we ceaſed, ſaying,
The will of the Lord be done.
15 And after thoſe days we
took up our carriages, and went
up to Jeruſalem.
16 There went with us alſo
certain of the diſciples of Ceſa-
rea, and brought with them one
Mnaſon of Cyprus, an old diſci-
ple, with whom we ſhould lodge.
17 And when we were come
to Jeruſalem, the brethren re-
ceived us gladly.
18 ¶ And the *day* following Paul
went in with us unto James;
and all the elders were preſent.
19 And when he had ſaluted
them, he declared particularly
what things God had wrought
among the Gentiles by his mi-
niſtry.
20 And when they heard *it*,
they glorified the Lord, and ſaid
unto him, Thou ſeeſt, brother,
how many thouſands of Jews
there are which believe; and
they are all zealous of the law:
21 And they are informed of
thee, that thou teacheſt all the
Jews which are among the Gen-
tiles to forſake Moſes, ſaying
that they ought not to circum-
ciſe *their* children, neither to
walk after the cuſtoms.
22 What is it therefore? the
multitude muſt needs come to-
gether: for they will hear that
thou art come.
23 Do therefore this that we
ſay to thee: We have four men
which have a vow on them;

24 Them take, and purify thyſelf with them, and be at charges with them, that they may ſhave *their* heads: and all may know that thoſe things, whereof they were informed concerning thee, are nothing; but *that* thou thyſelf alſo walkeſt orderly, and keepeſt the law.

25 As touching the Gentiles which believe, we have written *and* concluded that they obſerve no ſuch thing, ſave only that they keep themſelves from *things* offered to idols, and from blood, and from ſtrangled, and from fornication.

26 Then Paul took the men, and the next day purifying himſelf with them entered into the temple, to ſignify the accompliſhment of the days of purification, until that an offering ſhould be offered for every one of them.

27 And when the ſeven days were almoſt ended, the Jews which were of Aſia, when they ſaw him in the temple, ſtirred up all the people, and laid hands on him,

28 Crying out, Men of Iſrael, help: This is the man, that teacheth all *men* every where againſt the people, and the law, and this place: and further brought Greeks alſo into the temple, and hath polluted this holy place.

29 (For they had ſeen before with him in the city Trophimus an Epheſian, whom they ſuppoſed that Paul had brought into the temple.)

30 And all the city was moved, and the people ran together: and they took Paul, and drew him out of the temple: and forthwith the doors were ſhut.

31 ¶ And as they went about to kill him, tidings came unto the chief captain of the band, that all Jeruſalem was in an uproar.

32 Who immediately took ſoldiers and centurions, and ran down unto them: and when they ſaw the chief captain and the ſoldiers, they left beating of Paul.

33 Then the chief captain came near, and took him, and commanded *him* to be bound with two chains; and demanded who he was, and what he had done.

34 And ſome cried one thing, ſome another, among the multitude: and when he could not know the certainty for the tumult, he commanded him to be carried into the caſtle.

35 And when he came upon the ſtairs, ſo it was that he was borne of the ſoldiers for the violence of the people.

36 For the multitude of the people followed after, crying, Away with him.

37 And as Paul was to be led into the caſtle, he ſaid unto the chief captain, May I ſpeak unto thee? Who ſaid, Canſt thou ſpeak Greek?

38 Art not thou that Egyptain, which before theſe days madeſt an uproar, and leddeſt out into the wilderneſs four thouſand men that were murderers?

39 But Paul ſaid, I am a man *which am* a Jew of Tarſus, *a city* in Cilicia, a citizen of no mean city: and I beſeech thee, ſuffer me to ſpeak unto the people.

40 And when he had given him licence, Paul ſtood on the ſtairs, and beckoned with the hand unto the people. And when there was made a great ſilence,

ſilence, he ſpake unto *them* in the Hebrew tongue, ſaying,

CHAP. XXII.

Paul declareth his converſion.

MEN, brethren, and fathers, hear ye my defence *which I make* now unto you.

2 (And when they heard that he ſpake in the Hebrew tongue to them, they kept the more ſilence: and he ſaith,)

3 I am verily a man *which am* a Jew, born in Tarſus, *a city* in Cilicia, yet brought up in this city at the feet of Gamaliel, *and* taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the fathers, and was zealous toward God, as ye all are this day.

4 And I perſecuted this way unto the death, binding and delivering into priſons both men and women.

5 As alſo the high prieſt doth bear me witneſs, and all the eſtate of the elders: from whom alſo I received letters unto the brethren, and went to Damaſcus, to bring them which were there bound unto Jeruſalem, for to be puniſhed.

6 And it came to paſs, that, as I made my journey, and was come nigh unto Damaſcus about noon, ſuddenly there ſhone from heaven a great light round about me.

7 And I fell unto the ground, and heard a voice ſaying unto me, Saul, Saul, why perſecuteſt thou me?

8 And I anſwered, Who art thou, Lord? And he ſaid unto me, I am Jeſus of Nazareth, whom thou perſecuteſt.

9 And they that were with me ſaw indeed the light, and were afraid; but they heard not the voice of him that ſpake to me.

10 And I ſaid, What ſhall I do, Lord? And the Lord ſaid unto me, Ariſe, and go into Damaſcus; and there it ſhall be told thee of all things which are appointed for thee to do.

11 And when I could not ſee for the glory of that light, being led by the hand of them that were with me, I came into Damaſcus.

12 And one Ananias, a devout man according to the law, having a good report of all the Jews which dwelt *there*,

13 Came unto me, and ſtood, and ſaid unto me, Brother Saul, receive thy ſight. And the ſame hour I looked up upon him.

14 And he ſaid, The God of our fathers hath choſen thee, that thou ſhouldeſt know his will, and ſee that Juſt One, and ſhouldeſt hear the voice of his mouth.

15 For thou ſhalt be his witneſs unto all men of what thou haſt ſeen and heard.

16 And now why tarrieſt thou? ariſe, and be baptized, and waſh away thy ſins, calling on the name of the Lord.

17 And it came to paſs, that, when I was come again to Jeruſalem, even while I prayed in the temple, I was in a trance;

18 And ſaw him ſaying unto me, Make haſte, and get thee quickly out of Jeruſalem: for they will not receive thy teſtimony concerning me.

19 And I ſaid, Lord, they know that I impriſoned and beat in every ſynagogue them that believed on thee:

20 And when the blood of thy martyr Stephen was ſhed, I alſo was ſtanding by, and conſenting unto his death, and kept the raiment of them that ſlew him.

21 And

21 And he ſaid unto me, Depart: for I will ſend thee far hence unto the Gentiles.

22 And they gave him audience unto this word, and *then* lifted up their voices, and ſaid, Away with ſuch a *fellow* from the earth: for it is not fit that he ſhould live.

23 And as they cried out, and caſt off *their* clothes, and threw duſt into the air,

24 The chief captain commanded him to be brought into the caſtle, and bade that he ſhould be examined by ſcourging; that he might know wherefore they cried ſo againſt him.

25 ¶ And as they bound him with thongs, Paul ſaid unto the centurion that ſtood by, Is it lawful for you to ſcourge a man that is a Roman, and uncondemned?

26 When the centurion heard *that*, he went and told the chief captain, ſaying, Take heed what thou doeſt: for this man is a Roman.

27 Then the chief captain came, and ſaid unto him, Tell me, art thou a Roman? He ſaid, Yea.

28 And the chief captain anſwered, With a great ſum obtained I this freedom. And Paul ſaid, But I was *free* born.

29 Then ſtraightway they departed from him which ſhould have examined him: and the chief captain alſo was afraid, after he knew that he was a Roman, and becauſe he had bound him.

30 On the morrow, becauſe he would have known the certainty wherefore he was accuſed of the Jews, he looſed him from *his* bands, and commanded the chief prieſts and all their council to appear, and brought Paul down, and ſet him before them.

CHAP. XXIII.

A conſpiracy againſt Paul.

AND Paul, earneſtly beholding the council, ſaid, Men *and* brethren, I have lived in all good conſcience before God until this day.

2 And the high prieſt Ananias commanded them that ſtood by him to ſmite him on the mouth.

3 Then ſaid Paul unto him, God ſhall ſmite thee, *thou* whited wall: for ſitteſt thou to judge me after the law, and commandeſt me to be ſmitten, contrary to the law?

4 And they that ſtood by ſaid, Revileſt thou God's high prieſt?

5 Then ſaid Paul, I wiſt not, brethren, that he was the high prieſt: for it is written, Thou ſhalt not ſpeak evil of the ruler of thy people.

6 But when Paul perceived that the one part were Sadducees, and the other Phariſees, he cried out in the council, Men *and* brethren, I am a Phariſee, the ſon of a Phariſee: of the hope and reſurrection of the dead I am called in queſtion.

7 ¶ And when he had ſo ſaid, there aroſe a diſſenſion between the Phariſees and the Sadducees: and the multitude was divided.

8 For the Sadducees ſay that there is no reſurrection, neither angel, nor ſpirit: but the Phariſees confeſs both.

9 And there aroſe a great cry: and the ſcribes *that were* of the Phariſees' part aroſe, and ſtrove, ſaying, We find no evil in this man: but if a ſpirit or

an angel hath ſpoken to him, let
us not fight againſt God.
10 And when there aroſe a
great diſſenſion, the chief captain, fearing leſt Paul ſhould
have been pulled in pieces of
them, commanded the ſoldiers
to go down, and to take him by
force from among them, and to
bring *him* into the caſtle.
11 And the night following
the Lord ſtood by him, and ſaid,
Be of good cheer, Paul: for as
thou haſt teſtified of me in Jeruſalem, ſo muſt thou bear witneſs alſo at Rome.
12 And when it was day certain of the Jews banded together,
and bound themſelves under a
curſe, ſaying that they would
neither eat nor drink till they
had killed Paul.
13 And they were more than
forty which had made this conſpiracy.
14 And they came to the
chief prieſts and elders, and
ſaid, We have bound ourſelves
under a great curſe, that we
will eat nothing until we have
ſlain Paul.
15 Now therefore ye with
the council ſignify to the chief
captain that he bring him down
unto you to morrow, as though
ye would enquire ſomething
more perfectly concerning him:
and we, or ever he come near,
are ready to kill him.
16 And when Paul's ſiſter's
ſon heard of their lying in wait,
he went and entered into the
caſtle, and told Paul.
17 Then Paul called one of
the centurions unto *him*, and
ſaid, Bring this young man unto
the chief captain: for he hath
a certain thing to tell him.
18 So he took him, and
brought *him* to the chief captain, and ſaid, Paul the priſoner
called me unto *him*, and prayed
me to bring this young man
unto thee, who hath ſomething
to ſay unto thee.
19 Then the chief captain
took him by the hand, and
went *with him* aſide privately,
and aſked *him*, What is that
thou haſt to tell me?
20 And he ſaid, The Jews
have agreed to deſire thee that
thou wouldeſt bring down Paul
to morrow into the council, as
though they would enquire
ſomewhat of him more perfectly.
21 But do not thou yield
unto them: for there lie in
wait for him of them more than
forty men, which have bound
themſelves with an oath, that
they will neither eat nor drink
till they have killed him: and
now are they ready, looking for
a promiſe from thee.
22 So the chief captain *then*
let the young man depart, and
charged *him*, *See thou* tell no
man that thou haſt ſhewed theſe
things to me.
23 ¶ And he called unto *him*
two centurions, ſaying, Make
ready two hundred ſoldiers to
go to Ceſarea, and horſemen
threeſcore and ten, and ſpearmen two hundred, at the third
hour of the night;
24 And provide *them* beaſts,
that they may ſet Paul on, and
bring *him* ſafe unto Felix the
governor.
25 And he wrote a letter after
this manner:
26 Claudius Lyſias unto the
moſt excellent governor Felix
ſendeth greeting.
27 This man was taken of
the Jews, and ſhould have been
killed of them: then came I
with

with an army, and reſcued him, having underſtood that he was a Roman.

28 And when I would have known the cauſe wherefore they accuſed him, I brought him forth into their council:

29 Whom I perceived to be accuſed of queſtions of their law, but to have nothing laid to his charge worthy of death or of bonds.

30 And when it was told me, how that the Jews laid wait for the man, I ſent ſtraightway to thee, and gave commandment to his accuſers alſo to ſay before thee what *they had* againſt him. Farewel.

31 Then the ſoldiers, as it was commanded them, took Paul, and brought *him* by night to Antipatris.

32 On the morrow they left the horſemen to go with him, and returned to the caſtle:

33 Who, when they came to Ceſarea, and delivered the epiſtle to the governor, preſented Paul alſo before him.

34 And when the governor had read *the letter*, he aſked of what province he was. And when he underſtood that *he was* of Cilicia;

35 I will hear thee, ſaid he, when thine accuſers are alſo come. And he commanded him to be kept in Herod's judgement hall.

CHAP. XXIV.

Paul accuſed by Tertullus.

AND after five days Ananias the high prieſt deſcended with the elders, and *with* a certain orator *named* Tertullus, who informed the governor againſt Paul.

2 And when he was called forth, Tertullus began to accuſe *him*, ſaying, Seeing that by thee we enjoy great quietneſs, and that very worthy deeds are done unto this nation by thy providence,

3 We accept *it* always, and in all places, moſt noble Felix, with all thankfulneſs.

4 Notwithſtanding, that I be not further tedious unto thee, I pray thee that thou wouldeſt hear us of thy clemency a few words.

5 For we have found this man *a* peſtilent *fellow*, and a mover of ſedition among all the Jews throughout the world, and a ringleader of the ſect of the Nazarenes:

6 Who alſo hath gone about to profane the temple: whom we took, and would have judged according to our law.

7 But the chief captain Lyſias came *upon us*, and with great violence took *him* away out of our hands,

8 Commanding his accuſers to come unto thee: by examining of whom thyſelf mayeſt take knowledge of all theſe things, whereof we accuſe him.

9 And the Jews alſo aſſented, ſaying that theſe things were ſo.

10 ¶ Then Paul, after that the governor had beckoned unto him to ſpeak, anſwered, Foraſmuch as I know that thou haſt been of many years a judge unto this nation, I do the more cheerfully anſwer for myſelf:

11 Becauſe that thou mayeſt underſtand, that there are yet but twelve days ſince I went up to Jeruſalem for to worſhip.

12 And they neither found me in the temple diſputing with any man, neither raiſing up the people, neither in the ſynagogues, nor in the city:

13 Neither can they prove

the

the things whereof they now
accuse me.
14 But this I confess unto thee,
that after the way which they
call heresy, so worship I the God
of my fathers, believing all
things which are written in the
law and in the prophets:
15 And have hope toward
God, which they themselves also
allow, that there shall be a re-
surrection of the dead, both of
the just and unjust.
16 And herein do I exercise
myself, to have always a con-
science void of offence toward
God, and *toward* men.
17 Now after many years I
came to bring alms to my na-
tion, and offerings.
18 Whereupon certain Jews
from Asia found me purified in
the temple, neither with multi-
tude, nor with tumult.
19 Who ought to have been
here before thee, and object,
if they had ought against me.
20 Or else let these same *here*
say, if they have found any evil
doing in me, while I stood before
the council,
21 Except it be for this one
voice, that I cried standing
among them, Touching the re-
surrection of the dead I am call-
ed in question by you this day.
22 And when Felix heard
these things, having more per-
fect knowledge of *that* way, he
deferred them, and said, When
Lysias the chief captain shall
come down, I will know the
uttermost of your matter.
23 And he commanded a cen-
turion to keep Paul, and to let
him have liberty, and that he
should forbid none of his ac-
quaintance to minister, or come
unto him.
24 ¶ And after certain days,
when Felix came with his wife
Drusilla, which was a Jewess, he
sent for Paul, and heard him
concerning the faith in Christ.
25 And as he reasoned of
righteousness, temperance, and
judgement to come, Felix trem-
bled, and answered, Go thy way
for this time; when I have a
convenient season, I will call for
thee.
26 He hoped also that money
should have been given him of
Paul, that he might loose him:
wherefore he sent for him the
oftener, and communed with
him.
27 ¶ But after two years Por-
cius Festus came into Felix'
room: and Felix, willing to
shew the Jews a pleasure, left
Paul bound.

CHAP. XXV.

Paul appealeth to Cesar.

NOW when Festus was
come into the province,
after three days he ascended
from Cesarea to Jerusalem.
2 Then the high priest and
the chief of the Jews informed
him against Paul, and besought
him,
3 And desired favour against
him, that he would send for him
to Jerusalem, laying wait in the
way to kill him.
4 But Festus answered, That
Paul should be kept at Cesarea,
and that he himself would de-
part shortly *thither*.
5 Let them therefore, said
he, which among you are able,
go down with me, and accuse
this man, if there be any wick-
edness in him.
6 And when he had tarried
among them more than ten
days, he went down unto Cesa-
rea; and the next day sitting
on the judgement seat, com-
manded

manded Paul to be brought.

7 And when he was come, the Jews which came down from Jeruſalem ſtood round about, and laid many and grievous complaints againſt Paul, which they could not prove.

8 While he anſwered for himſelf, Neither againſt the law of the Jews, neither againſt the temple, nor yet againſt Ceſar, have I offended any thing at all.

9 But Feſtus, willing to do the Jews a pleaſure, anſwered Paul, and ſaid, Wilt thou go up to Jeruſalem, and there be judged of theſe things before me?

10 Then ſaid Paul, I ſtand at Ceſar's judgement ſeat, where I ought to be judged: to the Jews have I done no wrong, as thou very well knoweſt.

11 For if I be an offender, or have committed any thing worthy of death, I refuſe not to die: but if there be none of theſe things whereof theſe accuſe me, no man may deliver me unto them. I appeal unto Ceſar.

12 Then Feſtus, when he had conferred with the council, anſwered, Haſt thou appealed unto Ceſar? unto Ceſar ſhalt thou go.

13 And after certain days king Agrippa and Bernice came unto Ceſarea to ſalute Feſtus.

14 And when they had been there many days, Feſtus declared Paul's cauſe unto the king, ſaying, There is a certain man left in bonds by Felix:

15 About whom, when I was at Jeruſalem, the chief prieſts and the elders of the Jews informed *me*, deſiring *to have* judgement againſt him.

16 To whom I anſwered, It is not the manner of the Romans to deliver any man to die, before that he which is accuſed have the accuſers face to face, and have licence to anſwer for himſelf concerning the crime laid againſt him.

17 Therefore, when they were come hither, without any delay on the morrow I ſat on the judgement ſeat, and commanded the man to be brought forth.

18 Againſt whom when the accuſers ſtood up, they brought none accuſation of ſuch things as I ſuppoſed:

19 But had certain queſtions againſt him of their own ſuperſtition, and of one Jeſus, which was dead, whom Paul affirmed to be alive.

20 And becauſe I doubted of ſuch manner of queſtions, I aſked *him* whether he would go to Jeruſalem, and there be judged of theſe matters.

21 But when Paul had appealed to be reſerved unto the hearing of Auguſtus, I commanded him to be kept till I might ſend him to Ceſar.

22 Then Agrippa ſaid unto Feſtus, I would alſo hear the man myſelf. To morrow, ſaid he, thou ſhalt hear him.

23 And on the morrow, when Agrippa was come, and Bernice, with great pomp, and was entered into the place of hearing, with the chief captains, and principal men of the city, at Feſtus' commandment Paul was brought forth.

24 And Feſtus ſaid, King Agrippa, and all men which are here preſent with us, ye ſee this man, about whom all the multitude of the Jews have dealt with me, both at Jeruſalem, and *alſo* here, crying that he ought not to live any longer.

25 But when I found that he
had committed nothing worthy
of death, and that he himſelf
hath appealed to Auguſtus, I
have determined to ſend him.
26 Of whom I have no certain
thing to write unto my lord.
Wherefore I have brought him
forth before you, and ſpecially
before thee, O king Agrippa,
that, after examination had, I
might have ſomewhat to write.
27 For it ſeemeth to me un-
reaſonable to ſend a priſoner,
and not withal to ſignify the
crimes *laid* againſt him.

CHAP. XXVI.

Paul pleadeth before Agrippa.

THEN Agrippa ſaid unto
Paul, Thou art permitted
to ſpeak for thyſelf. Then Paul
ſtretched forth the hand, and
anſwered for himſelf:
2 I think myſelf happy, king
Agrippa, becauſe I ſhall anſwer
for myſelf this day before thee
touching all the things whereof
I am accuſed of the Jews:
3 Eſpecially *becauſe I know*
thee to be expert in all cuſtoms
and queſtions which are among
the Jews: wherefore I beſeech
thee to hear me patiently.
4 My manner of life from my
youth, which was at the firſt
among mine own nation at Je-
ruſalem, know all the Jews;
5 Which knew me from the
beginning, if they would teſtify,
that after the moſt ſtraiteſt ſect
of our religion I lived a Phari-
ſee.
6 And now I ſtand and am
judged of the hope of the pro-
miſe made of God unto our
fathers:
7 Unto which *promiſe* our
twelve tribes, inſtantly ſerving
God day and night, hope to
come. For which hope's ſake,
king Agrippa, I am accuſed of
the Jews.
8 Why ſhould it be thought
a thing incredible with you,
that God ſhould raiſe the dead?
9 I verily thought with myſelf,
that I ought to do many things
contrary to the name of Jeſus
of Nazareth.
10 Which thing I alſo did in
Jeruſalem: and many of the
ſaints did I ſhut up in priſon,
having received authority from
the chief prieſts; and when they
were put to death, I gave my
voice againſt *them.*
11 And I puniſhed them oft
in every ſynagogue, and com-
pelled *them* to blaſpheme; and
being exceedingly mad againſt
them, I perſecuted *them* even
unto ſtrange cities.
12 ¶ Whereupon as I went
to Damaſcus with authority
and commiſſion from the chief
prieſts,
13 At midday, O king, I ſaw in
the way a light from heaven,
above the brightneſs of the ſun,
ſhining round about me and
them which journeyed with me.
14 And when we were all
fallen to the earth, I heard a
voice ſpeaking unto me, and
ſaying in the Hebrew tongue,
Saul, Saul, why perſecuteſt thou
me? *it is* hard for thee to kick
againſt the pricks.
15 And I ſaid, Who art thou,
Lord? And he ſaid, I am Jeſus
whom thou perſecuteſt.
16 But riſe, and ſtand upon
thy feet: for I have appeared
unto thee for this purpoſe, to
make thee a miniſter and a wit-
neſs both of theſe things which
thou haſt ſeen, and of thoſe
things in the which I will appear
unto thee;
17 Delivering thee from the
people,

people, and *from* the Gentiles, unto whom I now ſend thee,

18 To open their eyes, *and* to turn *them* from darkneſs to light, and *from* the power of Satan unto God, that they may receive forgiveneſs of ſins, and inheritance among them which are ſanctified by faith that is in me.

19 Whereupon, O king Agrippa, I was not diſobedient unto the heavenly viſion:

20 But ſhewed firſt unto them of Damaſcus, and at Jeruſalem, and throughout all the coaſts of Judea, and *then* to the Gentiles, that they ſhould repent and turn to God, and do works meet for repentance.

21 For theſe cauſes the Jews caught me in the temple, and went about to kill *me*.

22 Having therefore obtained help of God, I continue unto this day, witneſſing both to ſmall and great, ſaying none other things than thoſe which the prophets and Moſes did ſay ſhould come:

23 That Chriſt ſhould ſuffer, *and* that he ſhould be the firſt that ſhould riſe from the dead, and ſhould ſhew light unto the people, and to the Gentiles.

24 ¶ And as he thus ſpake for himſelf, Feſtus ſaid with a loud voice, Paul, thou art beſide thyſelf; much learning doth make thee mad.

25 But he ſaid, I am not mad, moſt noble Feſtus; but ſpeak forth the words of truth and ſoberneſs.

26 For the king knoweth of theſe things, before whom alſo I ſpeak freely: for I am perſuaded that none of theſe things are hidden from him; for this thing was not done in a corner.

27 King Agrippa, believeſt thou the prophets? I know that thou believeſt.

28 Then Agrippa ſaid unto Paul, Almoſt thou perſuadeſt me to be a Chriſtian.

29 And Paul ſaid, I would to God that not only thou, but alſo all that hear me this day, were both almoſt, and altogether ſuch as I am, except theſe bonds.

30 And when he had thus ſpoken, the king roſe up, and the governor, and Bernice, and they that ſat with them:

31 And when they were gone aſide, they talked between themſelves, ſaying, This man doeth nothing worthy of death, or of bonds.

32 Then ſaid Agrippa unto Feſtus, This man might have been ſet at liberty, if he had not appealed unto Ceſar.

CHAP. XXVII.

Paul's dangerous voyage.

AND when it was determined that we ſhould ſail into Italy, they delivered Paul and certain other priſoners unto *one* named Julius, a centurion of Auguſtus' band.

2 And entering into a ſhip of Adramyttium, we launched, meaning to ſail by the coaſts of Aſia; *one* Ariſtarchus, a Macedonian of Theſſalonica, being with us.

3 And the next *day* we touched at Sidon. And Julius courteouſly entreated Paul, and gave *him* liberty to go unto his friends to refreſh himſelf.

4 And when we had launched from thence, we ſailed under Cyprus, becauſe the winds were contrary.

5 And when we had ſailed over the ſea of Cilicia and Pamphylia, we came to Myra, *a city* of Lycia.

6 And there the centurion found a ſhip of Alexandria ſailing

ſailing into Italy; and he put us therein.

7 And when we had ſailed ſlowly many days, and ſcarce were come over againſt Cnidus, the wind not ſuffering us, we ſailed under Crete, over againſt Salmone;

8 And hardly paſſing it, came unto a place which is called The fair havens; nigh whereunto was the city *of* Laſea.

9 Now when much time was ſpent, and when ſailing was now dangerous, becauſe the faſt was now already paſt, Paul admoniſhed *them*,

10 ¶ And ſaid unto them, Sirs, I perceive that this voyage will be with hurt and much damage, not only of the lading and ſhip, but alſo of our lives.

11 Neverthelefs the centurion believed the maſter and the owner of the ſhip, more than thoſe things which were ſpoken by Paul.

12 And becauſe the haven was not commodious to winter in, the more part adviſed to depart thence alſo, if by any means they might attain to Phenice, *and there* to winter; *which is* an haven of Crete, and lieth toward the ſouth weſt and north weſt.

13 And when the ſouth wind blew ſoftly, ſuppoſing that they had obtained *their* purpoſe, looſing *thence*, they ſailed cloſe by Crete.

14 ¶ But not long after there aroſe againſt it a tempeſtuous wind, called Euroclydon.

15 And when the ſhip was caught, and could not bear up into the wind, we let *her* drive.

16 And running under a certain iſland which is called Clauda, we had much work to come by the boat:

17 Which when they had taken up, they uſed helps, undergirding the ſhip; and fearing leſt they ſhould fall into the quickſands, ſtrake ſail, and ſo were driven

18 And we being exceedingly toſſed with a tempeſt, the next *day* they lightened the ſhip;

19 And the third *day* we caſt out with our own hands the tackling of the ſhip.

20 And when neither ſun nor ſtars in many days appeared, and no ſmall tempeſt lay on *us*, all hope that we ſhould be ſaved was then taken away.

21 But after long abſtinence Paul ſtood forth in the midſt of them, and ſaid, Sirs, ye ſhould have hearkened unto me, and not have looſed from Crete, and to have gained this harm and loſs.

22 And now I exhort you to be of good cheer: for there ſhall be no loſs of *any man's* life among you, but of the ſhip.

23 For there ſtood by me this night the angel of God, whoſe I am, and whom I ſerve,

24 Saying, Fear not, Paul; thou muſt be brought before Ceſar: and, lo, God hath given thee all them that ſail with thee.

25 Wherefore, ſirs, be of good cheer: for I believe God that it ſhall be even as it was told me.

26 Howbeit we muſt be caſt upon a certain iſland.

27 But when the fourteenth night was come, as we were driven up and down in Adria, about midnight the ſhipmen deemed that they drew near to ſome country;

28 And ſounded, and found *it* twenty fathoms: and when they had gone a little further, they ſounded again, and found *it* fifteen fathoms.

29 Then fearing leſt they ſhould have fallen upon rocks, they caſt four anchors out of the ſtern, and wiſhed for the day.

30 And as the ſhipmen were about to flee out of the ſhip, when they had let down the boat into the ſea, under colour as though they would have caſt anchors out of the foreſhip,

31 Paul ſaid to the centurion and to the ſoldiers, Except theſe abide in the ſhip, ye cannot be ſaved.

32 Then the ſoldiers cut off the ropes of the boat, and let her fall off.

33 And while the day was coming on, Paul beſought *them* all to take meat, ſaying, This day is the fourteenth day that ye have tarried, and continued faſting, having taken nothing.

34 Wherefore I pray you to take *ſome* meat: for this is for your health: for there ſhall not an hair fall from the head of any of you.

35 And when he had thus ſpoken, he took bread and gave thanks to God in preſence of them all: and when he had broken *it*, he began to eat.

36 Then were they all of good cheer, and they alſo took *ſome* meat.

37 And we were in all the ſhip two hundred threeſcore and ſixteen ſouls.

38 And when they had eaten enough, they lightened the ſhip, and caſt out the wheat into the ſea.

39 And when it was day, they knew not the land; but they diſcovered a certain creek with a ſhore, into the which they were minded, if it were poſſible, to thruſt in the ſhip.

40 And when they had taken up the anchors, they committed *themſelves* unto the ſea, and looſed the rudder bands, and hoiſed up the mainſail to the wind, and made toward ſhore.

41 ¶ And falling into a place where two ſeas met, they ran the ſhip aground: and the forepart ſtuck faſt, and remained unmoveable, but the hinder part was broken with the violence of the waves.

42 And the ſoldiers' council was to kill the priſoners, leſt any of them ſhould ſwim out and eſcape.

43 But the centurion, willing to ſave Paul, kept them from *their* purpoſe, and commanded that they which could ſwim, ſhould caſt *themſelves* firſt *into the ſea*, and get to land:

44 And the reſt, ſome on boards, and ſome on *broken pieces* of the ſhip. And ſo it came to paſs, that they eſcaped all ſafe to land.

CHAP. XXVIII.

Paul ſhipwrecked at Melita.

AND when they were eſcaped, then they knew that the iſland was called Melita.

2 And the barbarous people ſhewed us no little kindneſs: for they kindled a fire, and received us every one, becauſe of the preſent rain, and becauſe of the cold.

3 And when Paul had gathered a bundle of ſticks, and laid *them* on the fire, there came a viper out of the heat, and faſtened on his hand.

4 And when the barbarians ſaw the *venomous* beaſt hang on his hand, they ſaid among themſelves, No doubt, this man is a murderer, whom, though he hath eſcaped the ſea, yet vengeance ſuffereth not to live.

5 And

And he ſhook off the beaſt
into the fire, and felt no harm.
6 Howbeit they looked when
he ſhould have ſwollen, or fal-
len down dead ſuddenly. But
after they had looked a great
while, and ſaw no harm come to
him, they changed their minds,
and ſaid that he was a god.
7 In the ſame quarters were
poſſeſſions of the chief man of
the iſland, whoſe name was
Publius: who received us, and
lodged us three days courte-
ouſly.
8 ¶ And it came to paſs, that
the father of Publius lay ſick of
a fever and of a bloody flux:
to whom Paul entered in, and
prayed, and laid his hands on
him, and healed him.
9 So when this was done,
others alſo which had diſeaſes
in the iſland came, and were
healed:
10 Who alſo honoured us
with many honours: and when
we departed, they laded *us* with
ſuch things as were neceſſary.
11 ¶ And after three months
we departed in a ſhip of Alex-
andria, which had wintered in
the iſle, whoſe ſign was Caſtor
and Pollux.
12 And landing at Syracuſe,
we tarried *there* three days.
13 And from thence we fetched
a compaſs, and came to Rhe-
gium. And after one day the
ſouth wind blew, and we came
the next day to Puteoli:
14 Where we found brethren,
and were deſired to tarry with
them ſeven days. And ſo we
went toward Rome.
15 And from thence, when
the brethren heard of us, they
came to meet us as far as Appii
forum, and the Three taverns:
whom when Paul ſaw, he
thanked God, and took courage.
16 And when we came to
Rome, the centurion delivered
the priſoners to the captain of
the guard; but Paul was ſuf-
fered to dwell by himſelf, with
a ſoldier that kept him.
17 And it came to paſs, that
after three days Paul called
the chief of the Jews together,
and when they were come to-
gether, he ſaid unto them, Men
and brethren, though I have
committed nothing againſt the
people, or cuſtoms of our fa-
thers, yet was I delivered pri-
ſoner from Jeruſalem into the
hands of the Romans.
18 Who, when they had ex-
amined me, would have let *me*
go, becauſe there was no cauſe
of death in me.
19 But when the Jews ſpake
againſt *it*, I was conſtrained to ap-
peal unto Ceſar; not that I had
ought to accuſe my nation of.
20 For this cauſe therefore
have I called for you to ſee *you*,
and to ſpeak with *you*: becauſe
that for the hope of Iſrael I am
bound with this chain.
21 And they ſaid unto him,
We neither received letters out
of Judea concerning thee, nei-
ther any of the brethren that
came ſhewed or ſpake any harm
of thee.
22 But we deſire to hear of
thee what thou thinkeſt: for as
concerning this ſect, we know
that every where it is ſpoken
againſt.
23 And when they had ap-
pointed him a day, there came
many to him into *his* lodging:
to whom he expounded and
teſtified the kingdom of God,
perſuading them concerning
Jeſus, both out of the law of
Moſes, and *out of* the prophets,

from morning till evening.

24 And ſome believed the things which were ſpoken, and ſome believed not.

25 And when they agreed not among themſelves, they departed, after that Paul had ſpoken one word, Well ſpake the Holy Ghoſt by Eſaias the prophet unto our fathers,

26 Saying, Go unto this people, and ſay, Hearing ye ſhall hear, and ſhall not underſtand; and ſeeing ye ſhall ſee, and not perceive:

27 For the heart of this people is waxed groſs, and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes have they cloſed; leſt they ſhould ſee with *their* eyes, and hear with *their* ears, and underſtand with *their* heart, and ſhould be converted, and I ſhould heal them.

28 Be it known therefore unto you, that the ſalvation of God is ſent unto the Gentiles, and *that* they will hear it.

29 And when he had ſaid theſe words, the Jews departed, and had great reaſoning among themſelves.

30 ¶ And Paul dwelt two whole years in his own hired houſe, and received all that came in unto him,

31 Preaching the kingdom of God, and teaching thoſe things which concern the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, with all confidence, no man forbidding him.

The Epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle to the ROMANS.

CHAP. I.

Paul's calling commended.

PAUL, a ſervant of Jeſus Chriſt, called *to be* an apoſtle, ſeparated unto the goſpel of God,

2 (Which he had promiſed afore by his prophets in the holy ſcriptures,)

3 Concerning his ſon Jeſus Chriſt our Lord, which was made of the ſeed of David according to the fleſh;

4 And declared *to be* the Son of God with power, according to the Spirit of holineſs, by the reſurrection from the dead:

5 By whom we have received grace and apoſtleſhip, for obedience to the faith among all nations for his name:

6 Among whom are ye alſo the called of Jeſus Chriſt:

7 To all that be in Rome, beloved of God, called *to be* ſaints: Grace to you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

8 Firſt, I thank my God through Jeſus Chriſt for you all, that your faith is ſpoken of throughout the whole world.

9 For God is my witneſs, whom I ſerve with my ſpirit in the goſpel of his Son, that without ceaſing I make mention of you always in my prayers;

10 Making requeſt, if by any means now at length I might have a proſperous journey by the will of God to come unto you.

11 For I long to ſee you, that I may impart unto you ſome ſpiritual gift, to the end ye may be eſtabliſhed;

12 That is, that I may be comforted together with you by the mutual faith both of you and me.

13 Now I would not have
you ignorant, brethren, that
oftentimes I purposed to come
unto you, (but was let hitherto,)
that I might have some fruit
among you also, even as among
other Gentiles.
14 I am debtor both to the
Greeks and to the Barbarians,
both to the wise and to the unwise.
15 So as much as in me is, I
am ready to preach the gospel
to you that are at Rome also.
16 For I am not ashamed of
the gospel of Christ: for it is
the power of God unto salvation
to every one that believeth;
to the Jew first, and also to the
Greek.
17 For therein is the righteousness
of God revealed from
faith to faith: as it is written,
The just shall live by faith.
18 For the wrath of God is
revealed from heaven against
all ungodliness and unrighteousness
of men, who hold the
truth in unrighteousness;
19 Because that which may
be known of God is manifest in
them: for God hath shewed *it*
unto them.
20 For the invisible things of
him from the creation of the
world are clearly seen, being understood
by the things that are
made, *even* his eternal power
and Godhead; so that they are
without excuse:
21 Because that when they
knew God, they glorified *him*
not as God, neither were thankful,
but became vain in their
imaginations, and their foolish
heart was darkened.
22 Professing themselves to be
wise, they became fools,
23 And changed the glory of
the uncorruptible God into an
image made like to corruptible
man, and to birds, and fourfooted
beasts, and creeping things.
24 Wherefore God also gave
them up to uncleanness through
the lusts of their own hearts, to
dishonour their own bodies between
themselves:
25 Who changed the truth
of God into a lie, and worshipped
and served the creature
more than the Creator, who is
blessed for ever. Amen.
26 For this cause God gave
them up unto vile affections.
For even their women did
change the natural use into
that which is against nature:
27 And likewise also the men
leaving the natural use of the
women, burned in their lust
one toward another; men with
men working that which is unseemly,
and receiving in themselves
that recompence of their
error which was meet.
28 And even as they did not
like to retain God in *their* knowledge,
God gave them over to
a reprobate mind, to do those
things which are not convenient;
29 Being filled with all unrighteousness,
fornication, wickedness,
covetousness, maliciousness;
full of envy, murder,
debate, deceit, malignity; whisperers,
30 Backbiters, haters of God,
despiteful, proud, boasters, inventors
of evil things, disobedient
to parents,
31 Without understanding,
covenant breakers, without natural
affection, implacable, unmerciful:
32 Who knowing the judgement
of God, that they which
commit such things are worthy
of death, not only do the same,

but have pleasure in them that do them.

CHAP. II.

Who are justified.

THerefore thou art inexcusable, O man, whosoever thou art that judgest: for wherein thou judgest another, thou condemnest thyself; for thou that judgest doest the same things.

2 But we are sure that the judgement of God is according to truth against them which commit such things.

3 And thinkest thou this, O man, that judgest them which do such things, and doest the same, that thou shalt escape the judgement of God?

4 Or despisest thou the riches of his goodness and forbearance and longsuffering; not knowing that the goodness of God leadeth thee to repentance?

5 But after thy hardness and impenitent heart treasurest up unto thyself wrath against the day of wrath, and revelation of the righteous judgement of God;

6 Who will render to every man according to his deeds:

7 To them who by patient continuance in well doing seek for glory and honour and immortality, eternal life:

8 But unto them that are contentious, and do not obey the truth, but obey unrighteousness, indignation and wrath,

9 Tribulation and anguish upon every soul of man that doeth evil, of the Jew first, and also of the Gentile;

10 But glory, honour, and peace, to every man that worketh good, to the Jew first, and also to the Gentile:

11 For there is no respect of persons with God.

12 For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law: and as many as have sinned in the law shall be judged by the law;

13 (For not the hearers of the law *are* just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.

14 For when the Gentiles which have not the law, do by nature the things contained in the law, these, having not the law, are a law unto themselves:

15 Which shew the work of the law written in their hearts, their conscience also bearing witness, and *their* thoughts the mean while accusing or else excusing one another;)

16 In the day when God shall judge the secrets of men by Jesus Christ according to my gospel.

17 Behold thou art called a Jew, and restest in the law, and makest thy boast of God,

18 And knowest *his* will, and approvest the things that are more excellent, being instructed out of the law;

19 And art confident that thou thyself art a guide of the blind, a light of them which are in darkness,

20 An instructor of the foolish, a teacher of babes, which hast the form of knowledge and of the truth in the law.

21 Thou therefore which teachest another, teachest thou not thyself? thou that preachest a man should not steal, dost thou steal?

22 Thou that sayest a man should not commit adultery, dost thou commit adultery? thou

thou that abhorrest idols, dost
thou commit sacrilege?
23 Thou that makest thy boast
of the law, through breaking
the law, dishonourest thou God?
24 For the name of God is
blasphemed among the Gentiles
through you, as it is written.
25 For circumcision verily
profiteth, if thou keep the law:
but if thou be a breaker of the
law, thy circumcision is made
uncircumcision.
26 Therefore if the uncir-
cumcision keep the righteous-
ness of the law, shall not his
uncircumcision be counted for
circumcision?
27 And shall not uncircumci-
sion which is by nature, if it
fulfil the law, judge thee, who
by the letter and circumcision
dost transgress the law?
28 For he is not a Jew which
is one outwardly; neither *is*
that circumcision which is out-
ward in the flesh:
29 But he *is* a Jew which is
one inwardly: and circumcision
is that of the heart, in the spirit,
and not in the letter; whose
praise *is* not of men, but of God.

CHAP. III.

None justified by the law.

WHAT advantage then
hath the Jew? or what
profit *is there* of circumcision?
2 Much every way: chiefly,
because that unto them were
committed the oracles of God.
3 For what if some did not
believe? shall their unbelief
make the faith of God without
effect?
4 God forbid. Yea, let God
be true, but every man a liar:
as it is written, That thou
mightest be justified in thy say-
ings, and mightest overcome
when thou art judged.
5 But if our unrighteousness
commend the righteousness of
God, what shall we say? *Is* God
unrighteous who taketh ven-
geance? (I speak as a man)
6 God forbid: for then how
shall God judge the world?
7 For if the truth of God
hath more abounded through
my lie unto his glory, why yet
am I also judged as a sinner?
8 And not *rather*, (as we be
slanderously reported, and as
some affirm that we say,) Let us
do evil that good may come?
whose damnation is just.
9 What then? are we better
then they? No, in no wise: for
we have before proved both
Jews and Gentiles, that they
are all under sin;
10 As it is written, There is
none righteous, no, not one:
11 There is none that under-
standeth, there is none that
seeketh after God.
12 They are all gone out of
the way, they are together be-
come unprofitable: there is none
that doeth good, no, not one.
13 Their throat *is* an open
sepulchre; with their tongues
they have used deceit; the poi-
son of asps *is* under their lips:
14 Whose mouth *is* full of
cursing and bitterness:
15 Their feet *are* swift to
shed blood:
16 Destruction and misery
are in their ways:
17 And the way of peace
have they not known:
18 There is no fear of God
before their eyes.
19 Now we know that what
things soever the law saith, it
saith to them who are under
the law: that every mouth may
be stopped, and all the world
may become guilty before God.

20 ¶ Therefore by the deeds of the law there ſhall no fleſh be juſtified in his ſight. For by the law *is* the knowledge of ſin.

21 But now the righteouſneſs of God without the law is manifeſted, being witneſſed by the law and the prophets;

22 Even the righteouſneſs of God *which is* by faith of Jeſus Chriſt unto all, and upon all them that believe: for there is no difference:

23 For all have ſinned, and come ſhort of the glory of God;

24 Being juſtified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Chriſt Jeſus:

25 Whom God hath ſet forth *to be* a propitiation through faith in his blood, to declare his righteouſneſs for the remiſſion of ſins that are paſt, through the forbearance of God;

26 To declare, *I ſay*, at this time his righteouſneſs; that he might be juſt, and the juſtifier of him which believeth in Jeſus.

27 Where *is* boaſting then? It is excluded. By what law? of works? Nay; but by the law of faith.

28 Therefore we conclude that a man is juſtified by faith without the deeds of the law.

29 *Is he* the God of the Jews only? *is he* not alſo of the Gentiles? Yes, of the Gentiles alſo:

30 Seeing *it is* one God which ſhall juſtify the circumciſion by faith, and uncircumciſion through faith.

31 Do we then make void the law through faith? God forbid: yea, we eſtabliſh the law.

CHAP. IV.

Righteouſneſs imputed by faith.

WHAT ſhall we then ſay that Abraham our father as pertaining to the fleſh hath found?

2 For if Abraham were juſtified by works, he hath *whereof* to glory, but not before God.

3 For what ſaith the ſcripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteouſneſs.

4 Now to him that worketh is the reward not reckoned of grace, but of debt.

5 But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that juſtifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteouſneſs.

6 Even as David alſo deſcribeth the bleſſedneſs of the man unto whom God imputeth righteouſneſs without works,

7 *Saying*, Bleſſed *are* they whoſe iniquities are forgiven, and whoſe ſins are covered.

8 Bleſſed *is* the man to whom the Lord will not impute ſin.

9 *Cometh* this bleſſedneſs then upon the circumciſion *only*, or upon the uncircumciſion alſo? for we ſay that faith was reckoned to Abraham for righteouſneſs.

10 How was it then reckoned? when he was in circumciſion, or in uncircumciſion? Not in circumciſion, but in uncircumciſion.

11 And he received the ſign of circumciſion, a ſeal of the righteouſneſs of the faith which *he had yet* being uncircumciſed: that he might be the father of all them that believe, though they be not circumciſed, that righteouſneſs might be imputed unto them alſo:

12 And the father of circumciſion

cision to them who are not of the circumcision only, but who also walk in the steps of that faith of our father Abraham, which *he had* being *yet* uncircumcised.

13 For the promise that he should be the heir of the world *was* not to Abraham, or to his seed, through the law, but through the righteousness of faith.

14 For if they which are of the law *be* heirs, faith is made void, and the promise made of none effect:

15 Because the law worketh wrath. For where no law is, *there is* no transgression.

16 Therefore *it is* of faith, that *it might be* by grace; to the end the promise might be sure to all the seed, not to that only which is of the law, but to that also which is of the faith of Abraham, who is the father of us all,

17 (As it is written, I have made thee a father of many nations,) before him whom he believed, *even* God, who quickeneth the dead, and calleth those things which be not as though they were.

18 Who against hope believed in hope, that he might become the father of many nations; according to that which was spoken, So shall thy seed be.

19 And being not weak in faith, he considered not his own body now dead, when he was about an hundred years old, neither yet the deadness of Sarah's womb:

20 He staggered not at the promise of God through unbelief; but was strong in faith, giving glory to God;

21 And being fully persuaded that, what he had promised, he was able also to perform,

22 And therefore it was imputed to him for righteousness.

23 Now it was not written for his sake alone, that it was imputed to him;

24 ¶ But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead;

25 Who was delivered for our offences, and was raised again for our justification.

CHAP. V.

Reconciliation by Christ.

THEREFORE being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:

2 By whom also we have access by faith into this grace wherein we stand, and rejoice in hope of the glory of God.

3 And not only *so*, but we glory in tribulations also; knowing that tribulation worketh patience;

4 And patience, experience; and experience, hope:

5 And hope maketh not ashamed; because the love of God is shed abroad in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us.

6 For when we were yet without strength, in due time Christ died for the ungodly.

7 For scarcely for a righteous man will one die: yet peradventure for a good man some would even dare to die.

8 But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.

9 Much more then, being now justified by his blood, we

ſhall be ſaved from wrath
through him.
10 For if when we were enemies we were reconciled to God by the death of his Son, much more being reconciled we ſhall be ſaved by his life.
11 And not only *ſo*, but we alſo joy in God through our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, by whom we have now received the atonement.
12 ¶ Wherefore, as by one man ſin entered into the world, and death by ſin; and ſo death paſſed upon all men, for that all have ſinned:
13 (For until the law ſin was in the world: but ſin is not imputed when there is no law.
14 Nevertheleſs death reigned from Adam to Moſes, even over them that had not ſinned after the ſimilitude of Adam's tranſgreſſion, who is the figure of him that was to come.
15 But not as the offence, ſo alſo *is* the free gift. For if through the offence of one many be dead, much more the grace of God, and the gift by grace, *which is* by one man, Jeſus Chriſt, hath abounded unto many.
16 And not as *it was* by one that ſinned, *ſo is* the gift. For the judgement *was* by one to condemnation, but the free gift *is* of many offences unto juſtification.
17 ¶ For if by one man's offence death reigned by one; much more they which receive abundance of grace and of the gift of righteouſneſs ſhall reign in life by one, Jeſus Chriſt.)
18 Therefore as by the offence of one *judgement came* upon all men to condemnation, even ſo by the righteouſneſs of one *the free gift came* upon all men unto juſtification of life.
19 For as by one man's diſobedience many were made ſinners, ſo by the obedience of one ſhall many be made righteous.
20 Moreover the law entered, that the offence might abound. But where ſin abounded, grace did much more abound:
21 That as ſin hath reigned unto death, even ſo might grace reign through righteouſneſs unto eternal life by Jeſus Chriſt our Lord.

CHAP. VI.

Of newneſs of life

WHAT ſhall we ſay then? ſhall we continue in ſin, that grace may abound?
2 God forbid. How ſhall we, that are dead to ſin, live any longer therein?
3 Know ye not, that ſo many of us as were baptized into Jeſus Chriſt were baptized into his death?
4 Therefore we are buried with him by baptiſm into death: that like as Chriſt was raiſed up from the dead by the glory of the Father, even ſo we alſo ſhould walk in newneſs of life.
5 For if we have been planted together in the likeneſs of his death, we ſhall be alſo *in the likeneſs* of *his* reſurrection:
6 Knowing this, that our old man is crucified with *him*, that the body of ſin might be deſtroyed, that henceforth we ſhould not ſerve ſin.
7 For he that is dead is freed from ſin.
8 Now if we be dead with Chriſt, we believe that we ſhall alſo live with him:
9 Knowing that Chriſt, being raiſed

raiſed from the dead, dieth no
more: death hath no more do-
minion over him.
10 For in that he died, he
died unto ſin once: but in
that he liveth, he liveth unto
God.
11 Likewiſe reckon ye alſo
yourſelves to be dead indeed
unto ſin, but alive unto God
through Jeſus Chriſt our Lord.
12 Let not ſin therefore reign
in your mortal body, that ye
ſhould obey it in the luſts
thereof.
13 Neither yield ye your
members *as* inſtruments of
unrighteouſneſs unto ſin: but
yield yourſelves unto God as
thoſe that are alive from the
dead, and your members *as*
inſtruments of righteouſneſs
unto God.
14 For ſin ſhall not have do-
minion over you: for ye are not
under the law, but under grace.
15 What then? ſhall we ſin
becauſe we are not under the
law, but under grace? God
forbid.
16 Know ye not, that to
whom ye yield yourſelves ſerv-
ants to obey, his ſervants ye
are to whom ye obey; whether
of ſin unto death, or of obedi-
ence unto righteouſneſs;
17 But God be thanked, that
ye were the ſervants of ſin; but
ye have obeyed from the heart
that form of doctrine which
was delivered you.
18 Being then made free
from ſin, ye became the ſerv-
ants of righteouſneſs.
19 I ſpeak after the manner of
men, becauſe of the infirmity
of your fleſh. For as ye have
yielded your members ſervants
to uncleanneſs and to iniquity
unto iniquity; even ſo now
yield your members ſervants to
righteouſneſs unto holineſs.
20 For when ye were the ſer-
vants of ſin, ye were free from
righteouſneſs.
21 What fruit had ye then in
thoſe things whereof ye are
now aſhamed? for the end of
thoſe things *is* death.
22 But now being made free
from ſin, and become ſervants
to God, ye have your fruit
unto holineſs, and the end
everlaſting life.
23 ¶ For the wages of ſin *is*
death: but the gift of God *is*
eternal life through Jeſus Chriſt
our Lord.

CHAP. VII.

The law is not ſin.

KNOW ye not, brethren,
(for I ſpeak to them that
know the law,) how that the
law hath dominion over a man
as long as he liveth?
2 For the woman which hath
an huſband is bound by the law
to *her* huſband ſo long as he
liveth; but if the huſband be
dead, ſhe is looſed from the law
of *her* huſband.
3 So then if while *her* huſ-
band liveth ſhe be married to
another man, ſhe ſhall be called
an adultereſs: but if her huſ-
band be dead, ſhe is free from
that law; ſo that ſhe is no
adultereſs, though ſhe be mar-
ried to another man.
4 Wherefore, my brethren,
ye alſo are become dead to the
law by the body of Chriſt;
that ye ſhould be married to
another, *even* to him who is
raiſed from the dead, that we
ſhould bring forth fruit unto
God.
5 For when we were in the
fleſh, the motions of ſins, which
were by the law, did work in

our members to bring forth fruit unto death.

6 But now we are delivered from the law, that being dead wherein we were held; that we ſhould ſerve in newneſs of ſpirit, and not *in* the oldneſs of the letter.

7 ¶ What ſhall we ſay then? *Is* the law ſin? God forbid. Nay, I had not known ſin but by the law: for I had not known luſt, except the law had ſaid, Thou ſhalt not covet.

8 But ſin, taking occaſion by the commandment, wrought in me all manner of concupiſcence. For without the law ſin *was* dead.

9 For I was alive without the law once: but when the commandment came, ſin revived, and I died.

10 And the commandment, which *was ordained* to life, I found *to be* unto death.

11 For ſin taking occaſion by the commandment deceived me, and by it ſlew *me*

12 ¶ Wherefore the law *is* holy; and the commandment holy, and juſt, and good.

13 Was then that which is good made death unto me? God forbid. But ſin, that it might appear ſin, working death in me by that which is good; that ſin by the commandment might become exceeding ſinful.

14 For we know that the law is ſpiritual: but I am carnal, ſold under ſin.

15 For that which I do, I allow not: for what I would, that do I not; but what I hate, that do I.

16 If then I do that which I would not, I conſent unto the law that *it is* good.

17 Now then, it is no more I that do it, but ſin that dwelleth in me.

18 For I know that in me, (that is, in my fleſh,) dwelleth no good thing: for to will is preſent with me; but *how* to perform that which is good, I find not.

19 For the good that I would I do not; but the evil which I would not, that I do.

20 Now if I do that I would not, it is no more I that do it, but ſin that dwelleth in me.

21 I find then a law, that when I would do good, evil is preſent with me.

22 For I delight in the law of God after the inward man:

23 But I ſee another law in my members warring againſt the law of my mind, and bringing me into captivity to the law of ſin, which is in my members.

24 O wretched man that I am! who ſhall deliver me from the body of this death?

25 I thank God through Jeſus Chriſt our Lord. So then with the mind I myſelf ſerve the law of God; but with the fleſh the law of ſin.

CHAP. VIII.

Works of the fleſh and ſpirit.

THERE *is* therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Chriſt Jeſus, who walk not after the fleſh, but after the Spirit.

2 For the law of the Spirit of life in Chriſt Jeſus hath made me free from the law of ſin and death.

3 For what the law could not do, in that it was weak through the fleſh, God ſending his own Son in the likeneſs of ſinful fleſh,

eſh, and for ſin, condemned ſin
the fleſh :
4 That the righteouſneſs of
the law might be fulfilled in us,
who walk not after the fleſh,
but after the Spirit.
5 ¶ For they that are after the
fleſh do mind the things of the
fleſh; but they that are after the
Spirit the things of the Spirit.
6 For to be carnally minded
is death; but to be ſpiritually
minded *is* life and peace.
7 Becauſe the carnal mind *is*
enmity againſt God: for it is
not ſubject to the law of God,
neither indeed can be.
8 So then they that are in the
fleſh cannot pleaſe God.
9 But ye are not in the fleſh,
but in the Spirit, if ſo be that
the Spirit of God dwell in you.
Now if any man have not the
Spirit of Chriſt, he is none of
his.
10 And if Chriſt *be* in you,
the body *is* dead becauſe of
ſin, but the Spirit *is* life be-
cauſe of righteouſneſs.
11 But if the Spirit of him
that raiſed up Jeſus from the
dead dwell in you, he that raiſ-
ed up Chriſt from the dead ſhall
alſo quicken your mortal bo-
dies by his Spirit that dwelleth
in you.
12 Therefore, brethren, we
are debtors not to the fleſh to
live after the fleſh.
13 ¶ For if ye live after the
fleſh, ye ſhall die: but if ye
through the Spirit do mortify
the deeds of the body, ye ſhall
live.
14 ¶ For as many as are led by
the Spirit of God, they are the
ſons of God.
15 For ye have not received
the ſpirit of bondage again to
fear; but ye have received the
Spirit of adoption, whereby we
cry, Abba, Father.
16 The Spirit itſelf beareth
witneſs with our ſpirit, that we
are the children of God :
17 And if children, then
heirs; heirs of God, and joint-
heirs with Chriſt: if ſo be
that we ſuffer with *him*, that
we may be alſo glorified toge-
ther.
18 For I reckon that the ſuf-
ferings of this preſent time *are*
not worthy *to be compared* with
the glory which ſhall be reveal-
ed in us.
19 For the earneſt expecta-
tion of the creature waiteth for
the manifeſtation of the ſons
of God.
20 For the creature was made
ſubject to vanity, not willingly,
but by reaſon of him who hath
ſubjected *the ſame* in hope,
21 Becauſe the creature itſelf
alſo ſhall be delivered from the
bondage of corruption into the
glorious liberty of the children
of God.
22 For we know that the
whole creation groaneth and
travaileth in pain together until
now.
23 And not only *they*, but
ourſelves alſo, which have the
firſtfruits of the Spirit, even we
ourſelves groan within our-
ſelves, waiting for the adopti-
on, *to wit*, the redemption of
our body.
24 For we are ſaved by hope.
But hope that is ſeen is not
hope: for what a man ſeeth,
why doth he yet hope for?
25 But if we hope for that we
ſee not, *then* do we with pati-
ence wait for *it*.
26 Likewiſe the Spirit alſo
helpeth our infirmities. For we
know not what we ſhould pray
for

for as we ought: but the Spirit itself maketh intercession for us with groanings which cannot be uttered.

27 And he that searcheth the hearts knoweth what *is* the mind of the Spirit, because he maketh intercession for the saints according to *the will of* God.

28 And we know that all things work together for good to them that love God, to them who are the called according to *his* purpose.

29 For whom he did foreknow, he also did predestinate *to be* conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren.

30 Moreover whom he did predestinate, them he also called: and whom he called, them he also justified: and whom he justified, them he also glorified.

31 What shall we then say to these things: if God *be* for us, who *can be* against us?

32 He that spared not his own Son, but delivered him up for us all, how shall he not with him also freely give us all things?

33 Who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect? *It is* God that justifieth.

34 Who *is* he that condemneth? *It is* Christ that died, yea, rather that is risen again, who is even at the rght hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.

35 Who shall separate us from the love of Christ? *shall* tribulation, or distress, or presecution, or famine, or nakedness, or peril, or sword?

36 As it is written, For thy sake we are killed all the day long: we are accounted as sheep for the slaughter.

37 Nay, in all these things we are more than conquerors through him that loved us.

38 For I am persuaded, that neither death, nor life, nor angels, nor principalities, nor powers, nor things present, nor things to come,

39 Nor height, nor depth, nor any other creature, shall be able to separate us from the love of God, which is in Christ Jesus our Lord.

CHAP. IX.

Paul's sorrow for the Jews.

I SAY the truth in Christ, I lie not, my conscience also bearing me witness in the Holy Ghost,

2 That I have great heaviness and continual sorrow in my heart.

3 For I could wish that myself were accursed from Christ for my brethren, my kinsmen according to the flesh:

4 Who are Israelites; to whom *pertaineth* the adoption, and the glory, and the covenants, and the giving of the law, and the service *of God*, and the promises;

5 Whose *are* the fathers, and of whom as concerning the flesh Christ *came*, who is over all, God blessed for ever. Amen.

6 Not as though the word of God hath taken none effect. For they *are* not all Israel which are of Israel:

7 ¶ Neither because they are the seed of Abraham, *are they* all children; but, In Isaac shall thy seed be called.

8 That is, They which are the children of the flesh, these *are* not the children of God: but the children of the promise are counted for the seed.

9 For this *is* the word of promise,

mise, At this time will I come,
and Sarah ſhall have a ſon.
10 And not only *this;* but
when Rebecca alſo had con-
ceived by one, *even* by our fa-
ther Iſaac;
11 (For *the children* being not
yet born, neither having done
any good or evil, that the pur-
poſe of God according to elec-
tion might ſtand, not of works
but of him that calleth;)
12 It was ſaid unto her, The
elder ſhall ſerve the younger.
13 As it is written, Jacob
have I loved, but Eſau have I
hated.
14 What ſhall we ſay then?
Is there unrighteouſneſs with
God? God forbid.
15 For he ſaith to Moſes, I
will have mercy on whom I
will have mercy, and I will
have compaſſion on whom I
will have compaſſion.
16 So then *it is* not of him
that willeth, nor of him that
runneth, but of God that
ſheweth mercy.
17 For the ſcripture ſaith
unto Pharaoh, Even for this
ſame purpoſe have I raiſed thee
up, that I might ſhew my pow-
er in thee, and that my name
might be declared throughout
all the earth.
18 Therefore hath he mercy
on whom he will *have mercy,*
and whom he will he harden-
eth.
19 Thou wilt ſay then unto
me, Why doth he yet find fault?
for who hath reſiſted his will?
20 Nay but, O man, who art
thou that repliest againſt God?
ſhall the thing formed ſay to
him that formed *it,* Why haſt
thou made me thus?
21 Hath not the potter
power over the clay, of the
ſame lump to make one veſſel
unto honour, and another unto
diſhonour?
22 *What* if God, willing to
ſhew *his* wrath, and to make
his power known, endured
with much longſuffering the
veſſels of wrath fitted to de-
ſtruction:
23 And that he might make
known the riches of his glory on
the veſſels of mercy, which he
had afore prepared unto glory,
24 Even us, whom he hath
called, not of the Jews only,
but alſo of the Gentiles?
25 ¶ As he ſaith alſo in Oſee,
I will call them my people,
which were not my people;
and her beloved, which was
not beloved.
26 And it ſhall come to paſs,
that in the place where it was
ſaid unto them, Ye *are* not my
people; there ſhall they be call-
ed the children of the living
God.
27 Eſaias alſo crieth con-
cerning Iſrael, Though the
number of the children of Iſrael
be as the ſand of the ſea, a rem-
nant ſhall be ſaved:
28 For he will finiſh the
work, and cut *it* ſhort in righ-
teouſneſs: becauſe a ſhort work
will the Lord make upon the
earth.
29 And as Eſaias ſaid before,
Except the Lord of Sabaoth
had left us a ſeed, we had been
as Sodoma, and been made
like unto Gomorrha.
30 What ſhall we ſay then?
That the Gentiles, which fol-
lowed not after righteouſneſs,
have attained to righteouſneſs,
even the righteouſneſs which is
of faith.
31 But Iſrael, which follow-
ed after the law of righteouſneſs,
hath

hath not attained to the law
of righteousness.
32 Wherefore? because *they*
sought it not by faith, but as it
were by the works of the law.
For they stumbled at that
stumblingstone;
33 As it is written, Behold,
I lay in Sion a stumblingstone
and rock of offence: and who-
soever believeth on him shall not
be ashamed

CHAP. X.

No believer shall be confounded.

BRethren, my heart's desire
and prayer to God for Isra-
el is, that they might be saved.
2 For I bear them record that
they have a zeal of God, but
not according to knowledge.
3 For they, being ignorant of
God's righteousness, and go-
ing about to establish their own
righteousness, have not submit-
ted themselves unto the righ-
teousness of God.
4 For Christ *is* the end of
the law for righteousness to
every one that believeth.
5 For Moses describeth the
righteousness which is of the
law, That the man which doeth
those things shall live by them.
6 But the righteousness which
is of faith speaketh on this
wise, Say not in thine heart,
Who shall ascend into heaven?
(that is, to bring Christ down
from above:)
7 Or, Who shall descend in-
to the deep? (that is, to bring
up Christ again from the dead.)
8 But what saith it? The
word is nigh thee, *even* in thy
mouth, and in thy heart: that
is, the word of faith which we
preach;
9 That if thou shalt confess
with thy mouth the Lord Je-
sus, and shalt believe in thine
heart that God hath raised him
from the dead, thou shalt be
saved.
10 For with the heart man
believeth unto righteousness,
and with the mouth confession
is made unto salvation.
11 ¶ For the scripture saith,
Whosoever believeth on him
shall not be ashamed.
12 ¶ For there is no differ-
ence between the Jew and the
Greek: for the same Lord over
all is rich unto all that call up-
on him.
13 For whosoever shall call
upon the name of the Lord
shall be saved.
14 How then shall they call
on him in whom they have
not believed? and how shall
they believe in him of whom
they have not heard? and how
shall they hear without a
preacher?
15 And how shall they preach
except they be sent? as it is
written, How beautiful are the
feet of them that preach the
gospel of peace, and bring glad
tidings of good things!
16 But they have not all
obeyed the gospel: for Esaias
saith, Lord, who hath believed
our report?
17 So then faith *cometh* by
hearing, and hearing by the
word of God.
18 But I say, Have they not
heard? Yes, verily, their sound
went into all the earth, and
their words unto the ends of
the world.
19 But I say, Did not Israel
know? First, Moses saith, I will
provoke you to jealousy by *them*
that are no people, *and* by a
foolish nation I will anger you.
20 But Esaias is very bold,
and saith, I was found of them
that

at ſought me not; I was
ade manifeſt unto them that
ed not after me.
21 But to Iſrael he ſaith, All
day long I have ſtretched forth
my hands unto a diſobedient
and gainſaying people.

CHAP. XI.

Not all Iſrael rejected.

I SAY then, Hath God caſt
away his people? God for-
bid. For I alſo am an Iſraelite
of the ſeed of Abraham, *of* the
tribe of Benjamin.
2 God hath not caſt away
his people which he foreknew.
Wot ye not what the ſcripture
ſaith of Elias? how he maketh
interceſſion to God againſt
Iſrael, ſaying,
3 Lord, they have killed thy
prophets, and digged down
thine altars; and I am left
alone, and they ſeek my life.
4 But what ſaith the anſwer
of God unto him? I have
reſerved to myſelf ſeven thou-
ſand men, who have not bow-
ed the knee to *the image of* Baal.
5 Even ſo then at this pre-
ſent time alſo there is a rem-
nant according to the election
of grace.
6 And if by grace, then *is it*
no more of works, otherwiſe
grace is no more grace. But if
it be of works, then is it no
more grace: otherwiſe work is
no more work.
7 ¶ What then? Iſrael hath
not obtained that which he
ſeeketh for; but the election
hath obtained it, and the reſt
were blinded
8 (According as it is written,
God hath given them the ſpirit
of ſlumber, eyes that they
ſhould not ſee, and ears that
they ſhould not hear,) unto this
day.
9 And David ſaith, Let their
table be made a ſnare, and a
trap, and a ſtumblingblock, and
a recompence unto them:
10 Let their eyes be darken-
ed, that they may not ſee, and
bow down their back alway.
11 I ſay then, Have they
ſtumbled that they ſhould fall?
God forbid: but *rather* through
their fall ſalvation *is come* un-
to the Gentiles, for to provoke
them to jealouſy.
12 Now if the fall of them *be*
the riches of the world, and the
diminiſhing of them the riches
of the Gentiles; how much
more their fulneſs?
13 For I ſpeak to you Gen-
tiles; inaſmuch as I am the
apoſtle of the Gentiles, I mag-
nify mine office:
14 If by any means I may
provoke to emulation *them*
which are my fleſh, and might
ſave ſome of them.
15 For if the caſting away of
them *be* the reconciling of the
world, what *ſhall* the receiving
of them be, but life from the
dead?
16 For if the firſtfruit *be* ho-
ly, the lump *is* alſo *holy*: and if
the root *be* holy, ſo *are* the
branches.
17 And if ſome of the branch-
es be broken off, and thou, be-
ing a wild olive tree, wert graff-
ed in among them, and with
them partakeſt of the root and
fatneſs of the olive tree;
18 ¶ Boaſt not againſt the
branches. But if thou boaſt,
thou beareſt not the root, but
the root thee.
19 Thou wilt ſay then, The
branches were broken off, that
I might be graffed in.
20 Well; becauſe of unbelief
they were broken off, and thou
ſtand-

ſtandeſt by faith. Be not high-minded but fear:

21 For if God ſpared not the natural branches, *take heed* leſt he alſo ſpare not thee.

22 Behold therefore the goodneſs and ſeverity of God: on them which fell, ſeverity; but toward thee, goodneſs, if thou continue in *his* goodneſs: otherwiſe thou alſo ſhalt be cut off.

23 And they alſo, if they abide not in unbelief, ſhall be graffed in: for God is able to graff them in again.

24 For if thou wert cut out of the olive tree which is wild by nature, and wert graffed contrary to nature into a good olive tree; how much more ſhall theſe, which be the natural *branches*, be graffed into their own olive tree?

25 For I would not, brethren, that ye ſhould be ignorant of this myſtery, leſt ye ſhould be wiſe in your own conceits; that blindneſs in part is happened to Iſrael until the fulneſs of the Gentiles be come in.

26 And ſo all Iſrael ſhall be ſaved: as it is written, There ſhall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and ſhall turn away ungodlineſs from Jacob:

27 For this *is* my covenant unto them, when I ſhall take away their ſins.

28 As concerning the goſpel, *they are* enemies for your ſakes: but as touching the election, *they are* beloved for the fathers' ſakes.

29 For the gifts and calling of God *are* without repentance.

30 For as ye in times paſt have not believed God, yet have now obtained mercy through their unbelief;

31 Even ſo have theſe alſo now not believed, that through your mercy they alſo may obtain mercy.

32 For God hath concluded them all in unbelief, that he might have mercy upon all.

33 O the depth of the riches both of the wiſdom and knowledge of God! how unſearchable *are* his judgements, and his ways paſt finding out!

34 For who hath known the mind of the Lord? or who hath been his counſeller?

35 Or who hath firſt given to him, and it ſhall be recompenſed unto him again?

36 For of him, and through him, and to him, *are* all things: to whom *be* glory for ever. Amen.

CHAP. XII.

Pride forbidden.

I Beſeech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye preſent your bodies a living ſacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, *which is* your reaſonable ſervice.

2 And be not conformed to this world: but be ye tranſformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what *is* that good, and acceptable, and perfect will of God.

3 For I ſay, through the grace given unto me, to every man that is among you, not to think *of himſelf* more highly than he ought to think; but to think ſoberly, according as God hath dealt to every man the meaſure of faith.

4 For as we have many members in one body, and all members have not the ſame office:

5 So we, *being* many, are one body in Chriſt, and every one members one of another.

6 ¶ Having then gifts differing

ing according to the grace that
is given to us, whether pro-
phecy, *let us prophesy* according
to the proportion of faith;
7 Or ministry, *let us wait* on
our ministering; or he that
teacheth, on teaching;
8 Or he that exhorteth, on
exhortation: he that giveth, *let
him do it* with simplicity; he
that ruleth, with diligence;
he that sheweth mercy, with
cheerfulness.
9 *Let* love be without dissi-
mulation. Abhor that which
is evil; cleave to that which
is good.
10 *Be* kindly affectioned one to
another with brotherly love; in
honour preferring one another;
11 Not slothful in business;
fervent in spirit; serving the
Lord;
12 Rejoicing in hope; patient
in tribulation; continuing in-
stant in prayer;
13 Distributing to the ne-
cessity of saints; given to hos-
pitality.
14 Bless them which perse-
cute you: bless, and curse not.
15 Rejoice with them that
do rejoice, and weep with them
that weep.
16 *Be* of the same mind one
toward another. Mind not
high things, but condescend to
men of low estate. Be not wise
in your own conceits.
17 Recompense to no man
evil for evil. Provide things
honest in the sight of all men.
18 If it be possible, as much
as lieth in you, live peaceably
with all men.
19 ¶ Dearly beloved, avenge
not yourselves, but *rather* give
place unto wrath: for it is
written, Vengeance *is* mine; I
will repay, saith the Lord.
20 Therefore if thine enemy
hunger, feed him; if he thirst,
give him drink; for in so doing
thou shalt heap coals of fire on
his head.
21 Be not overcome of evil,
but overcome evil with good.

CHAP. XIII.

Exhortations to several duties.

LET every soul be subject
unto the higher powers.
For there is no power but of
God: the powers that be are
ordained of God.
2 Whosoever therefore re-
sisteth the power, resisteth the
ordinance of God: and they
that resist shall receive to
themselves damnation.
3 For rulers are not a terror
to good works, but to the evil.
Wilt thou then not be afraid of
the power? do that which is
good, and thou shalt have praise
of the same:
4 For he is the minister of
God to thee for good. But if
thou do that which is evil, be
afraid; for he beareth not the
sword in vain: for he is the
minister of God, a revenger to
execute wrath upon him that
doeth evil.
5 Wherefore *ye* must needs
be subject, not only for wrath,
but also for conscience' sake.
6 For for this cause pay ye
tribute also: for they are God's
ministers, attending continually
upon this very thing.
7 Render therefore to all
their dues: tribute, to whom
tribute *is due;* custom, to whom
custom; fear, to whom fear;
honour, to whom honour.
8 ¶ Owe no man any thing,
but to love one another; for
he that loveth another hath
fulfilled the law.
9 For this, Thou shalt not
com-

commit adultery, Thou ſhalt
not kill, Thou ſhalt not ſteal,
Thou ſhalt not bear falſe wit-
neſs, Thou ſhalt not covet; and
if *there be* any other command-
ment, it is briefly comprehend-
ed in this ſaying, namely, Thou
ſhalt love thy neighbour as
thyſelf.
10 Love worketh no ill to his
neighbour: therefore love *is*
the fulfilling of the law.
11 ¶ And that, knowing the
time, that now *it is* high time
to awake out of ſleep: for now
is our ſalvation nearer than
when we believed.
12 The night is far ſpent,
the day is at hand: let us there-
fore caſt off the works of dark-
neſs, and let us put on the ar-
mour of light
13 Let us walk honeſtly, as
in the day; not in rioting and
drunkenneſs, not in chamber-
ing and wantonneſs, not in
ſtrife and envying.
14 But put ye on the Lord
Jeſus Chriſt, and make not
proviſion for the fleſh, to *fulfil*
the luſts *thereof.*

CHAP. XIV.

Days and meats indifferent.

HIM that is weak in the
faith receive ye, *but* not
to doubtful diſputations.
2 For one believeth that he
may eat all things: another
who is weak, eateth herbs.
3 ¶ Let not him that eateth
deſpiſe him that eateth not;
and let not him which eateth
not judge him that eateth: for
God hath received him.
4 Who art thou that judgeſt
another man's ſervant? to his
own maſter he ſtandeth or fall-
eth. Yea, he ſhall be holden up;
for God is able to make him
ſtand.
5 One man eſteemeth one
day above another: another
eſteemeth every day *alike.* Let
every man be fully perſuaded
in his own mind.
6 He that regardeth the day,
regardeth *it* unto the Lord;
and he that regardeth not the
day, to the Lord he doth not
regard *it.* He that eateth, eat-
eth to the Lord, for he giveth
God thanks: and he that eat-
eth not, to the Lord he eateth
not, and giveth God thanks.
7 For none of us liveth to
himſelf, and no man dieth to
himſelf.
8 For whether we live, we
live unto the Lord; and whe-
ther we die, we die unto the
Lord: whether we live there-
fore, or die, we are the Lord's.
9 For to this end Chriſt both
died, and roſe, and revived,
that he might be Lord both of
the dead and living.
10 But why doſt thou judge
thy brother? or why doſt thou
ſet at nought thy brother? for
we ſhall all ſtand before the
judgement ſeat of Chriſt.
11 For it is written, *As* I live,
ſaith the Lord, every knee ſhall
bow to me, and every tongue
ſhall confeſs to God.
12 So then every one of us
ſhall give account of himſelf to
God.
13 ¶ Let us not therefore
judge one another any more:
but judge this rather, that no
man put a ſtumblingblock or
an occaſion to fall in *his* bro-
ther's way.
14 I know, and am perſuad-
ed by the Lord Jeſus, that *there*
is nothing unclean of itſelf:
but to him that eſteemeth any
thing to be unclean, to him *it is*
unclean.

15 But

15 But if thy brother be
grieved with *thy* meat, now
walkeft thou not charitably.
Deftroy not him with thy meat,
for whom Chrift died.
16 Let not then your good
be evil fpoken of:
17 For the kingdom of God
is not meat and drink, but
righteoufnefs, and peace, and
joy in the Holy Ghoft.
18 For he that in thefe
things ferveth Chrift, *is* accept-
able to God, and approved of
men.
19 Let us therefore follow
after the things which make for
peace, and things wherewith
one may edify another.
20 For meat deftroy not
the work of God. All things
indeed *are* pure; but *it is* evil
for that man who eateth with
offence.
21 *It is* good neither to eat
flefh, nor to drink wine, nor
any thing whereby thy brother
ftumbleth, or is offended, or
is made weak.
22 Haft thou faith? have *it*
to thyfelf before God. Happy
is he that condemneth not
himfelf in that thing which
he alloweth.
23 And he that doubteth is
damned if he eat, becaufe *he
eateth* not of faith: for whatfo-
ever *is* not of faith is fin.

CHAP. XV.

The receiving of the Gentiles.

WE then that are ftrong
ought to bear the in-
firmities of the weak, and not
to pleafe ourfelves.
2 ¶ Let every one of us pleafe
his neighbour for *his* good to
edification.
3 For even Chrift pleafed not
himfelf: but, as it is written,
The reproaches of them that
reproached thee fell on me.
4 For whatfoever things
were written aforetime were
written for our learning, that
we through patience and com-
fort of the fcriptures might
have hope.
5 Now the God of patience
and confolation grant you to
be likeminded one toward
another, according to Chrift
Jefus:
6 That ye may with one
mind *and* one mouth glorify
God, even the Father of our
Lord Jefus Chrift.
7 ¶ Wherefore receive ye one
another, as Chrift alfo received
us to the glory of God.
8 Now I fay that Jefus Chrift
was a minifter of the circum-
cifion for the truth of God, to
confirm the promifes *made* un-
to the fathers:
9 And that the Gentiles
might glorify God for *his* mer-
cy; as it is written, For this
caufe I will confefs to thee
among the Gentiles, and fing
unto thy name.
10 And again he faith, Re-
joice, ye Gentiles, with his
people.
11 And again, Praife the
Lord, all ye Gentiles; and laud
him, all ye people.
12 And again, Efaias faith,
There fhall be a root of Jeffe,
and he that fhall rife to reign
over the Gentiles; in him fhall
the Gentiles truft.
13 Now the God of hope fill
you with all joy and peace in
believing, that ye may abound
in hope through the power of
the Holy Ghoft.
14 And I myfelf alfo am
perfuaded of you, my bre-
thren, that ye alfo are full of
goodnefs, filled with all know-
ledge,

ledge, able alſo to admoniſh
one another.
15 Nevertheleſs, brethren, I
have written the more boldly
unto you in ſome ſort, as put-
ting you in mind, becauſe of
the grace that is given to me of
God,
16 That I ſhould be the
miniſter of Jeſus Chriſt to the
Gentiles, miniſtering the goſpel
of God, that the offering up of
the Gentiles might be accept-
able, being ſanctified by the
Holy Ghoſt.
17 I have therefore whereof
I may glory through Jeſus
Chriſt in thoſe things which
pertain to God.
18 For I will not dare to
ſpeak of any of thoſe things
which Chriſt hath not wrought
by me, to make the Gentiles
obedient, by word and deed,
19 Through mighty ſigns
and wonders, by the power
of the Spirit of God; ſo that
from Jeruſalem, and round
about unto Illyricum, I have
fully preached the goſpel of
Chriſt.
20 Yea, ſo have I ſtrived to
preach the goſpel, not where
Chriſt was named, leſt I ſhould
build upon another man's
foundation:
21 But as it is written, To
whom he was not ſpoken of,
they ſhall ſee: and they that
have not heard ſhall under-
ſtand.
22 For which cauſe alſo I
have been much hindered from
coming to you.
23 But now having no more
place in theſe parts, and having
a great deſire theſe many years
to come unto you;
24 Whenſoever I take my
journey into Spain, I will come
to you: for I truſt to ſee you in
my journey, and to be brought
on my way thitherward by you,
if firſt I be ſomewhat filled
with your *company.*
25 But now I go unto Je-
ruſalem to miniſter unto the
ſaints.
26 For it hath pleaſed them
of Macedonia and Achaia to
make a certain contribution for
the poor ſaints which are at
Jeruſalem.
27 It hath pleaſed them ve-
rily; and their debtors they
are. For if the Gentiles have
been made partakers of their
ſpiritual things; their duty is
alſo to miniſter unto them in
carnal things.
28 When therefore I have
performed this, and have ſealed
to them this fruit, I will come
by you into Spain.
29 And I am ſure that when
I come unto you, I ſhall come
in the fulneſs of the bleſſing of
the goſpel of Chriſt.
30 Now I beſeech you, bre-
thren, for the Lord Jeſus
Chriſt's ſake, and for the love
of the Spirit, that ye ſtrive to-
gether with me in *your* prayers
to God for me;
31 That I may be delivered
from them that do not believe
in Judea: and that my ſer-
vice which *I have* for Jeru-
ſalem may be accepted of the
ſaints;
32 That I may come unto
you with joy by the will of
God, and may with you be re-
freſhed.
33 Now the God of peace *be*
with you all. Amen.

CHAP. XVI.

Paul's ſalutations.

I Commend unto you Phebe
our ſiſter, which is a ſervant
of

of the church which is at Cenchrea:
2 That ye receive her in the Lord, as becometh saints, and that ye assist her in whatsoever business she hath need of you: for she hath been a succourer of many, and of myself also.
3 Greet Priscilla and Aquila my helpers in Christ Jesus:
4 Who have for my life laid down their own necks: unto whom not only I give thanks, but also all the churches of the Gentiles.
5 Likewise *greet* the church that is in their house. Salute my wellbeloved Epenetus, who is the firstfruits of Achaia unto Christ.
6 Greet Mary, who bestowed much labour on us.
7 Salute Andronicus and Junia my kinsmen and my fellowprisoners, who are of note among the apostles, who also were in Christ before me.
8 Greet Amplias my beloved in the Lord.
9 Salute Urbane our helper in Christ, and Stachys my beloved.
10 Salute Apelles approved in Christ. Salute them which are of Aristobulus' *houshold.*
11 Salute Herodion my kinsman. Greet them that be of the *houshold* of Narcissus, which are in the Lord.
12 Salute Tryphena and Tryphosa, who labour in the Lord. Salute the beloved Persis, which laboured much in the Lord.
13 Salute Rufus chosen in the Lord, and his mother and mine.
14 Salute Asyncritus, Phlegon, Hermas, Patrobas, Hermes, and the brethren which are with them.
15 Salute Philologus, and Julia, Nereus, and his sister, and Olympas, and all the saints, which are with them.
16 Salute one another with an holy kiss. The churches of Christ salute you.
17 Now I beseech you, brethren, mark them which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine which ye have learned; and avoid them.
18 For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple.
19 For your obedience is come abroad unto all *men.* I am glad therefore on your behalf: but yet I would have you wise unto that which is good, and simple concerning evil.
20 And the God of peace shall bruise Satan under your feet shortly. The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you. Amen.
21 ¶ Timotheus my workfellow, and Lucius, and Jason, and Sosipater, my kinsmen, salute you.
22 I Tertius, who wrote *this* epistle, salute you in the Lord.
23 Gaius mine host, and of the whole church, saluteth you. Erastus the chamberlain of the city saluteth you, and Quartus a brother.
24 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.
25 Now to him that is of power to stablish you according to my gospel, and the preaching of Jesus Christ, according to the revelation of the

the myſtery, which was kept
ſecret ſince the world began,
26 But now is made manifeſt,
and by the ſcriptures of the
prophets, according to the com-
mandment of the everlaſting
God, made known to all nati-
ons for the obedience of faith:
27 To God only wiſe, [be]
glory, through Jeſus Chriſt [for]
ever. Amen.

¶ Written to the R[o]mans from Corinthus, *and ſent* by Phebe ſervant of the church at Cenchrea.

The Firſt Epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle to the CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

Paul encourageth to unity.

PAUL, called *to be* an
apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt
through the will of
God, and Soſthenes *our* bro-
ther,
2 Unto the church of God
which is at Corinth, to them
that are ſanctified in Chriſt Je-
ſus, called *to be* ſaints, with all
that in every place call upon
the name of Jeſus Chriſt our
Lord, both their's and our's:
3 Grace *be* unto you, and
peace from God our Father,
and *from* the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
4 I thank my God always
on your behalf, for the grace
of God which is given you by
Jeſus Chriſt;
5 That in every thing ye are
enriched by him, in all utter-
ance, and *in* all knowledge;
6 Even as the teſtimony of
Chriſt was confirmed in you:
7 So that ye come behind in
no gift: waiting for the coming
of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt:
8 Who ſhall alſo confirm you
unto the end; *that ye may be*
blameleſs in the day of our
Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
9 God *is* faithful, by whom
ye were called unto the fel-
lowſhip of his Son Jeſus Chriſt
our Lord.
10 ¶ Now I beſeech you, bre-
thren, by the name of our Lord
Jeſus Chriſt, that ye all ſpeak
the ſame thing, and *that*
there be no diviſions among
you: but *that* ye be perfectly
joined together in the ſame
mind and in the ſame judge-
ment.
11 For it hath been declared
unto me of you, my brethren,
by them *which are of the houſe*
of Chloe, that there are conten-
tions among you.
12 Now this I ſay, that every
one of you ſaith, I am of Paul;
and I of Apollos; and I of
Cephas; and I of Chriſt.
13 Is Chriſt divided? was
Paul crucified for you? or were
ye baptized in the name of
Paul?
14 I thank God that I baptiz-
ed none of you, but Criſpus
and Gaius;
15 Leſt any ſhould ſay, that I
had baptized in mine own name.
16 And I baptized alſo the
houſhold of Stephanas: beſides,
I know not whether I baptized
any other.
17 For Chriſt ſent me not to
baptize, but to preach the goſ-
pel: not with wiſdom of words,
leſt the croſs of Chriſt ſho[uld]
be made of none effect.

18 F[or]

18 ¶ For the preaching of the
croſs is to them that periſh,
fooliſhneſs, but unto us which
are ſaved, it is the power of
God.
19 For it is written, I will
deſtroy the wiſdom of the
wiſe, and will bring to no-
thing the underſtanding of the
prudent.
20 Where *is* the wiſe?
where *is* the ſcribe? where *is*
the diſputer of this world? hath
not God made fooliſh the wiſ-
dom of this world?
21 For after that, in the
wiſdom of God, the world by
wiſdom knew not God, it
pleaſed God by the fooliſhneſs
of preaching to ſave them that
believe.
22 For the Jews require a
ſign, and the Greeks ſeek after
wiſdom:
23 But we preach Chriſt
crucified, unto the Jews a
ſtumblingblock, and unto the
Greeks fooliſhneſs;
24 But unto them which are
called, both Jews and Greeks,
Chriſt the power of God, and
the wiſdom of God.
25 Becauſe the fooliſhneſs of
God is wiſer than men; and
the weakneſs of God is ſtrong-
er than men.
26 For ye ſee your calling,
brethren, how that not many
wiſe men after the fleſh, not
many mighty, not many noble
are called:
27 But God hath choſen the
fooliſh things of the world to
confound the wiſe; and God
hath choſen the weak things
of the world to confound the
things which are mighty;
28 And baſe things of the
world, and things which are
deſpiſed, hath God choſen,
yea, and things which are not,
to bring to nought things that
are:
29 That no fleſh ſhould glory
is his preſence.
30 But of him are ye in Chriſt
Jeſus, who of God is made un-
to us wiſdom, and righteouſ-
neſs, and ſanctification, and
redemption:
31 That, according as it is
written, He that glorieth, let
him glory in the Lord.

CHAP. II.

The ſucceſs of his preaching.

AND I, brethren, when I
came to you, came not
with excellency of ſpeech, or
of wiſdom, declaring unto you
the teſtimony of God.
2 For I determined not to
know any thing among you,
ſave Jeſus Chriſt, and him cru-
cified.
3 And I was with you in
weakneſs, and in fear, and in
much trembling.
4 And my ſpeech and my
preaching *was* not with en-
ticing words of man's wiſdom,
but in demonſtration of the
Spirit and of power:
5 That your faith ſhould not
ſtand in the wiſdom of men,
but in the power of God.
6 Howbeit we ſpeak wiſdom
among them that are perfect;
yet not the wiſdom of this
world, nor of the princes of this
world, that come to nought:
7 But we ſpeak the wiſdom
of God in myſtery, *even* the
hidden *wiſdom* which God or-
dained before the world unto
our glory:
8 Which none of the princes
of this world knew: for had
they known *it*, they would not
have crucified the Lord of glory.
9 But as it is written, Eye

hath not ſeen, nor ear heard,
neither have entered into the
heart of man, the things which
God hath prepared for them
that love him.
10 But God hath revealed
them unto us by his Spirit: for
the Spirit ſearcheth all things,
yea, the deep things of God.
11 For what man knoweth
the things of a man, ſave the
ſpirit of man which is in him;
even ſo the things of God
knoweth no man, but the Spirit
of God.
12 Now we have received,
not the ſpirit of the world, but
the Spirit which is of God;
that we might know the things
that are freely given to us of
God.
13 Which things alſo we
ſpeak, not in the words which
man's wiſdom teacheth, but
which the Holy Ghoſt teach-
eth: comparing ſpiritual things
with ſpiritual.
14 But the natural man re-
ceiveth not the things of the
Spirit of God: for they are
fooliſhneſs unto him; neither
can he know *them*, becauſe
they are ſpiritually diſcerned.
15 But he that is ſpiritual
judgeth all things, yet he him-
ſelf is judged of no man.
16 For who hath known the
mind of the Lord, that he may
inſtruct him? but we have the
mind of Chriſt.

CHAP. III.

Againſt diviſions.

AND I, brethren, could not
ſpeak unto you as unto
ſpiritual, but as unto carnal,
even as unto babes in Chriſt.
2 I have fed you with milk,
and not with meat: for hitherto
ye were not able *to bear it*, nei-
ther yet now are ye able.
3 ¶ For ye are yet carnal: for
whereas *there is* among you en-
vying, and ſtrife, and divi-
ons, are ye not carnal, and walk
as men?
4 For while one ſaith, I am
of Paul; and another, I *am* of
Apollos; are ye not carnal?
5 Who then is Paul, and who
is Apollos, but miniſters by
whom ye believed, even as the
Lord gave to every man?
6 I have planted, Apollos
watered; but God gave the in-
creaſe.
7 So then, neither is he that
planteth any thing, neither he
that watereth; but God that
giveth the increaſe.
8 Now he that planteth and
he that watereth are one: and
every man ſhall receive his own
reward, according to his own
labour.
9 For we are labourers toge-
ther with God: ye are God's huſ-
bandry, *ye are* God's building.
10 According to the grace of
God which is given unto me,
as a wiſe maſter builder, I have
laid the foundation, and ano-
ther buildeth thereon. But let
every man take heed how he
buildeth thereupon.
11 For other foundation can
no man lay than that is laid,
which is Jeſus Chriſt.
12 Now if any man build
upon this foundation gold,
ſilver, precious ſtones, wood,
hay, ſtubble;
13 Every man's work ſhall
be made manifeſt. For the day
ſhall declare it, becauſe it ſhall
be revealed by fire; and the
fire ſhall try every man's work
of what ſort it is
14 If any man's work abide
which he hath built thereupon,
he ſhall receive a reward.

15 If any man's work ſhall be burned, he ſhall ſuffer loſs: but he himſelf ſhall be ſaved; yet ſo as by fire.

16 ¶ Know ye not that ye are the temple of God, and *that* the Spirit of God dwelleth in you?

17 If any man defile the temple of God, him ſhall God deſtroy: for the temple of God is holy, which *temple* ye are.

18 ¶ Let no man deceive himſelf. If any man among you ſeemeth to be wiſe in this world, let him become a fool that he may be wiſe.

19 For the wiſdom of this world is fooliſhneſs with God. For it is written, He taketh the wiſe in their own craftineſs.

20 And again, The Lord knoweth the thoughts of the wiſe that they are vain.

21 Therefore let no man glory in men. For all things are your's;

22 Whether Paul, or Apollos, or Cephas, or the world, or life, or death, or things preſent, or things to come; all are your's;

23 And ye are Chriſt's; and Chriſt *is* God's.

CHAP. IV.

How to account of miniſters.

LET a man ſo account of us as of the miniſters of Chriſt, and ſtewards of the myſteries of God.

2 Moreover it is required in ſtewards, that a man be found faithful.

3 But with me it is a very ſmall thing that I ſhould be judged of you, or of man's judgement: yea, I judge not mine ownſelf.

4 For I know nothing by myſelf; yet am I not hereby juſtified: but he that judgeth me is the Lord.

5 Therefore judge nothing before the time, until the Lord come, who both will bring to light the hidden things of darkneſs, and will make manifeſt the counſels of the hearts: and then ſhall every man have praiſe of God.

6 And theſe things, brethren, I have in a figure transferred to myſelf and *to* Apollos for your ſakes; that ye might learn in us not to think *of men* above that which is written, that no one of you be puffed up for one againſt another.

7 ¶ For who maketh thee to differ *from another?* and what haſt thou that thou didſt not receive? now if thou didſt receive *it,* why doſt thou glory, as if thou hadſt not received *it?*

8 Now ye are full, now ye are rich, ye have reigned as kings without us: and I would to God ye did reign, that we alſo might reign with you.

9 For I think that God hath ſet forth us the apoſtles laſt, as it were appointed to death. For we are made a ſpectacle unto the world, and to angels, and to men.

10 We *are* fools for Chriſt's ſake, but ye *are* wiſe in Chriſt; we *are* weak, but ye *are* ſtrong; ye *are* honourable, but we *are* deſpiſed.

11 Even unto this preſent hour we both hunger and thirſt, and are naked, and are buffeted, and have no certain dwellingplace;

12 And labour, working with our own hands: being reviled, we bleſs; being preſecuted, we ſuffer it:

13 Being defamed, we intreat: we are made as the filth of the earth, *and are* the off-

scouring of all things unto this
day.
14 I write not these things to
shame you, but as my beloved
sons I warn *you*
15 ¶ For though ye have ten
thousand instructers in Christ,
yet *have ye* not many fathers:
for in Christ Jesus I have
begotten you through the
gospel.
16 Wherefore I beseech you,
be ye followers of me.
17 For this cause have I sent
unto you Timotheus, who is
my beloved son, and faithful
in the Lord, who shall bring
you into remembrance of my
ways which be in Christ, as
I teach every where in every
church.
18 Now some are puffed up,
as though I would not come
to you.
19 But I will come to you
shortly, if the Lord will, and
will know, not the speech of
them which are puffed up, but
the power.
20 For the kingdom of God
is not in word, but in power.
21 What will ye? shall I
come unto you with a rod, or
in love, and *in* the spirit of
meekness?

CHAP. V.

The incestuous person.

IT is reported commonly *that
there is* fornication among
you, and such fornication as is
not so much as named among
the Gentiles, that one should
have his father's wife.
2 And ye are puffed up, and
have not rather mourned, that
he that hath done this deed
might be taken away from
among you.
3 For I verily, as absent in
body, but present in spirit,
have judged already, as though
I were present, *concerning* him
that hath so done this deed,
4 In the name of our Lord
Jesus Christ, when ye are gathered
ed together, and my spirit
with the power of our Lord
Jesus Christ,
5 To deliver such an one
unto Satan for the destruction
of the flesh, that the spirit may
be saved in the day of the
Lord Jesus.
6 Your glorying *is* not good.
Know ye not that a little leaven
leaveneth the whole lump?
7 ¶ Purge out therefore the
old leaven, that ye may be a
new lump, as ye are unleaven-
ed. For even Christ our pass-
over is sacrificed for us:
8 Therefore let us keep the
feast, not with old leaven, nei-
ther with the leaven of malice
and wickedness, but with the
unleavened *bread* of sincerity
and truth.
9 I wrote unto you in an
epistle, not to company with
fornicators:
10 ¶ Yet not altogether with
the fornicators of this world,
or with the covetous, or extor-
tioners, or with idolaters, for
then must ye needs go out of
the world.
11 But now I have written
unto you not to keep company,
if any man that is called bro-
ther be a fornicator, or covet-
ous, or an idolater, or a railer,
or a drunkard, or an extorti-
oner: with such an one no not
to eat.
12 For what have I to do to
judge them also that are with-
out? do not ye judge them
that are within?
13 But them that are without
God judgeth. Therefore put
away

away from among yourselves
that wicked person.

CHAP. VI.

Against going to law.

DARE any of you, having a matter against another, go to law before the unjust, and not before the saints?

2 Do ye not know that the saints shall judge the world? and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?

3 Know ye not that we shall judge angels? how much more things that pertain to this life?

4 If then ye have judgements of things pertaining to this life, set them to judge who are least esteemed in the church.

5 I speak to your shame. Is it so that there is not a wise man among you? no, not one that shall be able to judge between his brethren?

6 But brother goeth to law with brother, and that before the unbelievers.

7 Now therefore there is utterly a fault among you, because ye go to law one with another. Why do ye not rather take wrong? why do ye not rather *suffer yourselves to* be defrauded?

8 Nay, ye do wrong, and defraud, and that *your* brethren.

9 Know ye not that the unrighteous shall not inherit the kingdom of God? Be not deceived: neither fornicators, nor idolaters, nor adulterers, nor effeminate, nor abusers of themselves with mankind,

10 Nor thieves, nor covetous, nor drunkards, nor revilers, nor extortioners, shall inherit the kingdom of God.

11 And such were some of you: but ye are washed, but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus, and by the Spirit of our God.

12 All things are lawful unto me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but I will not be brought under the power of any.

13 Meats for the belly, and the belly for meats: but God shall destroy both it and them. Now the body *is* not for fornication, but for the Lord; and the Lord for the body.

14 And God hath both raised up the Lord, and will also raise up us by his own power.

15 ¶ Know ye not that your bodies are the members of Christ? shall I then take the members of Christ, and make *them* the members of an harlot: God forbid.

16 What, know ye not, that he which is joined to an harlot is one body? for two, saith he, shall be one flesh.

17 But he that is joined unto the Lord is one spirit.

18 Flee fornication: every sin that a man doeth is without the body: but he that committeth fornication sinneth against his own body.

19 What, know ye not, that your body is the temple of the Holy Ghost *which is* in you, which ye have of God, and ye are not your own?

20 For ye are bought with a price: therefore glorify God in your body, and in your spirit, which are God's.

CHAP. VII.

Of marriage.

NOW concerning the things whereof ye wrote unto me: *It is* good for a man not to touch a woman.

2 ¶ Neverthelefs, *to avoid* fornication, let every man have his own wife, and let every woman have her own hufband.

3 Let the hufband render unto the wife due benevolence: and likewife alfo the wife unto the hufband.

4 ¶ The wife hath not power of her own body, but the hufband; and likewife alfo the hufband hath not power of his own body, but the wife.

5 Defraud ye not one the other, except *it be* with confent for a time, that ye may give yourfelves to fafting and prayer; and come together again, that Satan tempt you not for your incontinency.

6 But I fpeak this by permiffion, *and* not of commandment.

7 For I would that all men were even as I myfelf. But every man hath his proper gift of God; one after this manner, and another after that.

8 I fay therefore to the unmarried and widows, It is good for them if they abide even as I.

9 But if they cannot contain, let them marry: for it is better to marry than to burn.

10 ¶ And unto the married I command, *yet* not I, but the Lord, Let not the wife depart from *her* hufband:

11 But and if fhe depart, let her remain unmarried, or be reconciled to *her* hufband: and let not the hufband put away *his* wife.

12 But to the reft fpeak I, not the Lord; If any brother hath a wife that believeth not, and fhe be pleafed to dwell with him, let him not put her away.

13 And the woman which hath an hufband that believeth not, and if he be pleafed to dwell with her, let her not leave him;

14 For the unbelieving hufband is fanctified by the wife, and the unbelieving wife is fanctified by the hufband: elfe were your children unclean; but now are they holy.

15 But if the unbelieving depart, let him depart. A brother or a fifter is not under bondage in fuch *cafes:* but God hath called us to peace.

16 For what knoweft thou, O wife, whether thou fhalt fave *thy* hufband? or how knoweft thou, O man, whether thou fhalt fave *thy* wife?

17 But as God hath diftributed to every man, as the Lord hath called every one, fo let him walk. And fo ordain I in all churches.

18 Is any man called being circumcifed? let him not become uncircumcifed. Is any called in uncircumcifion? let him not be circumcifed.

19 Circumcifion is nothing, and uncircumcifion is nothing, but the keeping of the commandments of God.

20 Let every man abide in the fame calling wherein he was called.

21 Art thou called *being* a fervant? care not for it: but if thou mayeft be made free, ufe *it* rather.

22 For he that is called in the Lord, *being* a fervant, is the Lord's free man: likewife alfo he that is called, *being* free, is Chrift's fervant.

23 Ye are bought with a price; be not ye the fervants of men.

24 Brethren, let every man

wherein he is called, therein abide with God.

25 Now concerning virgins I have no commandment of the Lord; yet I give my judgement as one that hath obtained mercy of the Lord, to be faithful.

26 I ſuppoſe therefore that this is good for the preſent diſtreſs, *I ſay*, that *it is* good for a man ſo to be.

27 Art thou bound unto a wife? ſeek not to be looſed. Art thou looſed from a wife? ſeek not a wife.

28 But and if thou marry, thou haſt not ſinned: and if a virgin marry, ſhe hath not ſinned. Nevertheleſs ſuch ſhall have trouble in the fleſh: but I ſpare you.

29 But this I ſay, brethren, the time *is* ſhort: it remaineth that both they that have wives be as though they had none;

30 And they that weep, as though they wept not; and they that rejoice, as though they rejoiced not: and they that buy, as though they poſſeſſed not;

31 And they that uſe this world, as not abuſing *it:* for the faſhion of this world paſſeth away.

32 But I would have you without carefulneſs. He that is unmarried careth for the things that belong to the Lord, how he may pleaſe the Lord:

33 But he that is married careth for the things that are of the world, how he may pleaſe *his* wife.

34 There is difference *alſo* between a wife and a virgin. The unmarried woman careth for the things of the Lord, that ſhe may be holy both in body and in ſpirit: but ſhe that is married careth for the things of the world, how ſhe may pleaſe *her* huſband.

35 And this I ſpeak for your own profit, not that I may caſt a ſnare upon you, but for that which is comely, and that ye may attend upon the Lord without diſtraction.

36 But if any man think that he behaveth himſelf uncomely toward his virgin, if ſhe paſs the flower of *her* age, and need ſo require, let him do what he will, he ſinneth not: let them marry.

37 Nevertheleſs he that ſtandeth ſtedfaſt in his heart, having no neceſſity, but hath power over his own will, and hath ſo decreed in his heart that he will keep his virgin, doeth well.

38 So then he that giveth *her* in marriage doeth well; but he that giveth *her* not in marriage doeth better.

39 The wife is bound by the law as long as her huſband liveth; but if her huſband be dead, ſhe is at liberty to be married to whom ſhe will; only in the Lord.

40 But ſhe is happier if ſhe ſo abide, after my judgement. And I think alſo that I have the Spirit of God.

CHAP. VIII.

Of meats offered to idols.

NOW as touching things offered unto idols, we know that we all have knowledge. Knowledge puffeth up, but charity edifieth.

2 And if any man think that he knoweth any thing, he knoweth nothing yet as he ought to know.

3 But if any man love God, the ſame is known of him.

4 As concerning therefore the

eating of thoſe things that are offered in ſacrifice unto idols, we know that an idol *is* nothing in the world, and that *there is* none other God but one.

5 For though there be that are called gods, whether in heaven or in earth, (as there be gods many, and lords many,)

6 But to us *there is but* one God, the Father, of whom *are* all things, and we in him; and one Lord Jeſus Chriſt, by whom *are* all things, and we by him.

7 Howbeit *there is* not in every man that knowledge: for ſome with conſcience of the idol unto this hour eat *it* as a thing offered unto an idol; and their conſcience being weak is defiled.

8 ¶ But meat commendeth us not to God: for neither, if we eat, are we the better; neither, if we eat not, are we the worſe.

9 But take heed leſt by any means this liberty of your's become a ſtumblingblock to them that are weak.

10 For if any man ſee thee which haſt knowledge ſit at meat in the idol's temple, ſhall not the conſcience of him which is weak be emboldened to eat thoſe things which are offered to idols;

11 And through thy knowledge ſhall the weak brother periſh, for whom Chriſt died?

12 But when ye ſin ſo againſt the brethren, and wound their weak conſcience, ye ſin againſt Chriſt.

13 Wherefore, if meat make my brother to offend, I will eat no fleſh while the world ſtandeth, leſt I make my brother to offend.

CHAP. IX.

Miniſters to live by the goſpel.

AM I not an apoſtle? am I not free? have I not ſeen Jeſus Chriſt our Lord? are not ye my work in the Lord?

2 If I be not an apoſtle unto others, yet doubtleſs I am to you; for the ſeal of mine apoſtleſhip are ye in the Lord.

3 Mine anſwer to them that do examine me is this,

4 Have we not power to eat and to drink?

5 Have we not power to lead about a ſiſter, a wife, as well as other apoſtles, and *as* the brethren of the Lord, and Cephas?

6 Or I only and Barnabas, have not we power to forbear working?

7 ¶ Who goeth a warfare any time at his own charges? who planteth a vineyard, and eateth not of the fruit thereof? or who feedeth a flock, and eateth not of the milk of the flock?

8 Say I theſe things as a man? or ſaith not the law the ſame alſo?

9 For it is written in the law of Moſes, Thou ſhalt not muzzle the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn. Doth God take care for oxen?

10 Or ſaith he *it* altogether for our ſakes? for our ſakes, no doubt, *this* is written: that he that ploweth ſhould plow in hope; and that he that threſheth in hope ſhould be partaker of his hope.

11 If we have ſown unto you ſpiritual things, *is it* a great thing if we ſhall reap your carnal things?

12 If others be partakers of *this* power over you, *are* not we rather? nevertheleſs we have not uſed this power; but ſuffer all things, leſt we ſhould hinder the goſpel of Chriſt.

13 Do ye not know that they which miniſter about holy

ly things live *of the things* of
the temple? and they which
wait at the altar are partakers
with the altar?
14 Even so hath the Lord ordained,
that they which preach
the gospel should live of the
gospel.
15 But I have used none of
these things: neither have I
written these things that it
should be so done unto me: for
it were better for me to die,
than that any man should make
my glorying void.
16 For though I preach the
gospel, I have nothing to glory
of: for necessity is laid upon
me; yea, woe is unto me if I
preach not the gospel!
17 For if I do this thing willingly,
I have a reward: but if
against my will, a dispensation *of
the gospel* is committed unto me.
18 What is my reward then?
Verily that, when I preach the
gospel, I may make the gospel
of Christ without charge, that
I abuse not my power in the
gospel.
19 For though I be free from
all *men*, yet have I made myself
servant unto all, that I
might gain the more.
20 And unto the Jews, I became
as a Jew, that I might
gain the Jews; to them that
are under the law, as under
the law, that I might gain them
that are under the law;
21 To them that are without
law, as without law, (being not
without law to God, but under
the law to Christ,) that I might
gain them that are without law.
22 To the weak became I as
weak, that I might gain the
weak: I am made all things to
all *men*, that I might by all
means save some.
23 And this I do for the gospel's
sake, that I might be partaker
thereof with *you*.
24 ¶ Know ye not that they
which run in a race, run all,
but one receiveth the prize?
so run, that ye may obtain.
25 And every man that
striveth for the mastery is temperate
in all things. Now they
do it to obtain a corruptible
crown; but we an incorruptible.
26 I therefore so run, not as
uncertainly; so fight I, not as
one that beateth the air:
27 But I keep under my body,
and bring *it* into subjection;
lest that by any means, when I
have preached to others, I myself
should be a castaway.

CHAP. X.

Of the Jews' sacraments.

MOreover, brethren, I would
not that ye should be ignorant
how that all our fathers
were under the cloud,
and all passed through the sea;
2 And were all baptized unto
Moses in the cloud and in the
sea;
3 And did all eat the same
spiritual meat;
4 And did all drink the same
spiritual drink. For they drank
of that spiritual Rock that followed
them: and that Rock
was Christ.
5 But with many of them
God was not well pleased: for
they were overthrown in the
wilderness.
6 ¶ Now these things were our
examples, to the intent we
should not lust after evil things,
as they also lusted.
7 Neither be ye idolaters, as
were some of them: as it is
written, The people sat down
to eat and drink, and rose
up to play.

8 Neither let us commit fornication, as ſome of them committed, and fell in one day three and twenty thouſand.

9 Neither let us tempt Chriſt, as ſome of them alſo tempted, and were deſtroyed of ſerpents.

10 Neither murmur ye, as ſome of them alſo murmured, and were deſtroyed of the deſtroyer.

11 ¶ Now all theſe things happened unto them for enſamples: and they are written for our admonition, upon whom the ends of the world are come.

12 Wherefore let him that thinketh he ſtandeth take heed leſt he fall.

13 There hath no temptation taken you but ſuch as is common to man: but God *is* faithful, who will not ſuffer you to be tempted above that ye are able; but will with the temptation alſo make a way to eſcape, that ye may be able to bear *it.*

14 Wherefore, my dearly beloved, flee from idolatry.

15 I ſpeak as to wiſe men; judge ye what I ſay.

16 The cup of bleſſing which we bleſs, is it not the communion of the blood of Chriſt? the bread which we break, is it not the communion of the body of Chriſt?

17 For we *being* many are one bread, *and* one body: for we are all partakers of that one bread.

18 Behold Iſrael after the fleſh: are not they which eat of the ſacrifices partakers of the altar?

19 What ſay I then? that the idol is any thing, or that which is offered in ſacrifice to idols is any thing?

20 But *I ſay,* that the things which the Gentiles ſacrifice, they ſacrifice to devils, and not to God: and I would not that ye ſhould have fellowſhip with devils.

21 ¶ Ye cannot drink the cup of the Lord, and the cup of devils: ye cannot be partakers of the Lord's table, and of the table of devils.

22 Do we provoke the Lord to jealouſy? are we ſtronger than he?

23 All things are lawful for me, but all things are not expedient: all things are lawful for me, but all things edify not.

24 Let no man ſeek his own, but every man another's *wealth.*

25 Whatſoever is ſold in the ſhambles, *that* eat, aſking no queſtion for conſcience ſake:

26 For the earth *is* the Lord's, and the fulneſs thereof.

27 If any of them that believe not bid you *to a feaſt,* and ye be diſpoſed to go; whatſoever is ſet before you eat, aſking no queſtion for conſcience ſake.

28 But if any man ſay unto you, This is offered in ſacrifice unto idols, eat not for his ſake that ſhewed it, and for conſcience ſake: for the earth *is* the Lord's, and the fulneſs thereof:

29 Conſcience, I ſay, not thine own, but of the other; for why is my liberty judged of another *man's* conſcience?

30 For if I by grace be a partaker, why am I evil ſpoken of for that for which I give thanks?

31 Whether therefore ye eat, or drink, or whatſoever ye do, do all to the glory of God.

32 Give none offence, neither to the Jews, nor to the Gen-

Gentiles, nor to the church of God:

33 Even as I pleaſe all *men* in all *things*, not ſeeking mine own profit, but the *profit* of many, that they may be ſaved.

CHAP. XI.

Of ſundry duties.

BE ye followers of me, even as I alſo *am* of Chriſt.

2 Now I praiſe you, brethren, that ye remember me in all things, and keep the ordinances as I delivered *them* to you.

3 But I would have you know that the head of every man is Chriſt; and the head of the woman *is* the man; and the head of Chriſt *is* God.

4 Every man praying or propheſying, having *his* head covered, diſhonoureth his head.

5 But every woman that prayeth or propheſieth with *her* head uncovered, diſhonoureth her head: for that is even all one as if ſhe were ſhaven.

6 For if the woman be not covered, let her alſo be ſhorn: but if it be a ſhame for a woman to be ſhorn or ſhaven, let her be covered.

7 For a man indeed ought not to cover *his* head, foraſmuch as he is the image and glory of God: but the woman is the glory of the man.

8 For the man is not of the woman; but the woman of the man.

9 Neither was the man created for the woman; but the woman for the man.

10 For this cauſe ought the woman to have power on *her* head becauſe of the angels.

11 Nevertheleſs neither is the man without the woman, neither the woman without the man in the Lord.

12 For as the woman *is* of the man, even ſo *is* the man alſo by the woman; but all things of God.

13 Judge in yourſelves, is it comely that a woman pray unto God uncovered?

14 Doth not even nature itſelf teach you, that if a man have long hair, it is a ſhame unto him?

15 But if a woman have long hair, it is a glory to her: for *her* hair is given her for a covering.

16 But if any man ſeem to be contentious, we have no ſuch cuſtom, neither the churches of God.

17 Now in this that I declare *unto you* I praiſe *you* not, that ye come together not for the better, but for the worſe.

18 For firſt of all, when ye come together in the church, I hear that there be diviſions among you; and I partly believe it.

19 For there muſt be alſo hereſies among you, that they which are approved may be made manifeſt among you.

20 When ye come together therefore into one place, *this* is not to eat the Lord's ſupper.

21 ¶ For in eating every one taketh before *other* his own ſupper: and one is hungry, and another is drunken.

22 What? have ye not houſes to eat and to drink in? or deſpiſe ye the church of God, and ſhame them that have not? What ſhall I ſay to you? ſhall I praiſe you in this? I praiſe *you* not.

23 For I have received of the Lord that which alſo I delivered unto you, That the Lord Jeſus the *ſame* night in which

he was betrayed took bread:
24 And when he had given
thanks, he brake *it*, and ſaid,
Take, eat: this is my body
which is broken for you: this
do in remembrance of me.
25 After the ſame manner
alſo *he took* the cup, when he
had ſupped, ſaying, This cup
is the new teſtament in my
blood: this do ye, as oft as ye
drink *it*, in remembrance of
me.
26 For as often as ye eat this
bread, and drink this cup, ye
do ſhew the Lord's death till
he come
27 Wherefore whoſoever
ſhall eat this bread, and drink
this cup of the Lord unwor-
thily, ſhall be guilty of the
body and blood of the Lord.
28 But let a man examine
himſelf, and ſo let him eat of
that bread, and drink of *that*
cup.
29 For he that eateth and
drinketh unworthily, eateth
and drinketh damnation to
himſelf, not diſcerning the
Lord's body.
30 For this cauſe many *are*
weak and ſickly among you,
and many ſleep.
31 For if we would judge
ourſelves, we ſhould not be
judged.
32 But when we are judged
we are chaſtened of the Lord,
that we ſhould not be con-
demned with the world.
33 Wherefore, my brethren,
when ye come together to eat,
tarry one for another.
34 And if any man hunger,
let him eat at home: that
ye come not together unto
condemnation. And the reſt
will I ſet in order when I
come.

CHAP. XII.

Diverſity of ſpiritual gifts.

NOW concerning ſpiritual
gifts, brethren, I would
not have you ignorant.
2 Ye know that ye were
Gentiles, carried away unto
theſe dumb idols, even as ye
were led.
3 Wherefore I give you to
underſtand, that no man ſpeak-
ing by the Spirit of God
calleth Jeſus accurſed: and
that no man can ſay that Jeſus
is the Lord, but by the Holy
Ghoſt.
4 Now there are diverſities
of gifts, but the ſame Spirit.
5 And there are differences
of adminiſtrations, but the
ſame Lord.
6 And there are diverſities of
operations, but it is the ſame
God which worketh all in all.
7 ¶ But the manifeſtation of
the Spirit is given to every
man to profit withal.
8 For to one is given by the
Spirit the word of wiſdom; to
another the word of knowledge
by the ſame Spirit;
9 To another faith by the
ſame Spirit; to another the
gifts of healing by the ſame
Spirit;
10 To another the working
of miracles; to another pro-
phecy; to another diſcerning of
ſpirits; to another *divers* kinds
of tongues; to another the in-
terpretation of tongues:
11 But all theſe worketh that
one and the ſelfsame Spirit,
dividing to every man ſeverally
as he will.
12 ¶ For as the body is one,
and hath many members, and
all the members of that one
body, being many, are one bo-
dy: ſo alſo *is* Chriſt?

13 For by one Spirit are we all baptized into one body, whether *we be* Jews or Gentiles, whether *we be* bond or free; and have been all made to drink into one Spirit.

14 For the body is not one member, but many.

15 If the foot ſhall ſay, Becauſe I am not the hand, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body?

16 And if the ear ſhall ſay, Becauſe I am not the eye, I am not of the body; is it therefore not of the body?

17 If the whole body *were* an eye, where *were* the hearing? if the whole *were* hearing, where *were* the ſmelling?

18 But now hath God ſet the members every one of them in the body, as it hath pleaſed him.

19 And if they were all one member, where *were* the body?

20 But now *are they* many members, yet but one body.

21 And the eye cannot ſay unto the hand, I have no need of thee: nor again the head to the feet, I have no need of you.

22 Nay, much more thoſe members of the body which ſeem to be more feeble are neceſſary:

23 And thoſe *members* of the body which we think to be leſs honourable, upon theſe we beſtow more abundant honour; and our uncomely *parts* have more abundant comelineſs.

24 For our comely *parts* have no need; but God hath tempered the body together, having given more abundant honour to that *part* which lacked:

25 That there ſhould be no ſchiſm in the body; but *that* the members ſhould have the ſame care one for another.

26 And whether one member ſuffer, all the members ſuffer with it; or one member be honoured, all the members rejoice with it.

27 Now ye are the body of Chriſt, and members in particular.

28 And God hath ſet ſome in the church, firſt apoſtles, ſecondarily prophets, thirdly teachers, after that miracles, then gifts of healings, helps, governments, diverſities of tongues.

29 *Are* all apoſtles? *are* all prophets? *are* all teachers? *are* all workers of miracles?

30 Have all the gifts of healing? do all ſpeak with tongues? do all interpret?

31 But covet earneſtly the beſt gifts; and yet ſhew I unto you a more excellent way.

CHAP. XIII.

The praiſes of charity.

THOUGH I ſpeak with the tongues of men and of angels, and have not charity, I am become *as* ſounding braſs, or a tinkling cymbal.

2 And though I have *the gift of* prophecy, and underſtand all myſteries, and all knowledge, and though I have all faith, ſo that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing.

3 And though I beſtow all my goods to feed *the poor*, and though I give my body to be burned, and have not charity, it profiteth me nothing.

4 ¶ Charity ſuffereth long, *and* is kind; charity envieth not; charity vaunteth not itſelf, is not puffed up,

5 Doth not behave itſelf unſeemly, ſeeketh not her own, is not eaſily provoked, thinketh no evil;

6 Rejoic-

6 Rejoiceth not in iniquity, but rejoiceth in the truth;
7 Beareth all things, believeth all things, hopeth all things, endureth all things.
8 Charity never faileth: but whether *there be* prophecies, they ſhall fail; whether *there be* tongues, they ſhall ceaſe; whether *there be* knowledge, it ſhall vaniſh away.
9 For we know in part, and we propheſy in part.
10 But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part ſhall be done away.
11 When I was a child, I ſpake as a child, I underſtood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childiſh things.
12 For now we ſee through a glaſs darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then ſhall I know even as alſo I am known.
13 And now abideth faith, hope, charity, theſe three; but the greateſt of theſe *is* charity.

CHAP. XIV.

Prophecy recommended.

FOLLOW after charity, and deſire ſpiritual *gifts*, but rather that ye may propheſy.
2 For he that ſpeaketh in an *unknown* tongue ſpeaketh not unto men, but unto God: for no man underſtandeth *him*; howbeit, in the ſpirit he ſpeaketh myſteries.
3 But he that propheſieth ſpeaketh unto men *to* edification, and exhortation, and comfort.
4 He that ſpeaketh in an *unknown* tongue edifieth himſelf; but he that propheſieth edifieth the church.
5 I would that ye all ſpake with tongues, but rather that ye propheſied: for greater *is* he that propheſieth than he that ſpeaketh with tongues, except he interpret, that the church may receive edifying.
6 Now, brethren, if I come unto you ſpeaking with tongues, what ſhall I profit you, except I ſhall ſpeak to you either by revelation, or by knowledge, or by propheſying, or by doctrine?
7 And even things without life giving ſound, whether pipe or harp, except they give a diſtinction in the ſounds, how ſhall it be known what is piped or harped?
8 For if the trumpet give an uncertain ſound, who ſhall prepare himſelf to the battle?
9 So likewiſe ye, except ye utter by the tongue words eaſy to be underſtood, how ſhall it be known what is ſpoken? for ye ſhall ſpeak into the air.
10 There are, it may be, ſo many kinds of voices in the world, and none of them *is* without ſignification.
11 Therefore if I know not the meaning of the voice, I ſhall be unto him that ſpeaketh a barbarian, and he that ſpeaketh *ſhall be* a barbarian unto me.
12 Even ſo ye, foraſmuch as ye are zealous of ſpiritual *gifts*, ſeek that ye may excel to the edifying of the church.
13 Wherefore let him that ſpeaketh in an *unknown* tongue pray that he may interpret.
14 For if I pray in an *unknown* tongue, my ſpirit prayeth, but my underſtanding is unfruitful.
15 What is it then? I will pray with the ſpirit, and I will pray

pray with the underſtanding
alſo: I will ſing with the ſpirit,
and I will ſing with the underſtanding
alſo.
16 Elſe when thou ſhalt bleſs
with the ſpirit, how ſhall he
that occupieth the room of the
unlearned ſay, Amen, at thy
giving of thanks, ſeeing he underſtandeth
not what thou ſayeſt?
17 For thou verily giveſt
thanks well, but the other is
not edified.
18 I thank my God, I ſpeak
with tongues more than ye all:
19 Yet in the church I had
rather ſpeak five words with my
underſtanding, that *by my voice*
I might teach others alſo, than
ten thouſand words in an *unknown*
tongue.
20 Brethren, be not children
in underſtanding: howbeit in
malice be ye children, but in
underſtanding be men.
21 In the law it is written,
With *men of* other tongues and
other lips will I ſpeak unto
this people; and yet for all that
will they not hear me, ſaith
the Lord.
22 Wherefore tongues are
for a ſign, not to them that believe,
but to them that believe
not: but propheſying *ſerveth*
not for them that believe not,
but for them which believe.
23 If therefore the whole
church be come together into
one place, and all ſpeak with
tongues, and there come in *thoſe
that are* unlearned, or unbelievers,
will they not ſay that
ye are mad?
24 But if all propheſy, and
there come in one that believeth
not, or *one* unlearned,
he is convinced of all, he is
judged of all:
25 And thus are the ſecrets
of his heart made manifeſt; and
ſo falling down on *his* face he
will worſhip God, and report
that God is in you of a truth.
26 How is it then, brethren?
when ye come together, every
one of you hath a pſalm, hath a
doctrine, hath a tongue, hath
a revelation, hath an interpretation.
Let all things be done
unto edifying.
27 If any man ſpeak in an
unknown tongue, *let it be* by
two, or at the moſt *by* three,
and *that* by courſe; and let
one interpret.
28 But if there be no interpreter,
let him keep ſilence in
the church; and let him ſpeak
to himſelf, and to God.
29 Let the prophets ſpeak two
or three, and let the other judge.
30 If *any thing* be revealed to
another that ſitteth by, let the
firſt hold his peace.
31 For ye may all propheſy,
one by one, that all may learn,
and all may be comforted.
32 And the ſpirits of the
prophets are ſubject to the prophets.
33 For God is not *the author*
of confuſion, but of peace, as
in all churches of the ſaints.
34 Let your women keep
ſilence in the churches: for it
is not permitted unto them to
ſpeak; but *they are commanded*
to be under obedience, as alſo
ſaith the law.
35 And if they will learn
any thing, let them aſk their
huſbands at home: for it is a
ſhame for women to ſpeak in
the church.
36 What? came the word of
God out from you? or came it
unto you only?
37 If any man think himſelf
to

to be a prophet, or ſpiritual, let
him acknowledge that the
things that I write unto you are
the commandments of the Lord.
38 But if any man be igno-
rant, let him be ignorant.
39 Wherefore, brethren,
covet to propheſy, and forbid
not to ſpeak with tongues.
40 Let all things be done
decently and in order.

C H A P. XV.

Of Chriſt's reſurrection.

MOreover, brethren, I de-
clare unto you the goſpel
which I preached unto you,
which alſo ye have received,
and wherein ye ſtand;
2 By which alſo ye are ſaved,
if ye keep in memory what I
preached unto you, unleſs ye
have believed in vain.
3 ¶ For I delivered unto you
firſt of all that which I alſo
received, how that Chriſt died
for our ſins, according to the
ſcriptures;
4 And that he was buried,
and that he roſe again the third
day, according to the ſcriptures:
5 And that he was ſeen of
Cephas, then of the twelve:
6 After that he was ſeen of
above five hundred brethren at
once: of whom the greater part
remain unto this preſent, but
ſome are fallen aſleep.
7 After that he was ſeen of
James; then of all the apoſtles.
8 And laſt of all he was ſeen
of me alſo, as of one born out
of due time.
9 For I am the leaſt of the
apoſtles, that am not meet to be
called an apoſtle, becauſe I per-
ſecuted the church of God.
10 But by the grace of God
I am what I am: and his grace
which *was beſtowed* upon me
was not in vain; but I labour-
ed more abundantly than they
all: yet not I, but the grace
of God which was with me.
11 Therefore whether *it*
were I or they, ſo we preach,
and ſo ye believed.
12 Now if Chriſt be preached
that he roſe from the dead,
how ſay ſome among you that
there is no reſurrection of the
dead?
13 But if there be no reſur-
rection of the dead, then is
Chriſt not riſen:
14 And if Chriſt be not riſen,
then *is* our preaching vain,
and your faith *is* alſo vain.
15 Yea, and we are found
falſe witneſſes of God; becauſe
we have teſtified of God that
he raiſed up Chriſt: whom he
raiſed not up, if ſo be that the
dead riſe not.
16 For if the dead riſe not,
then is not Chriſt raiſed:
17 And if Chriſt be not raiſ-
ed, your faith *is* vain; ye are
yet in your ſins.
18 Then they alſo which are
fallen aſleep in Chriſt are pe-
riſhed.
19 If in this life only we have
hope in Chriſt, we are of all
men moſt miſerable.
20 But now is Chriſt riſen
from the dead, *and* become the
firſtfruits of them that ſlept.
21 ¶ For ſince by man *came*
death, by man *came* alſo the
reſurrection of the dead.
22 For as in Adam all die,
even ſo in Chriſt ſhall all be
made alive.
23 But every man in his own
order: Chriſt the firſtfruits;
afterward they that are Chriſt's
at his coming.
24 Then *cometh* the end,
when he ſhall have delivered
up the kingdom to God, even
the

the Father; when he ſhall have put down all rule and all authority and power.

25 For he muſt reign till he hath put all enemies under his feet.

26 The laſt enemy *that* ſhall be deſtroyed *is* death.

27 For he hath put all things under his feet. But when he ſaith all things are put under *him, it is* manifeſt that he is excepted which did put all things under him.

28 And when all things ſhall be ſubdued unto him, then ſhall the Son alſo himſelf be ſubject unto him that put all things under him, that God may be all in all.

29 Elſe what ſhall they do which are baptized for the dead, if the dead riſe not at all? why are they then baptized for the dead?

30 And why ſtand we in jeopardy every hour?

31 I proteſt by your rejoicing which I have in Chriſt Jeſus our Lord, I die daily.

32 If after the manner of men I have fought with beaſts at Epheſus, what advantageth it me, if the dead riſe not? Let us eat and drink, for to morrow we die,

33 Be not deceived: evil communications corrupt good manners.

34 Awake to righteouſneſs, and ſin not; for ſome have not the knowledge of God. I ſpeak *this* to your ſhame.

35 ¶ But ſome *man* will ſay, How are the dead raiſed up? and with what body do they come?

36 *Thou* fool, that which thou ſoweſt is not quickened, except it die:

37 And that which thou ſoweſt, thou ſoweſt not that body that ſhall be, but bare grain, it may chance of wheat, or of ſome other *grain*:

38 But God giveth it a body as it hath pleaſed him, and to every ſeed his own body.

39 All fleſh *is* not the ſame fleſh: but *there is* one *kind of* fleſh of men, another fleſh of beaſts, another of fiſhes, *and* another of birds.

40 *There is* alſo celeſtial bodies, and bodies terreſtrial: but the glory of the celeſtial *is* one, and the *glory* of the terreſtrial *is* another.

41 *There is* one glory of the ſun, and another glory of the moon, and another glory of the ſtars: for *one* ſtar differeth from *another* ſtar in glory.

42 So alſo *is* the reſurrection of the dead. It is ſown in corruption; it is raiſed in incorruption:

43 It is ſown in diſhonour; it is raiſed in glory: it is ſown in weakneſs; it is raiſed in power:

44 It is ſown a natural body; it is raiſed a ſpiritual body. There is a natural body, and there is a ſpiritual body.

45 And ſo it is written, The firſt man Adam was made a living ſoul; the laſt Adam *was made* a quickening ſpirit.

46 Howbeit that *was* not firſt which is ſpiritual, but that which is natural: and afterward that which is ſpiritual.

47 The firſt man *is* of the earth, earthy: the ſecond man *is* the Lord from heaven.

48 As *is* the earthy, ſuch *are* they alſo that are earthy: and as *is* the heavenly, ſuch *are* they alſo that are heavenly.

49 And as we have borne

the image of the earthy, we ſhall alſo bear the image of the heavenly.

50 Now this I ſay, brethren, that fleſh and blood cannot inherit the kingdom of God; neither doth corruption inherit incorruption.

51 ¶ Behold, I ſhew you a myſtery; We ſhall not all ſleep, but we ſhall all be changed,

52 In a moment, in the twinkling of an eye, at the laſt trump: for the trumpet ſhall ſound, and the dead ſhall be raiſed incorruptible, and we ſhall be changed.

53 For this corruptible muſt put on incorruption, and this mortal *muſt* put on immortality.

54 So when this corruptible ſhall have put on incorruption, and this mortal ſhall have put on immortality, then ſhall be brought to paſs the ſaying that is written, Death is ſwallowed up in victory.

55 O death, where *is* thy ſting? O grave, where *is* thy victory?

56 The ſting of death *is* ſin, and the ſtrength of ſin *is* the law.

57 But thanks *be* to God, which giveth us the victory, through our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

58 Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye ſtedfaſt, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, foraſmuch as ye know that your labour is not in vain in the Lord.

CHAP. XVI.

Of relieving our brethren.

NOW concerning the collection for the ſaints, as I have given order to the churches of Galatia, even ſo do ye.

2 Upon the firſt *day* of the week let every one of you lay by him in ſtore, as *God* hath proſpered him, that there be no gatherings when I come.

3 And when I come, whomſoever ye ſhall approve by *your* letters, them will I ſend to bring your liberality unto Jeruſalem.

4 And if it be meet that I go alſo, they ſhall go with me.

5 Now I will come unto you, when I ſhall paſs through Macedonia. For I do paſs through Macedonia.

6 And it may be that I will abide, yea, and winter with you, that ye may bring me on my journey whitherſoever I go.

7 For I will not ſee you now by the way; but I truſt to tarry a while with you, if the Lord permit.

8 But I will tarry at Epheſus until Pentecoſt.

9 For a great door and effectual is opened unto me, and *there are* many adverſaries.

10 ¶ Now if Timotheus come, ſee that he may be with you without fear: for he worketh the work of the Lord, as I alſo *do.*

11 Let no man therefore deſpiſe him: but conduct him forth in peace, that he may come unto me: for I look for him with the brethren.

12 As touching *our* brother Apollos, I greatly deſired him to come unto you with the brethren: but his will was not at all to come at this time; but he will come when he ſhall have convenient time.

13 ¶ Watch ye, ſtand faſt in the faith, quit you like men, be ſtrong.

14 Let all your things be done with charity.

15 I beſeech you, brethren,
(ye know the houſe of Ste-
phanas, that it is the firſtfruits
of Achaia, and *that* they have
addicted themſelves to the mi-
niſtry of the ſaints,)
16 ¶ That ye ſubmit your-
ſelves unto ſuch, and to every
one that helpeth with *us*, and
laboureth.
17 I am glad of the coming
of Stephanas, and Fortunatus,
and Achaicus: for that which
was lacking on your part they
have ſupplied.
18 For they have refreſhed
my ſpirit and your's: therefore
acknowledge ye them that are
ſuch.
19 The churches of Aſia ſa-
lute you. Aquila and Priſcilla
ſalute you much in the Lord,
with the church that is in their
houſe.
20 All the brethren greet
you. Greet ye one another
with an holy kiſs.
21 The ſalutation of *me* Paul,
with mine own hand.
22 If any man love not the
Lord Jeſus Chriſt, let him be
Anathema, Maranatha.
23 The grace of our Lord
Jeſus Chriſt *be* with you.
24 My love *be* with you all
in Chriſt Jeſus. Amen.

¶ The firſt *epiſtle* to the Co-
rinthians was written from
Philippi by Stephanas, and
Fortunatus, and Achaicus,
and Timotheus.

The Second Epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle to the CORINTHIANS.

CHAP. I.

Encouragement againſt troubles.

PAUL, an apoſtle of Jeſus
Chriſt by the will of God,
and Timothy *our* brother,
unto the church of God which
is at Corinth, with all the ſaints
which are in all Achaia:
2 Grace *be* to you and peace
form God our Father, and *from*
the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
3 Bleſſed *be* God, even the
Father of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt,
the Father of mercies, and the
God of all comfort;
4 Who comforteth us in all
our tribulation, that we may
be able to comfort them which
are in any trouble, by the com-
fort wherewith we ourſelves
are comforted of God.
5 For as the ſufferings of
Chriſt abound in us, ſo our con-
ſolation alſo aboundeth by Chriſt.
6 And whether we be af-
flicted, *it is* for your conſola-
tion and ſalvation, which is
effectual in the enduring of the
ſame ſufferings which we alſo
ſuffer: or whether we be com-
forted, *it is* for your conſola-
tion and ſalvation.
7 And our hope of you *is*
ſtedfaſt, knowing that as ye are
partakers of the ſufferings, ſo *ſhall*
ye be alſo of the conſolation.
8 For we would not, bre-
thren, have you ignorant of
our trouble which came to us
in Aſia, that we were preſſed
out of meaſure above ſtrength,
inſomuch that we deſpaired
even of life:
9 But we had the ſentence
of death in ourſelves, that we
ſhould not truſt in ourſelves,
but

but in God which raiſeth the dead:

10 Who delivered us from ſo great a death, and doth deliver: in whom we truſt that he will yet deliver *us;*

11 Ye alſo helping together by prayer for us, that for the gift *beſtowed* upon us by the means of many perſons, thanks may be given by many on our behalf.

12 ¶ For our rejoicing is this, the teſtimony of our conſcience, that in ſimplicity and godly ſincerity, not with fleſhly wiſdom, but by the grace of God, we have had our converſation in the world, and more abundantly to you-ward.

13 For we write none other things unto you than what ye read or acknowledge; and I truſt ye ſhall acknowledge even to the end;

14 As alſo ye have acknowledged us in part, that we are your rejoicing, even as ye alſo *are* our's in the day of the Lord Jeſus.

15 ¶ And in this confidence I was minded to come unto you before, that ye might have a ſecond benefit;

16 And to paſs by you into Macedonia, and to come again out of Macedonia unto you, and of you to be brought on my way toward Judea.

17 ¶ When I therefore was thus minded, did I uſe lightneſs? or the things that I purpoſe, do I purpoſe according to the fleſh, that with me there ſhould be yea, yea, and nay, nay?

18 But *as* God *is* true, our word toward you was not yea and nay.

19 For the Son of God, Jeſus Chriſt, who was preached among you by us, *even* by me, and Silvanus and Timotheus, was not yea and nay, but in him was yea.

20 For all the promiſes of God in him *are* yea, and in him Amen, unto the glory of God by us.

21 Now he which ſtabliſheth us with you in Chriſt, and hath anointed us, *is* God;

22 Who hath alſo ſealed us, and given the earneſt of the Spirit in our hearts.

23 Moreover I call God for a record upon my ſoul, that to ſpare you, I came not as yet unto Corinth.

24 Not for that we have dominion over your faith, but are helpers of your joy: for by faith ye ſtand.

CHAP. II.

Paul's ſucceſs in preaching.

BUT I determined this with myſelf, that I would not come again to you in heavineſs.

2 For if I make you ſorry, who is he then that maketh me glad, but the ſame which is made ſorry by me?

3 And I wrote this ſame unto you, leſt when I came I ſhould have ſorrow from them of whom I ought to rejoice; having confidence in you all, that my joy is *the joy* of you all.

4 For out of much affliction and anguiſh of heart I wrote unto you with many tears: not that ye ſhould be grieved, but that ye might know the love which I have more abundantly unto you.

5 But if any have cauſed grief, he hath not grieved me, but in part: that I may not overcharge you all.

6 ¶ Sufficient to ſuch a man *is*

this

this puniſhment, which *was inflicted* of many.

7 So that contrariwiſe ye *ought* rather to forgive *him*, and comfort *him*, leſt perhaps ſuch a one ſhould be ſwallowed up with overmuch ſorrow.

8 Wherefore I beſeech you that ye would confirm *your* love toward him.

9 For this end alſo did I write, that I might know the proof of you, whether ye be obedient in all things.

10 To whom ye forgive any thing, I *forgive* alſo: for if I forgave any thing, to whom I forgave *it*, for your ſakes *forgave I it* in the perſon of Chriſt;

11 Leſt Satan ſhould get an advantage of us: for we are not ignorant of his devices.

12 Furthermore, when I came to Troas to *preach* Chriſt's goſpel, and a door was opened unto me of the Lord,

13 I had no reſt in my ſpirit, becauſe I found not Titus my brother: but taking my leave of them, I went from thence into Macedonia.

14 ¶ Now thanks *be* unto God, which always cauſeth us to triumph in Chriſt, and maketh manifeſt the ſavour of his knowledge by us in every place.

15 For we are unto God a ſweet ſavour of Chriſt in them that are ſaved, and in them that periſh:

16 To the one *we are* the ſavour of death unto death; and to the other the ſavour of life unto life. And who *is* ſufficient for theſe things?

17 For we are not as many, which corrupt the word of God: but as of ſincerity, but as of God, in the ſight of God ſpeak we in Chriſt.

CHAP. III.

Of miniſters of the law and goſpel.

DO we begin again to commend ourſelves? or need we, as ſome *others*, epiſtles of commendation to you, or *letters* of commendation from you,

2 Ye are our epiſtle written in our hearts, known and read of all men:

3 *Foraſmuch as ye are* manifeſtly declared to be the epiſtle of Chriſt miniſtered by us, written not with ink, but with the Spirit of the living God; not in tables of ſtone, but in fleſhy tables of the heart.

4 And ſuch truſt have we through Chriſt to God-ward:

5 Not that we are ſufficient of ourſelves to think any thing as of ourſelves; but our ſufficiency *is* of God;

6 ¶ Who alſo hath made us able miniſters of the new teſtament, not of the letter, but of the ſpirit: for the letter killeth, but the ſpirit giveth life.

7 But if the miniſtration of death, written *and* engraven in ſtones, was glorious, ſo that the children of Iſrael could not ſtedfaſtly behold the face of Moſes, for the glory of his countenance, which *glory* was to be done away:

8 How ſhall not the miniſtration of the ſpirit be rather glorious?

9 For if the miniſtration of condemnation *be* glory, much more doth the miniſtration of righteouſneſs exceed in glory.

10 For even that which was made glorious had no glory in this reſpect, by reaſon of the glory that excelleth.

11 For if that which was done away *was* glorious, much more that which remaineth *is* glorious.

12 Seeing then that we have ſuch hope, we uſe great plainneſs of ſpeech:

13 And not as Moſes, *which* put a vail over his face, that the children of Iſrael could not ſtedfaſtly look to the end of that which is aboliſhed:

14 But their minds were blinded: for until this day remaineth the ſame vail untaken away in the reading of the old teſtament: which *vail* is done away in Chriſt.

15 But even unto this day, when Moſes is read, the vail is upon their heart.

16 Nevertheleſs when it ſhall turn to the Lord, the vail ſhall be taken away.

17 Now the Lord is that Spirit: and where the Spirit of the Lord *is*, there *is* liberty.

18 But we all with open face, beholding as in a glaſs the glory of the Lord, are changed into the ſame image, from glory to glory, *even* as by the Spirit of the Lord.

C H A P. IV.

Paul's comfort in diſtreſs.

THerefore ſeeing we have this miniſtry, as we have received mercy, we faint not;

2 But have renounced the hidden things of diſhoneſty, not walking in craftineſs, nor handling the word of God deceitfully, but by manifeſtation of the truth commending ourſelves to every man's conſcience in the ſight of God.

3 But if our goſpel be hid, it is hid to them that are loſt:

4 In whom the god of this world hath blinded the minds of them which believe not, leſt the light of the glorious goſpel of Chriſt, who is the image of God, ſhould ſhine unto them.

5 For we preach not ourſelves, but Chriſt Jeſus the Lord; and ourſelves your ſervants for Jeſus' ſake.

6 For God, who commanded the light to ſhine out of darkneſs, hath ſhined in our hearts, to *give* the light of the knowledge of the glory of God in the face of Jeſus Chriſt.

7 ¶ But we have this treaſure in earthen veſſels, that the excellency of the power may be of God, and not of us.

8 *We are* troubled on every ſide, yet not diſtreſſed; *we are* perplexed, but not in deſpair;

9 Perſecuted, but not forſaken; caſt down, but not deſtroyed;

10 Always bearing about in the body the dying of the Lord Jeſus, that the life alſo of Jeſus might be made manifeſt in our body.

11 For we which live are alway delivered unto death for Jeſus' ſake, that the life alſo of Jeſus might be made manifeſt in our mortal fleſh.

12 So then death worketh in us, but life in you.

13 We having the ſame ſpirit of faith, according as it is written, I believed, and therefore have I ſpoken; we alſo believe, and therefore ſpeak;

14 Knowing that he which raiſed up the Lord Jeſus, ſhall raiſe up us alſo by Jeſus, and ſhall preſent *us* with you.

15 For all things *are* for your ſakes, that the abundant grace might through the thankſgiving of many redound to the glory of God.

16 For which cauſe we faint not; but though our outward man periſh, yet the inward *man* is renewed day by day.

17 For our light affliction, which

is but for a moment, worketh for us a far more exceeding *and* eternal weight of glory;

18 While we look not at the things which are ſeen, but at the things which are not ſeen: for the things which are ſeen *are* temporal, but the things which are not ſeen *are* eternal.

CHAP. V.

His hope of immortal glory.

FOR we know that if our earthly houſe of *this* tabernacle were diſſolved, we have a building of God, an houſe not made with hands, eternal in the heavens.

2 For in this we groan earneſtly, deſiring to be clothed upon with our houſe which is from heaven:

3 If ſo be that being clothed we ſhall not be found naked.

4 For we that are in *this* tabernacle do groan, being burdened: not for that we would be unclothed, but clothed upon, that mortality might be ſwallowed up of life.

5 Now he that hath wrought us for the ſelfsame thing *is* God, who alſo hath given unto us the earneſt of the Spirit.

6 Therefore *we are* always confident, knowing that whilſt we are at home in the body, we are abſent from the Lord:

7 (For we walk by faith, not by ſight:)

8 We are confident, *I ſay*, and willing rather to be abſent from the body, and to be preſent with the Lord.

9 ¶ Wherefore we labour, that, whether preſent or abſent, we may be accepted of him.

10 For we muſt all appear before the judgement ſeat of Chriſt, that every one may receive the things *done* in *his* body, according to that he hath done, whether *it be* good or bad.

11 Knowing therefore the terror of the Lord, we perſuade men; but we are made manifeſt unto God; and I truſt alſo are made manifeſt in your conſciences.

12 For we commend not ourſelves again unto you, but give you occaſion to glory on our behalf, that ye may have ſomewhat to *anſwer* them which glory in appearance, and not in heart.

13 For whether we be beſide ourſelves, *it is* to God; or whether we be ſober, *it is* for your cauſe.

14 For the love of Chriſt conſtraineth us, becauſe we thus judge, that if one died for all, then were all dead:

15 And *that* he died for all, that they which live ſhould not henceforth live unto themſelves, but unto him which died for them, and roſe again.

16 Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the fleſh: yea, though we have known Chriſt after the fleſh, yet now henceforth know we *him* no more.

17 Therefore if any man *be* in Chriſt, *he is* a new creature: old things are paſſed away; behold, all things are become new.

18 And all things *are* of God, who hath reconciled us to himſelf by Jeſus Chriſt, and hath given to us the miniſtry of reconciliation;

19 To wit, that God was in Chriſt, reconciling the world unto himſelf, not imputing their treſpaſſes unto them; and hath committed unto us the word of reconciliation.

20 Now then we are ambassadors for Christ, as though God did beseech *you* by us: we pray *you* in Christ's stead, be ye reconciled to God.

21 For he hath made him *to be* sin for us who knew no sin, that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.

CHAP. VI.

His faithfulness in the ministry.

WE then, *as* workers together *with him,* beseech *you* also that ye receive not the grace of God in vain.

2 (For he saith, I have heard thee in a time accepted, and in the day of salvation have I succoured thee: behold, now *is* the accepted time; behold, now *is* the day of salvation.)

3 Giving no offence in any thing, that the ministry be not blamed:

4 But in all *things* approving ourselves as the ministers of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in necessities, in distresses,

5 In stripes, in imprisonments, in tumults, in labours, in watchings, in fastings;

6 By pureness, by knowledge, by longsuffering, by kindness, by the Holy Ghost, by love unfeigned,

7 By the word of truth, by the power of God, by the armour of righteousness on the right hand and on the left,

8 By honour and dishonour, by evil report and good report: as deceivers, and *yet* true;

9 As unknown, and *yet* well known; as dying, and, behold, we live; as chastened, and not killed;

10 As sorowful, yet alway rejoicing; as poor, yet making many rich; as having nothing, and *yet* possessing all things.

11 O *ye* Corinthians, our mouth is open unto you, our heart is enlarged.

12 Ye are not straitened in us, but ye are straitened in your own bowels.

13 Now for a recompence in the same, (I speak as unto *my* children,) be ye also enlarged.

14 ¶ Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers. For what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness?

15 And what concord hath Christ with Belial? or what part hath he that believeth with an infidel?

16 And what agreement hath the temple of God with idols? for ye are the temple of the living God: as God hath said, I will dwell in them, and walk in *them;* and I will be their God, and they shall be my people.

17 Wherefore come out from among them, and be ye separate, saith the Lord, and touch not the unclean *thing;* and I will receive you,

18 And will be a Father unto you, and ye shall be my sons and daughters, saith the Lord Almighty.

CHAP. VII.

Exhortation to purity.

HAVING therefore these promises, dearly beloved, let us cleanse ourselves from all filthiness of the flesh and spirit, perfecting holiness in the fear of God.

2 Receive us: we have wronged no man, we have corrupted no man, we have defrauded no man.

3 ¶ I speak not *this* to condemn *you:* for I have said before, that ye

ye are in your hearts to die and live with *you.*

4 Great *is* my boldneſs of ſpeech toward you, great *is* my glorifying of you: I am filled with comfort, I am exceeding joyful in all our tribulation.

5 For, when we were come into Macedonia, our fleſh had no reſt, but we were troubled on every ſide; without *were* fightings, within *were* fears.

6 Nevertheleſs God, that comforteth thoſe that are caſt down, comforted us by the coming of Titus;

7 And not by his coming only, but by the conſolation wherewith he was comforted in you, when he told us your earneſt deſire, your mourning, your fervent mind toward me; ſo that I rejoiced the more.

8 For though I made you ſorry with a letter, I do not repent, though I did repent: for I perceive that the ſame epiſtle hath made you ſorry, though *it were* but for a ſeaſon.

9 Now I rejoice, not that ye were made ſorry, but that ye ſorrowed to repentance: for ye were made ſorry after a godly manner, that ye might receive damage by us in nothing.

10 For godly ſorrow worketh repentance to ſalvation not to be repented of: but the ſorrow of the world worketh death.

11 For behold this ſelfſame thing, that ye ſorrowed after a godly ſort, what carefulneſs it wrought in you, yea, *what* clearing of yourſelves, yea, *what* indignation, yea, *what* fear, yea, *what* vehement deſire, yea, *what* zeal, yea, *what* revenge! in all *things* ye have approved yourſelves to be clear in this matter.

12 Wherefore, though I wrote unto you, *I did it* not for his cauſe that had done the wrong, nor for his cauſe that ſuffered wrong, but that our care for you in the ſight of God might appear unto you.

13 Therefore we were comforted in your comfort: yea, and exceedingly the more joyed we for the joy of Titus, becauſe his ſpirit was refreſhed by you all.

14 For if I have boaſted any thing to him of you, I am not aſhamed; but as we ſpake all things to you in truth, even ſo our boaſting, which *I made* before Titus, is found a truth.

15 And his inward affection is more abundant toward you, whilſt he remembereth the obedience of you all, how with fear and trembling ye received him.

16 I rejoice therefore that I have confidence in you in all *things.*

CHAP. VIII.

He exhorteth to liberality.

MOREOVER, brethren, we do you to wit of the grace of God beſtowed on the churches of Macedonia;

2 How that in a great trial of affliction the abundance of their joy and their deep poverty abounded unto the riches of their liberality.

3 For to *their* power, I bare record, yea, and beyond *their* power, *they were* willing of themſelves;

4 Praying us with much intreaty that we would receive the gift, and *take upon us* the fellowſhip of the miniſtering to the ſaints.

5 And *this they did,* not as we hoped, but firſt gave their own ſelves to the Lord, and

unto us by the will of God.
6 Inſomuch that we deſired Titus, that as he had begun, ſo he would alſo finiſh in you the ſame grace alſo.
7 Therefore, as ye abound in every *thing*, *in* faith and utterance, and knowledge, and *in* all diligence, and *in* your love to us, *ſee* that ye abound in this grace alſo.
8 I ſpeak not by commandment, but by occaſion of the forwardneſs of others, and to prove the ſincerity of your love.
9 For ye know the grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, that, though he was rich, yet for your ſakes he became poor, that ye through his poverty might be rich.
10 And herein I give *my* advice: for this is expedient for you, who have begun before, not only to do, but alſo to be forward a year ago.
11 Now therefore perform the doing *of it*; that as *there was* a readineſs to will, ſo *there may be* a performance alſo out of that which ye have.
12 For if there be firſt a willing mind, *it is* accepted according to that a man hath, *and* not according to that he hath not.
13 For *I mean* not that other men be eaſed, and ye burdened:
14 But by an equality, *that* now at this time your abundance *may be a ſupply* for their want, that their abundance alſo may be *a ſupply* for your want: that there may be equality:
15 As it is written, He that *had gathered* much had nothing over; and he that *had gathered* little had no lack.
16 ¶ But thanks *be* to God which put the ſame earneſt care into the heart of Titus for you.
17 For indeed he accepted the exhortation; but being more forward, of his own accord he went unto you.
18 And we have ſent with him the brother, whoſe praiſe *is* in the goſpel throughout all the churches;
19 And not *that* only, but who was alſo choſen of the churches to travel with us with this grace, which is adminiſtered by us to the glory of the ſame Lord, and *declaration of* your ready mind:
20 Avoiding this, that no man ſhould blame us in this abundance which is adminiſtered by us:
21 Providing for honeſt things, not only in the ſight of the Lord, but alſo in the ſight of men.
22 And we have ſent with them our brother, whom we have oftentimes proved diligent in many things, but now much more diligent, upon the great confidence which *I have* in you.
23 Whether *any do enquire* of Titus, *he is* my partner and fellowhelper concerning you: or our brethren *be enquired of*, *they are* the meſſengers of the churches, *and* the glory of Chriſt.
24 Wherefore ſhew ye to them, and before the churches, the proof of your love, and of our boaſting on your behalf.

CHAP. IX.

Charity recommended.

FOR as touching the miniſtering to the ſaints, it is ſuperfluous for me to write to you:
2 For I know the forwardneſs

nefs of your mind, for which I
boaſt of you to them of Mace-
donia, that Achaia was ready
a year ago; and your zeal hath
provoked very many.
3 Yet have I ſent the bre-
thren, leſt our boaſting of you
ſhould be in vain in this be-
half; that, as I ſaid, ye may be
ready:
4 Leſt haply if they of Ma-
cedonia come with me, and
find you unprepared, we (that
we ſay not, ye) ſhould be
aſhamed in this ſame confident
boaſting.
5 Therefore I thought it ne-
ceſſary to exhort the brethren,
that they would go before unto
you, and make up beforehand
your bounty, whereof ye had
notice before, that the ſame
might be ready, as *a matter of*
bounty, and not as *of* covetouſ-
neſs.
6 ¶ But this *I ſay*, He which
ſoweth ſparingly ſhall reap alſo
ſparingly; and he which ſow-
eth bountifully ſhall reap alſo
bountifully.
7 Every man according as he
purpoſeth in his heart, *ſo let
him give*; not grudgingly, or
of neceſſity: for God loveth a
cheerful giver.
8 And God *is* able to make
all grace abound toward you;
that ye, always having all ſuffi-
ciency in all *things*, may abound
to every good work:
9 (As it is written, He hath
diſperſed abroad; he hath given
to the poor: his righteouſneſs
remaineth for ever.
10 ¶ Now he that miniſtereth
ſeed to the ſower both miniſ-
ter bread for *your* food, and
multiply your ſeed ſown, and
increaſe the fruits of your righ-
teouſneſs;)
11 Being enriched in every
thing to all bountifulneſs, which
cauſeth through us thankſgiving
to God.
12 For the adminiſtration of
this ſervice not only ſupplieth
the want of the ſaints, but is
abundant alſo by many thankſ-
givings unto God;
13 Whiles by the experi-
ment of this miniſtration they
glorify God for your profeſſed
ſubjection unto the goſpel of
Chriſt, and for *your* liberal diſ-
tribution unto them, and unto
all *men*;
14 And by their prayer for
you, which long after you for
the exceeding grace of God in
you.
15 Thanks *be* unto God for
his unſpeakable gift.

CHAP. X.

Of Paul's ſpiritual might.

NOW I Paul myſelf beſeech
you by the meekneſs and
gentleneſs of Chriſt, who in
preſence *am* baſe among you,
but being abſent am bold to-
ward you:
2 But I beſeech *you*, that I
may not be bold when I am
preſent with that confidence,
wherewith I think to be bold
againſt ſome, which think of us
as if we walked according to
the fleſh.
3 For though we walk in the
fleſh, we do not war after the
fleſh:
4 (For the weapons of our
warfare *are* not carnal, but
mighty through God to the
pulling down of ſtrong holds;)
5 Caſting down imaginations,
and every high thing that ex-
alteth itſelf againſt the know-
ledge of God, and bringing into
captivity every thought to the
obedience of Chriſt;

6 And having in a readineſs
to revenge all diſobedience,
when your obedience is ful-
filled.
7 Do ye look on things af-
ter the outward appearance?
If any man truſt to himſelf
that he is Chriſt's, let him of
himſelf think this again, that,
as he *is* Chriſt's, even ſo *are* we
Chriſt's.
8 For though I ſhould boaſt
ſomewhat more of our authori-
ty, which the Lord hath given
us for edification, and not for
your deſtruction, I ſhould not
be aſhamed:
9 That I may not ſeem as if
I would terrify you by letters.
10 For *his* letters, ſay they,
are weighty and powerful; but
his bodily preſence *is* weak, and
his ſpeech contemptible.
11 Let ſuch an one think
this, that ſuch as we are in
word by letters when we are
abſent, ſuch *will we be* alſo in
deed when we are preſent.
12 ¶ For we dare not make
ourſelves of the number, or
compare ourſelves with ſome
that commend themſelves:
but they meaſuring themſelves
by themſelves, and comparing
themſelves among themſelves,
are not wiſe.
13 But we will not boaſt of
things without *our* meaſure, but
according to the meaſure of the
rule which God hath diſtributed
to us, a meaſure to reach even
unto you.
14 For we ſtretch not our-
ſelves beyond *our meaſure*, as
though we reached not unto
you: for we are come as far
as to you alſo in *preaching* the
goſpel of Chriſt:
15 Not boaſting of things
without *our* meaſure, *that is*,
of other men's labours; but
having hope, when your faith
is increaſed, that we ſhall be
enlarged by you according to
our rule abundantly,
16 To preach the goſpel in
the *regions* beyond you, *and*
not to boaſt in another man's
line of things made ready to
our hand.
17 But he that glorieth, let
him glory in the Lord.
18 For not he that commend-
eth himſelf is approved, but
whom the Lord commend-
eth.

CHAP. XI.

Paul's forced ſelf-commendation.

WOULD to God ye could
bear with me a little in
my folly: and indeed bear with
me.
2 For I am jealous over you
with godly jealouſy: for I have
eſpouſed you to one huſband,
that I may preſent *you as* a
chaſte virgin to Chriſt.
3 But I fear leſt by any
means, as the ſerpent beguiled
Eve through his ſubtilty, ſo
your minds ſhould be corrupt-
ed from the ſimplicity that is
in Chriſt.
4 For if he that cometh
preacheth another Jeſus, whom
we have not preached, or *if*
ye receive another ſpirit, which
ye have not received, or ano-
ther goſpel, which ye have not
accepted, ye might well bare
with *him*.
5 For I ſuppoſe I was not a
whit behind the very chiefeſt
apoſtles.
6 But though *I be* rude in
ſpeech, yet not in knowledge;
but we have been throughly
made manifeſt among you in
all things.
7 Have I committed an of-

fence

fence in abaſing myſelf that ye
might be exalted, becauſe I
have preached to you the goſ-
pel of God freely?
8 I robbed other churches,
taking wages *of them*, to do
you ſervice.
9 And when I was preſent
with you, and wanted, I was
chargeable to no man: for that
which was lacking to me the
brethren which came from Ma-
cedonia ſupplied: and in all
things I have kept myſelf from
being burdenſome unto you,
and *ſo* will I keep *myſelf*.
10 As the truth of Chriſt is
in me, no man ſhall ſtop me
of this boaſting in the regions
of Achaia.
11 Wherefore? becauſe I
love you not? God knoweth.
12 But what I do, that I will
do, that I may cut off occaſion
from them which deſire occa-
ſion; that wherein they glory,
they may be found even as we.
13 For ſuch *are* falſe apoſtles,
deceitful workers, transform-
ing themſelves into the apoſtles
of Chriſt.
14 And no marvel; for Satan
himſelf is transformed into an
angel of light.
15 Therefore *it is* no great
thing if his miniſters alſo be
transformed as the miniſters of
righteouſneſs; whoſe end ſhall
be according to their works.
16 I ſay again, Let no man
think me a fool; if otherwiſe,
yet as a fool receive me, that I
may boaſt myſelf a little.
17 That which I ſpeak, I
ſpeak *it* not after the Lord, but
as it were fooliſhly, in this con-
fidence of boaſting.
18 Seeing that many glory
after the fleſh, I will glory alſo.
19 For ye ſuffer fools gladly,
ſeeing ye *yourſelves* are wiſe.
20 For ye ſuffer, if a man bring
you into bondage, if a man de-
vour *you*, if a man take *of you*,
if a man exalt himſelf, if a man
ſmite you on the face.
21 I ſpeak as concerning re-
proach, as though we had been
weak. Howbeit whereinſoever
any is bold, (I ſpeak fooliſhly,)
I am bold alſo.
22 Are they Hebrews? ſo *am*
I. Are they Iſraelites? ſo *am*
I. Are they the ſeed of Abra-
ham? ſo *am* I.
23 Are they miniſters of
Chriſt? (I ſpeak as a fool) I *am*
more; in labours more abun-
dant, in ſtripes above meaſure,
in priſons more frequent, in
deaths oft.
24 Of the Jews five times re-
ceived I forty *ſtripes* ſave one.
25 Thrice was I beaten with
rods, once was I ſtoned, thrice
I ſuffered ſhipwreck, a night
and a day I have been in the
deep;
26 *In* journeyings often, *in*
perils of waters, *in* perils of
robbers, *in* perils by *mine own*
countrymen, *in* perils by the
heathen, *in* perils in the city,
in perils in the wilderneſs, *in*
perils in the ſea, *in* perils
among falſe brethren;
27 In wearineſs and painful-
neſs, in watchings often, in
hunger and thirſt, in faſtings
often, in cold and nakedneſs.
28 Beſide thoſe things which
are without, that which com-
eth upon me daily, the care of
all the churches.
29 Who is weak, and I am
not weak? who is offended, and
I burn not?
30 If I muſt needs glory, I
will glory of the things which
concern mine infirmities.

31 The God and Father of our Lord Jefus Chrift, which is bleffed for evermore, knoweth that I lie not.

32 In Damafcus the governor under Aretas the king kept the city of the Damafcenes with a garrifon, defirous to apprehend me:

33 And through a window in a bafket was I let down by the wall, and efcaped his hands.

C H A P. XII.

Paul's wonderful revelations.

IT is not expedient for me doubtlefs to glory. I will come to vifions and revelations of the Lord.

2 I knew a man in Chrift about fourteen years ago, (whether in the body, I cannot tell; or whether out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;) fuch an one caught up to the third heaven.

3 And I knew fuch a man, (whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;)

4 How that he was caught up into paradife, and heard unfpeakable words, which it is not lawful for a man to utter.

5 Of fuch an one will I glory: yet of myfelf I will not glory, but in mine infirmities.

6 For though I would defire to glory, I fhall not be a fool; for I will fay the truth: but *now* I forbear, left any man fhould think of me above that which he feeth me *to be*, or *that* he heareth of me.

7 And left I fhould be exalted above meafure through the abundance of the revelations, there was given to me a thorn in the flefh, the meffenger of Satan to buffet me, left I fhould be exalted above meafure.

8 For this thing I befought the Lord thrice, that it might depart from me.

9 And he faid unto me, My grace is fufficient for thee: for my ftrength is made perfect in weaknefs. Moft gladly therefore will I rather glory in my infirmities, that the power of Chrift may reft upon me.

10 Therefore I take pleafure in infirmities, in reproaches, in neceffities, in perfecutions, in diftreffes for Chrift's fake: for when I am weak, then am I ftrong.

11 I am become a fool in glorying; ye have compelled me: for I ought to have been commended of you: for in nothing am I behind the very chiefeft apoftles, though I be nothing.

12 Truly the figns of an apoftle were wrought among you in all patience, in figns, and wonders, and mighty deeds.

13 For what is it wherein you were inferior to other churches, except *it be* that I myfelf was not burdenfome to you? forgive me this wrong.

14 Behold, the third time I am ready to come to you; and I will not be burdenfome to you: for I feek not your's, but you: for the children ought not to lay up for the parents, but the parents for the children.

15 And I will very gladly fpend and be fpent for you; though the more abundantly I love you, the lefs I be loved.

16 But be it fo, I did not burden you: neverthelefs, being crafty, I caught you with guile.

17 Did I make a gain of you by any of them whom I fent unto you?

18 I defired Titus, and with

him

him I ſent a brother. Did Titus make a gain of you? walked we not in the ſame ſpirit? *walked we* not in the ſame ſteps?

19 Again, think ye that we excuſe ourſelves unto you? we ſpeak before God in Chriſt: but *we do* all things, dearly beloved, for your edifying.

20 For I fear, leſt, when I come, I ſhall not find you ſuch as I would, and *that* I ſhall be found unto you ſuch as ye would not: leſt *there be* debates, envyings, wraths, ſtrifes, backbitings, whiſperings, ſwellings, tumults:

21 *And* leſt, when I come again, my God will humble me among you, and *that* I ſhall bewail many which have ſinned already, and have not repented of the uncleanneſs and fornication and laſciviouſneſs which they have committed.

CHAP. XIII.

Obſtinate ſinners threatened.

THIS *is* the third *time* I am coming to you. In the mouth of two or three witneſſes ſhall every word be eſtabliſhed.

2 I told you before, and foretel you, as if I were preſent, the ſecond time; and being abſent now I write to them which heretofore have ſinned, and to all other, that, if I come again, I will not ſpare:

3 Since ye ſeek a proof of Chriſt ſpeaking in me, which to you-ward is not weak, but is mighty in you.

4 For though he was crucified through weakneſs, yet he liveth by the power of God. For we alſo are weak in him, but we ſhall live with him by the power of God toward you.

5 Examine yourſelves, whether ye be in the faith; prove your ownſelves. Know ye not your ownſelves, how that Jeſus Chriſt is in you, except ye be reprobates?

6 But I truſt that ye ſhall know that we are not reprobates

7 Now I pray to God that ye do no evil; not that we ſhould appear approved, but that ye ſhould do that which is honeſt, though we be as reprobates.

8 For we can do nothing againſt the truth, but for the truth.

9 For we are glad, when we are weak, and ye are ſtrong: and this alſo we wiſh, *even* your perfection.

10 Therefore I write theſe things being abſent, leſt being preſent I ſhould uſe ſharpneſs, according to the power which the Lord hath given me to edification, and not to deſtruction.

11 Finally, brethren, farewel. Be perfect, be of good comfort, be of one mind, live in peace; and the God of love and peace ſhall be with you.

12 Greet one another with an holy kiſs.

13 All the ſaints ſalute you.

14 The grace of the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, and the love of God, and the communion of the Holy Ghoſt, *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ The ſecond *epiſtle* to the Corinthians was written from Philippi, *a city* of Macedonia, by Titus and Lucas.

The Epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle to the GALATIANS.

CHAP. I.

He marvels why they left the goſpel.

PAUL, an apoſtle, (not of
men, neither by man, but
by Jeſus Chriſt, and God
the Father, who raiſed him
from the dead;)
2 And all the brethren which
are with me, unto the churches
of Galatia:
3 Grace *be* to you, and peace
from God the Father, and *from*
our Lord Jeſus Chriſt,
4 Who gave himſelf for our
ſins, that he might deliver us
from this preſent evil world,
according to the will of God
and our Father:
5 To whom *be* glory for ever
and ever. Amen.
6 I marvel that ye are ſo ſoon
removed from him that called
you into the grace of Chriſt
unto another goſpel:
7 Which is not another; but
there be ſome that trouble you,
and would pervert the goſpel of
Chriſt.
8 But though we, or an an-
gel from heaven, preach any
other goſpel unto you than that
which we have preached unto
you, let him be accurſed.
9 As we ſaid before, ſo ſay I
now again, If any *man* preach
any other goſpel unto you than
that ye have received, let him
be accurſed.
10 For do I now perſuade
men, or God? or do I ſeek to
pleaſe men? for if I yet pleaſed
men, I ſhould not be the ſervant
of Chriſt.
11 But I certify you, bre-
thren, that the goſpel which
was preached of me is not after
man.
12 For I neither received it
of man, neither was I taught
it, but by the revelation of Je-
ſus Chriſt.
13 For ye have heard of my
converſation in time paſt, in
the Jews' religion, how that be-
yond meaſure I perſecuted the
church of God, and waſted it:
14 And profited in the Jews'
religion above many my equals
in mine own nation, being more
exceedingly zealous of the tra-
ditions of my fathers.
15 But when it pleaſed God,
who ſeparated me from my
mother's womb, and called *me*
by his grace,
16 To reveal his Son in me,
that I might preach him among
the heathen; immediately I
conferred not with fleſh and
blood:
17 Neither went I up to Je-
ruſalem to them which were
apoſtles before me; but I went
into Arabia, and returned
again unto Damaſcus.
18 Then after three years
I went up to Jeruſalem to ſee
Peter, and abode with him fif-
teen days.
19 But other of the apoſtles
ſaw I none, ſave James the
Lord's brother.
20 Now the things which I
write unto you, behold, before
God, I lie not.
21 Afterwards I came into
the regions of Syria and Cilicia;
22 And was unknown by face
unto the churches of Judea
which were in Chriſt:

23 But they had heard only, That he which perfecuted us in times paft now preacheth the faith which once he deftroyed.

24 And they glorified God in me.

CHAP. II.

Of juſtification by faith.

THEN fourteen years after I went up again to Jerufalem with Barnabas, and took Titus with *me* alfo.

2 And I went up by revelation, and communicated unto them that gofpel which I preach among the Gentiles, but privately to them which were of reputation, left by any means I fhould run, or had run, in vain.

3 But neither Titus, who was with me, being a Greek, was compelled to be circumcifed:

4 And that becaufe of falfe brethren unawares brought in, who came in privily to fpy out our liberty which we have in Chrift Jefus, that they might bring us into bondage:

5 To whom we gave place by fubjection, no, not for an hour: that the truth of the gofpel might continue with you.

6 But of thofe who feemed to be fomewhat, whatfoever they were, it maketh no matter to me: God accepteth no man's perfon: for they who feemed *to be fomewhat* in conference added nothing to me:

7 But contrariwife, when they faw that the gofpel of the uncircumcifion was committed unto me, as *the gofpel* of the circumcifion *was* unto Peter;

8 (For he that wrought effectually in Peter to the apoftlefhip of the circumcifion, the fame was mighty in me toward the Gentiles:)

9 And when James, Cephas, and John, who feemed to be pillars, perceived the grace that was given unto me, they gave to me and Barnabas the right hands of fellowfhip; that we *ſhould go* unto the heathen, and they unto the circumcifion.

10 Only *they would* that we fhould remember the poor; the fame which I alfo was forward to do.

11 But when Peter was come to Antioch, I withftood him to the face, becaufe he was to be blamed.

12 For before that certain came from James, he did eat with the Gentiles: but when they were come, he withdrew and feparated himfelf, fearing them which were of the circumcifion.

13 And the other Jews diffembled likewife with him; infomuch that Barnabas alfo was carried away with their diffimulation.

14 ¶ But when I faw that they walked not uprightly, according to the truth of the gofpel, I faid unto Peter before *them* all, If thou, being a Jew, liveft after the manner of Gentiles, and not as do the Jews, why compelleft thou the Gentiles to live as do the Jews?

15 We *who are* Jews by nature, and not finners of the Gentiles,

16 Knowing that a man is not juftified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jefus Chrift, even we have believed in Jefus Chrift, that we might be juftified by the faith of Chrift, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law fhall no flefh be juftified.

17 But if, while we feek to be juftified by Chrift, we ourfelves alfo are found finners, *is* therefore

fore Chriſt the miniſter of ſin? God forbid.

18 For if I build again the things which I deſtroyed, I make myſelf a tranſgreſſor.

19 For I through the law am dead to the law, that I might live unto God.

20 ¶ I am crucified with Chriſt: nevertheleſs I live; yet not I, but Chriſt liveth in me: and the life which I now live in the fleſh I live by the faith of the Son of God, who loved me, and gave himſelf for me.

21 I do not fruſtrate the grace of God: for if righteouſneſs *come* by the law, then Chriſt is dead in vain.

CHAP. III.

Believers are juſtified.

O FOOLISH Galatians, who hath bewitched you, that ye ſhould not obey the truth, before whoſe eyes Jeſus Chriſt hath been evidently ſet forth, crucified among you?

2 This only would I learn of you, Received ye the Spirit by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

3 Are ye ſo fooliſh? having begun in the Spirit, are ye now made perfect by the fleſh?

4 Have ye ſuffered ſo many things in vain? if *it be* yet in vain.

5 He therefore that miniſtereth to you the Spirit, and worketh miracles among you, *doeth he it* by the works of the law, or by the hearing of faith?

6 Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteouſneſs.

7 Know ye therefore that they which are of faith, the ſame are the children of Abraham.

8 And the ſcripture, foreſeeing that God would juſtify the heathen through faith preached before the goſpel unto Abraham, *ſaying*, In thee ſhall all nations be bleſſed.

9 ¶ So then they which be of faith are bleſſed with faithful Abraham.

10 For as many as are of the works of the law are under the curſe? for it is written, Curſed *is* every one that continueth not in all things which are written in the book of the law to do them.

11 But that no man is juſtified by the law in the ſight of God, *it is* evident: for, The juſt ſhall live by faith.

12 And the law is not of faith: but, The man that doeth them ſhall live in them.

13 Chriſt hath redeemed us from the curſe of the law, being made a curſe for us: for it is written, Curſed *is* every one that hangeth on a tree:

14 That the bleſſing of Abraham might come on the Gentiles through Jeſus Chriſt; that we might receive the promiſe of the Spirit through faith.

15 Brethren, I ſpeak after the manner of men; Though *it be* but a man's covenant, yet *if it be* confirmed, no man diſannulleth, or addeth thereto.

16 Now to Abraham and his ſeed were the promiſes made. He ſaith not, And to ſeeds, as of many; but as of one, And to thy ſeed, which is Chriſt.

17 And this I ſay, *that* the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Chriſt, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, cannot diſannul, that it ſhould make the promiſe of none effect.

18 For if the inheritance *be*

of

of the law, *it is* no more of
promise: but God gave *it* to
Abraham by promise.

19 Wherefore then *serveth*
the law? It was added because
of transgressions, till the seed
should come, to whom the
promise was made; *and it was*
ordained by angels in the hand
of a mediator.

20 Now a mediator is not
a mediator of one, but God is
one.

21 *Is* the law then against
the promises of God? God
forbid: for if there had been
a law given which could have
given life, verily righteous-
ness should have been by the
law.

22 But the scripture hath
concluded all under sin, that
the promise by faith of Jesus
Christ might be given to them
that believe.

23 But before faith came, we
were kept under the law, shut
up unto the faith which should
afterwards be revealed.

24 Wherefore the law was
our schoolmaster *to bring us*
unto Christ, that we might be
justified by faith.

25 But after that faith is
come, we are no longer under
a schoolmaster.

26 For ye are all the child-
ren of God, by faith in Christ
Jesus.

27 For as many of you as
have been baptized into Christ
have put on Christ.

28 There is neither Jew nor
Greek, there is neither bond
nor free, there is neither male
nor female: for ye are all one
in Christ Jesus.

29 And if ye *be* Christ's then
are ye Abraham's seed, and
heirs according to the promise.

CHAP. IV.

Christ freeth us from the law.

NOW I say, *That* the heir,
as long as he is a child,
differeth nothing from a servant,
though he be Lord of all;

2 But is under tutors and
governors, until the time ap-
pointed of the father.

3 Even so we, when we
were children, were in bond-
age under the elements of the
world:

4 But when the fulness of the
time was come, God sent forth
his Son, made of a woman, made
under the law,

5 To redeem them that were
under the law, that we might
receive the adoption of sons.

6 And because ye are sons,
God hath sent forth the Spirit
of his Son into your hearts,
crying, Abba, Father.

7 Wherefore thou art no
more a servant, but a son; and
if a son, then an heir of God
through Christ.

8 Howbeit then, when ye
knew not God, ye did service
unto them which by nature are
no gods.

9 But now, after that ye have
known God, or rather are
known of God, how turn ye
again to the weak and beggarly
elements, whereunto ye desire
again to be in bondage?

10 Ye observe days, and
months, and times, and years.

11 I am afraid of you, lest I
have bestowed upon you labour
in vain.

12 Brethren, I beseech you, be
as I *am*; for I *am* as ye *are*:
ye have not injured me at all.

13 Ye know how through
infirmity of the flesh I preach-
ed the gospel unto you at the
first.

14 And my temptation which was in my fleſh ye deſpiſed not, nor rejected; but received me as an angel of God, *even* as Chriſt Jeſus.

15 Where is then the bleſſedneſs ye ſpake of? for I bear you record, that, if *it had been* poſſible, ye would have plucked out your own eyes, and have given them to me.

16 Am I therefore become your enemy, becauſe I tell you the truth?

17 They zealouſly affect you, *but* not well; yea, they would exclude you, that ye might affect them.

18 But *it is* good to be zealouſly affected always in *a* good *thing*, and not only when I am preſent with you.

19 My little children, of whom I travail in birth again until Chriſt be formed in you,

20 I deſire to be preſent with you now, and to change my voice; for I ſtand in doubt of you.

21 Tell me, ye that deſire to be under the law, do ye not hear the law?

22 For it is written, that Abraham had two ſons, the one by a bondmaid, the other by a freewoman.

23 But he *who was* of the bondwoman was born after the fleſh; but he of the freewoman *was* by promiſe.

24 Which things are an allegory: for theſe are the two covenants; the one from the mount Sinai, which gendereth to bondage, which is Agar.

25 For this Agar is mount Sinai in Arabia, and anſwereth to Jeruſalem which now is, and is in bondage with her children.

26 But Jeruſalem which is above is free, which is the mother of us all.

27 For it is written, Rejoice, *thou* barren that beareſt not; break forth and cry, thou that travaileſt not: for the deſolate hath many more children than ſhe which hath an huſband.

28 Now we, brethren, as Iſaac was, are the children of promiſe.

29 But as then he that was born after the fleſh perſecuted him *that was born* after the Spirit, even ſo *it is* now.

30 Nevertheleſs what ſaith the ſcripture? Caſt out the bondwoman and her ſon: for the ſon of the bondwoman ſhall not be heir with the ſon of the freewoman.

31 So then, brethren, we are not children of the bondwoman, but of the free.

CHAP. V.

Of the liberty of the goſpel.

STAND faſt therefore in the liberty wherewith Chriſt hath made us free, and be not entangled again with the yoke of bondage.

2 Behold, I Paul ſay unto you, that if ye be circumciſed, Chriſt ſhall profit you nothing.

3 For I teſtify again to every man that is circumciſed, that he is a debtor to do the whole law.

4 Chriſt is become of no effect unto you, whoſoever of you are juſtified by the law; ye are fallen from grace.

5 For we through the Spirit wait for the hope of righteouſneſs by faith.

6 For in Jeſus Chriſt neither circumciſion availeth any thing, nor uncircumciſion; but faith which worketh by love.

7 Ye

7 Ye did run well; who did hinder you that ye ſhould not obey the truth?

8 This perſuaſion *cometh* not of him that calleth you.

9 A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump.

10 I have confidence in you through the Lord, that ye will be none otherwiſe minded: but he that troubleth you ſhall bear his judgement, whoſoever he be.

11 And I, brethren, if I yet preach circumciſion, why do I yet ſuffer perſecution? then is the offence of the croſs ceaſed.

12 I would they were even cut off which trouble you.

13 For, brethren, ye have been called unto liberty; only *uſe* not liberty for an occaſion to the fleſh, but by love ſerve one another.

14 For all the law is fulfilled in one word, *even* in this; Thou ſhalt love thy neighbour as thyſelf.

15 But if ye bite and devour one another, take heed that ye be not conſumed one of another.

16 *This* I ſay then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye ſhall not fulfil the luſt of the fleſh.

17 For the fleſh luſteth againſt the Spirit, and the Spirit againſt the fleſh: and theſe are contrary the one to the other: ſo that ye cannot do the things that ye would.

18 But if ye be led of the Spirit, ye are not under the law.

19 Now the works of the fleſh are manifeſt, which are *theſe;* Adultery, fornication, uncleanneſs, laſciviouſneſs,

20 Idolatry, witchcraft, hatred, variance, emulations, wrath, ſtrife, ſeditions, hereſies,

21 Envyings, murders, drunkenneſs, revellings, and ſuch like: of the which I tell you before, as I have alſo told *you* in time paſt, that they which do ſuch things ſhall not inherit the kingdom of God.

22 But the fruit of the Spirit is love, joy, peace, longſuffering, gentleneſs, goodneſs, faith,

23 Meekneſs, temperance: againſt ſuch there is no law.

24 And they that are Chriſt's have crucified the fleſh, with the affections and luſts.

25 If we live in the Spirit, let us alſo walk in the Spirit.

26 Let us not be deſirous of vain glory, provoking one another, envying one another.

CHAP. VI.

To deal mildly with offenders.

BRETHREN, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are ſpiritual, reſtore ſuch an one in the ſpirit of meekneſs; conſidering thyſelf, leſt thou alſo be tempted.

2 Bear ye one another's burdens, and ſo fulfil the law of Chriſt.

3 For if a man think himſelf to be ſomething, when he is nothing, he deceiveth himſelf.

4 But let every man prove his own work, and then ſhall he have rejoicing in himſelf alone, and not in another.

5 For every man ſhall bear his own burden.

6 Let him that is taught in the word, communicate unto him that teacheth in all good things.

7 Be not deceived; God is not mocked: for whatſoever a man ſoweth, that ſhall he alſo reap.

8 For he that ſoweth to his fleſh ſhall of the fleſh reap

cor-

corruption; but he that ſoweth
to the Spirit, ſhall of the Spirit
reap life everlaſting.
9 And let us not be weary
in well doing: for in due ſeaſon
we ſhall reap, if we faint not.
10 As we have therefore op-
portunity, let us do good unto
all *men*, eſpecially unto them
who are of the houſhold of faith.
11 Ye ſee how large a letter
I have written unto you with
mine own hand.
12 As many as deſire to make
a fair ſhew in the fleſh, they
conſtrain you to be circumciſ-
ed; only leſt they ſhould ſuf-
fer perſecution for the croſs of
Chriſt.
13 For neither they them-
ſelves who are circumciſed keep
the law; but deſire to have you
circumciſed, that they may glory
in your fleſh.
14 But God forbid that I
ſhould glory, ſave in the croſs
of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, by
whom the world is cruci-
fied unto me, and I unto the
world.
15 For in Chriſt Jeſus neither
circumciſion availeth any thing
nor uncircumciſion, but a new
creature.
16 And as many as walk ac-
cording to this rule, peace *be*
on them, and mercy, and upon
the Iſrael of God.
17 From henceforth let no
man trouble me: for I bear in
my body the marks of the Lord
Jeſus.
18 Brethren, the grace of
our Lord Jeſus Chriſt *be* with
your ſpirit. Amen.

¶ Unto the Galatians writ-
ten from Rome.

The Epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle to the EPHESIANS.

CHAP. I.

Of election and adoption.

PAUL, an apoſtle of Jeſus
Chriſt by the will of
God, to the ſaints which
are at Epheſus, and to the
faithful in Chriſt Jeſus:
2 Grace *be* to you, and peace
from God our Father, and *from*
the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
3 Bleſſed *be* the God and Fa-
ther of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt,
who hath bleſſed us with all
ſpiritual bleſſings in heavenly
places in Chriſt:
4 According as he hath cho-
ſen us in him before the foun-
dation of the world, that we
ſhould be holy, and without
blame before him in love:
5 Having predeſtinated us
unto the adoption of children
by Jeſus Chriſt to himſelf, ac-
cording to the good pleaſure of
his will,
6 To the praiſe of the glory of
his grace, wherein he hath made
us accepted in the beloved.
7 In whom we have redemp-
tion through his blood, the for-
giveneſs of ſins, according to
the riches of his grace;
8 Wherein he hath abound-
ed toward us in all wiſdom and
prudence;
9 Having made known unto
us the myſtery of his will accord-
ing to his good pleaſure which
he hath purpoſed in himſelf:
10 That in the diſpenſation
of

of the fulneſs of times he might gather together in one all things in Chriſt, both which are in heaven, and which are on earth; *even* in him:

11 In whom alſo we have obtained an inheritance, being predeſtinated according to the purpoſe of him who worketh all things after the counſel of his own will:

12 That we ſhould be to the praiſe of his glory, who firſt truſted in Chriſt.

13 In whom ye alſo *truſted*, after that ye heard the word of truth, the goſpel of your ſalvation: in whom alſo, after that ye believed, ye were ſealed with that holy Spirit of promiſe,

14 Which is the earneſt of our inheritance, until the redemption of the purchaſed poſſeſſion, unto the praiſe of his glory.

15 Wherefore I alſo, after I heard of your faith in the Lord Jeſus, and love unto all the ſaints,

16 Ceaſe not to give thanks for you, making mention of you in my prayers;

17 That the God of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, the Father of glory, may give unto you the Spirit of wiſdom and revelation in the knowledge of him:

18 The eyes of your underſtanding being enlightened; that ye may know what is the hope of his calling, and what the riches of the glory of his inheritance in the ſaints,

19 And what *is* the exceeding greatneſs of his power to us-ward who believe, according to the working of his mighty power,

20 Which he wrought in Chriſt, when he raiſed him from the dead, and ſet *him* at

his own right hand in the heavenly *places*,

21 Far above all principality, and power, and might, and dominion, and every name that is named, not only in this world, but alſo in that which is to come:

22 And hath put all *things* under his feet, and gave him *to be* the head over all *things* to the church.

23 Which is his body, the fulneſs of him that filleth all in all.

CHAP. II.

All created for good works.

AND you *hath he quickened* who were dead in treſpaſſes and ſins;

2 Wherein in time paſt ye walked according to the courſe of this world, according to the prince of the power of the air, the ſpirit that now worketh in the children of diſobedience:

3 Among whom alſo we all had our converſation in times paſt in the luſts of our fleſh, fulfilling the deſires of the fleſh, and of the mind; and were by nature the children of wrath, even as others.

4 But God, who is rich in mercy, for his great love wherewith he loved us,

5 Even when we were dead in ſins, hath quickened us together with Chriſt, (by grace ye are ſaved;)

6 And hath raiſed *us* up together, and made *us* ſit together in heavenly *places* in Chriſt Jeſus:

7 That in the ages to come he might ſhew the exceeding riches of his grace in *his* kindneſs toward us through Chriſt Jeſus.

8 For by grace are ye ſaved

through faith; and that not of
yourselves: *it is* the gift of
God:
9 Not of works, lest any man
should boast.
10 For we are his workmanship,
created in Christ Jesus
unto good works, which God
hath before ordained that we
should walk in them.
11 Wherefore remember, that
ye *being* in time past Gentiles
in the flesh, who are called Uncircumcision,
by that which is
called the Circumcision in the
flesh made by hands;
12 That at that time ye
were without Christ, being
aliens from the commonwealth
of Israel, and strangers from the
covenants of promise, having
no hope, and without God in
the world:
13 But now in Christ Jesus
ye who sometimes were far off
are made nigh by the blood of
Christ.
14 For he is our peace, who
hath made both one, and hath
broken down the middle wall
of partition *between us*;
15 Having abolished in his
flesh the enmity, *even* the law
of commandments *contained* in
ordinances; for to make in
himself of twain one new man,
so making peace;
16 And that he might reconcile
both unto God in one body
by the cross, having slain the
enmity thereby:
17 And came and preached
peace to you which were afar
off, and to them that were
nigh.
18 For through him we both
have access by one Spirit unto
the Father.
19 Now therefore ye are no
more strangers and foreigners,
but fellowcitizens with the
saints, and of the houshold of
God;
20 And are built upon the
foundation of the apostles and
prophets, Jesus Christ himself
being the chief corner *stone*;
21 In whom all the building
fitly framed together groweth
unto an holy temple in the
Lord:
22 In whom ye also are
builded together for an habitation
of God through the
Spirit.

CHAP. III.

Salvation for the Gentiles.

FOR this cause I Paul, the
prisoner of Jesus Christ for
you Gentiles,
2 (If ye have heard of the dispensation
of the grace of God
which is given me to you-ward:
3 How that by revelation he
made known unto me the mystery;
as I wrote afore in few
words;
4 Whereby, when ye read, ye
may understand my knowledge
in the mystery of Christ,
5 Which in other ages was
not made known unto the sons
of men, as it is now revealed
unto the holy apostles and prophets
by the Spirit;
6 That the Gentiles should
be fellowheirs, and of the same
body, and partakers of his promise
in Christ by the gospel:
7 Whereof I was made a
minister, according to the gift
of the grace of God given unto
me by the effectual working of
his power.
8 Unto me, who am less than
the least of all saints, is this
grace given, that I should preach
among the Gentiles the unsearchable
riches of Christ;

9 And to make all *men* see
what *is* the fellowship of the
mystery, which from the beginning
of the world hath been
hid in God, who created all
things by Jesus Christ:
10 To the intent that now
unto the principalities and
powers in heavenly *places* might
be known by the church the
manifold wisdom of God,
11 According to the eternal
purpose which he purposed in
Christ Jesus our Lord:
12 In whom we have boldness
and access with confidence
by the faith of him.
13 Wherefore I desire that ye
faint not at my tribulations for
you, which is your glory.
14 For this cause I bow my
knees unto the Father of our
Lord Jesus Christ,
15 Of whom the whole family
in heaven and earth is
named,
16 That he would grant you,
according to the riches of his
glory, to be strengthened with
might by his Spirit in the inner
man;
17 That Christ may dwell in
your hearts by faith; that ye,
being rooted and grounded in
love,
18 May be able to comprehend
with all saints what *is*
the breadth, and length, and
depth, and height;
19 And to know the love of
Christ, which passeth knowledge,
that ye might be filled
with all the fulness of God.
20 Now unto him that is
able to do exceeding abundantly
above all that we ask or
think, according to the power
that worketh in us,
21 Unto him *be* glory in the
church by Christ Jesus throughout
all ages, world without end.
Amen.

CHAP. IV.

Exhortations to unity.

I THEREFORE, the prisoner
of the Lord, beseech you
that ye walk worthy of the vocation
wherewith ye are called,
2 With all lowliness and
meekness, with longsuffering,
forbearing one another in love;
3 Endeavouring to keep the
unity of the Spirit in the bond
of peace.
4 *There is* one body, and one
Spirit, even as ye are called in
one hope of your calling;
5 One Lord, one faith, one
baptism,
6 One God and Father of all,
who *is* above all, and through
all, and in you all.
7 But unto every one of us is
given grace according to the
measure of the gift of Christ.
8 Wherefore he saith, When
he ascended up on high, he led
captivity captive, and gave gifts
unto men.
9 (Now that he ascended,
what is it but that he also descended
first into the lower parts
of the earth?
10 He that descended is the
same also that ascended up far
above all heavens, that he might
fill all things.)
11 And he gave some, apostles;
and some, prophets; and
some, evangelists; and some,
pastors and teachers;
12 For the perfecting of the
saints, for the work of the ministry,
for the edifying of the
body of Christ:
13 Till we all come in the
unity of the faith, and of the
knowledge of the Son of God,
unto a perfect man, unto the
measure of the stature of the
ful-

fulneſs of Chriſt:

14 That we *henceforth* be no more children, toſſed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine, by the ſleight of men, *and* cunning craftineſs, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;

15 But ſpeaking the truth in love, may grow up into him in all things, which is the head, *even* Chriſt:

16 From whom the whole body fitly joined together and compacted by that which every joint ſupplieth, according to the effectual working in the meaſure of every part, maketh increaſe of the body unto the edifying of itſelf in love.

17 This I ſay therefore, and teſtify in the Lord, that ye henceforth walk, not as other Gentiles walk, in the vanity of their mind,

18 Having the underſtanding darkened, being alienated from the life of God through the ignorance that is in them, becauſe of the blindneſs of their heart:

19 Who being paſt feeling have given themſelves over unto laſciviouſneſs, to work all uncleanneſs with greedineſs.

20 But ye have not ſo learned Chriſt;

21 If ſo be that ye have heard him, and have been taught by him, as the truth is in Jeſus:

22 That ye put off concerning the former converſation the old man, which is corrupt according to the deceitful luſts;

23 And be renewed in the ſpirit of your mind;

24 And that ye put on the new man, which after God is created in righteouſneſs and true holineſs.

25 Wherefore putting away lying, ſpeak every man truth with his neighbour: for we are members one of another.

26 Be ye angry, and ſin not: let not the ſun go down upon your wrath:

27 Neither give place to the devil.

28 Let him that ſtole ſteal no more: but rather let him labour, working with *his* hands the thing which is good, that he may have to give to him that needeth.

29 Let no corrupt communication proceed out of your mouth, but that which is good to the uſe of edifying, that it may miniſter grace unto the hearers.

30 And grieve not the Holy Spirit of God, whereby ye are ſealed unto the day of redemption.

31 Let all bitterneſs, and wrath, and anger, and clamour, and evil ſpeaking, be put away from you, with all malice:

32 And be ye kind one to another, tenderhearted, forgiving one another, even as God for Chriſt's ſake hath forgiven you.

C H A P. V.

Exhortations to holineſs.

BE ye therefore followers of God, as dear children;

2 And walk in love, as Chriſt alſo hath loved us, and hath given himſelf for us, an offering and a ſacrifice to God for a ſweet ſmelling ſavour.

3 But fornication, and all uncleanneſs, or covetouſneſs, let it not be once named among you, as becometh ſaints;

4 Neither filthineſs, nor fooliſh talking, nor jeſting, which are not convenient: but rather

giv-

giving of thanks.
5 For this ye know, that no
whoremonger, nor unclean per-
ſon, nor covetous man, who is
an idolater, hath any inherit-
ance in the kingdom of Chriſt
and of God.
6 Let no man deceive you
with vain words: for becauſe of
theſe things cometh the wrath
of God upon the children of
diſobedience.
7 Be not ye therefore par-
takers with them.
8 For ye were ſometimes
darkneſs, but now *are ye* light
in the Lord: walk as children
of light:
9 (For the fruit of the Spirit
is in all goodneſs and righte-
ouſneſs and truth;)
10 Proving what is accept-
able unto the Lord.
11 And have no fellowſhip
with the unfruitful works of
darkneſs, but rather reprove
them.
12 For it is a ſhame even to
ſpeak of thoſe things which are
done of them in ſecret.
13 But all things that are re-
proved, are made manifeſt by
the light: for whatſoever doth
make manifeſt is light.
14 Wherefore he ſaith, Awake
thou that ſleepeſt, and ariſe
from the dead, and Chriſt ſhall
give thee light.
15 See then that ye walk cir-
cumſpectly, not as fools, but as
wiſe,
16 Redeeming the time, be-
cauſe the days are evil.
17 Wherefore be ye not un-
wiſe, but underſtanding what
the will of the Lord *is.*
18 And be not drunk with
wine, wherein is exceſs; but be
filled with the Spirit;
19 Speaking to yourſelves in
pſalms and hymns and ſpi-
ritual ſongs, ſinging and mak-
ing melody in your heart to the
Lord;
20 Giving thanks always for
all things unto God and the
Father, in the name of our
Lord Jeſus Chriſt;
21 Submitting yourſelves one
to another in the fear of God.
22 Wives, ſubmit yourſelves
unto your own huſbands as un-
to the Lord.
23 For the huſband is the
head of the wife, even as Chriſt
is the head of the church:
and he is the ſaviour of the
body.
24 Therefore as the church
is ſubject unto Chriſt, ſo *let* the
wives *be* to their own huſbands
in every thing.
25 Huſbands, love your
wives, even as Chriſt alſo loved
the church, and gave himſelf
for it;
26 That he might ſanctify
and cleanſe it with the waſhing
of water by the word,
27 That he might preſent it
to himſelf a glorious church,
not having ſpot, or wrinkle, or
any ſuch thing; but that it
ſhould be holy and without
blemiſh.
28 So ought men to love
their wives as their own bo-
dies. He that loveth his wife
loveth himſelf.
29 For no man ever yet hat-
ed his own fleſh; but nouriſh-
eth and cheriſheth it, even as
the Lord the church:
30 For we are members of
his body, of his fleſh, and of his
bones.
31 For this cauſe ſhall a man
leave his father and mother, and
ſhall be joined unto his wife,
and they two ſhall be one fleſh.

32 This

32 This is a great myſtery:
but I ſpeak concerning Chriſt
and the church.
33 Nevertheleſs let every
one of you in particular ſo
love his wife even as himſelf;
and the wife *ſee* that ſhe reve-
rence *her* huſband.

CHAP. VI.

Several duties recommended.

CHILDREN, obey your
parents in the Lord: for
this is right.
2 Honour thy father and
mother; which is the firſt com-
mandment with promiſe;
3 That it may be well with
thee, and thou mayeſt live long
on the earth.
4 And, ye fathers, provoke
not your children to wrath:
but bring them up in the nur-
ture and admonition of the
Lord.
5 Servants, be obedient to
them that are *your* maſters ac-
cording to the fleſh, with fear
and trembling, in ſingleneſs of
your heart, as unto Chriſt;
6 Not with eyeſervice, as
menpleaſers; but as the ſer-
vants of Chriſt, doing the will
of God from the heart;
7 With good will doing ſer-
vice, as to the Lord, and not
to men:
8 Knowing that whatſoever
good thing any man doeth, the
ſame ſhall he receive of the Lord,
whether *he be* bond or free.
9 And, ye maſters, do the
ſame things unto them, for-
bearing threatening: knowing
that your Maſter alſo is in hea-
ven; neither is there reſpect of
perſons with him.
10 Finally, my brethren, be
ſtrong in the Lord, and in the
power of his might.
11 Put on the whole armour
of God, that ye may be able to
ſtand againſt the wiles of the
devil.
12 For we wreſtle not againſt
fleſh and blood, but againſt
principalities, againſt powers,
againſt the rulers of the dark-
neſs of this world, againſt
ſpiritual wickedneſs in high
places.
13 Wherefore take unto you
the whole armour of God, that
ye may be able to withſtand in
the evil day, and having done
all, to ſtand.
14 Stand therefore, having
your loins girt about with truth,
and having on the breaſtplate
of righteouſneſs;
15 And your feet ſhod with
the preparation of the goſpel
of peace;
16 Above all, taking the
ſhield of faith, wherewith ye
ſhall be able to quench all the
fiery darts of the wicked.
17 And take the helmet of
ſalvation, and the ſword of the
Spirit, which is the word of
God:
18 Praying always with all
prayer and ſupplication in the
Spirit, and watching thereunto
with all perſeverance and ſup-
plication for all ſaints;
19 And for me, that utter-
ance may be given unto me,
that I may open my mouth
boldly, to make known the my-
ſtery of the goſpel,
20 For which I am an am-
baſſador in bonds: that therein
I may ſpeak boldly, as I ought
to ſpeak.
21 But that ye alſo may
know my affairs, *and* how I
do, Tychicus, a beloved bro-
ther and faithful miniſter in
the Lord, ſhall make known to
you all things:

22 Whom

22 Whom I have ſent unto you for the ſame purpoſe, that ye might know our affairs, and *that* he might comfort your hearts.

23 Peace *be* to the brethren, and love with faith, from God the Father, and the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

24 Grace *be* with all them that love our Lord Jeſus Chriſt in ſincerity. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome unto the Epheſians by Tychicus.

The Epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle to the PHILIPPIANS.

CHAP. I.

His prayer to God for them.

PAUL and Timotheus, the ſervants of Jeſus Chriſt, to all the ſaints in Chriſt Jeſus which are at Philippi, with the biſhops and deacons:

2 Grace *be* unto you, and peace from God our Father, and *from* the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

3 I thank my God upon every remembrance of you,

4 Always in every prayer of mine for you all making requeſt with joy,

5 For your fellowſhip in the goſpel from the firſt day until now;

6 Being confident of this very thing, that he which hath begun a good work in you will perform *it* until the day of Jeſus Chriſt:

7 Even as it is meet for me to think this of you all, becauſe I have you in my heart; inaſmuch as both in my bonds, and in the defence and confirmation of the goſpel, ye all are partakers of my grace.

8 For God is my record, how greatly I long after you all in the bowels of Jeſus Chriſt.

9 And this I pray, that your love may abound yet more and more in knowledge and *in* all judgement;

10 That ye may approve things that are excellent: that ye may be ſincere and without offence till the day of Chriſt;

11 Being filled with the fruits of righteouſneſs, which are by Jeſus Chriſt, unto the glory and praiſe of God.

12 But I would ye ſhould underſtand, brethren, that the things *which happened* unto me have fallen out rather unto the furtherance of the goſpel;

13 So that my bonds in Chriſt are manifeſt in all the palace, and in all other *places*;

14 And many of the brethren in the Lord, waxing confident by my bonds, are much more bold to ſpeak the word without fear.

15 Some indeed preach Chriſt even of envy and ſtrife; and ſome alſo of good will:

16 The one preach Chriſt of contention, not ſincerely, ſuppoſing to add affliction to my bonds:

17 But the other of love, knowing that I am ſet for the defence of the goſpel.

18 What then? notwithſtanding, every way, whether in pretence, or in truth, Chriſt is preached; and I therein do rejoice, yea, and will rejoice.

19 For I know that this ſhall turn to my ſalvation through your

your prayer, and the ſupply of
the Spirit of Jeſus Chriſt,
20 According to my earneſt
expectation, and *my* hope, that
in nothing I ſhall be aſhamed,
but *that* with all boldneſs, as
always, *ſo* now alſo, Chriſt ſhall
be magnified in my body, whe-
ther *it be* by life, or by death.
21 For to me to live *is* Chriſt,
and to die *is* gain.
22 But if I live in the fleſh,
this *is* the fruit of my labour:
yet what I ſhall chooſe I wot
not.
23 For I am in a ſtrait be-
twixt two, having a deſire to
depart, and to be with Chriſt;
which is far better:
24 Nevertheleſs to abide in
the fleſh *is* more needful for
you.
25 And having this confi-
dence, I know that I ſhall
abide and continue with you all
for your furtherance and joy of
faith;
26 That your rejoicing may
be more abundant in Jeſus
Chriſt for me by my coming
to you again.
27 Only let your converſa-
tion be as it becometh the goſ-
pel of Chriſt: that whether I
come and ſee you, or elſe be
abſent, I may hear of your af-
fairs, that ye ſtand faſt in one
ſpirit, with one mind ſtriving
together for the faith of the
goſpel;
28 And in nothing terrified
by your adverſaries: which is
to them an evident token of
perdition, but to you of ſalva-
tion, and that of God.
29 For unto you it is given
in the behalf of Chriſt, not only
to believe on him, but alſo to
ſuffer for his ſake;
30 Having the ſame conflict
which ye ſaw in me, *and* now
hear *to be* in me.

CHAP. II.

Exhortation to humility.

IF *there be* therefore any con-
ſolation in Chriſt, if any
comfort of love, if any fellow-
ſhip of the Spirit, if any bowels
and mercies,
2 Fulfil ye my joy, that ye
be likeminded, having the
ſame love, *being* of one accord,
of one mind.
3 *Let* nothing *be done* through
ſtrife or vainglory; but in low-
lineſs of mind let each eſteem
other better than themſelves.
4 Look not every man on his
own things, but every man alſo
on the things of others.
5 Let this mind be in you,
which was alſo in Chriſt Jeſus:
6 Who, being in the form of
God, thought it not robbery
to be equal with God:
7 But made himſelf of no re-
putation, and took upon him
the form of a ſervant, and was
made in the likeneſs of men:
8 And being found in fa-
ſhion as a man, he humbled
himſelf, and became obedient
unto death, even the death of
the croſs.
9 Wherefore God alſo hath
highly exalted him, and given
him a name which is above
every name:
10 That at the name of Je-
ſus every knee ſhould bow, of
things in heaven, and *things* in
earth, and *things* under the earth;
11 And *that* every tongue
ſhould confeſs, that Jeſus Chriſt
is Lord, to the glory of God the
Father.
12 Wherefore, my beloved,
as ye have always obeyed, not
as in my preſence only, but now
much more in my abſence,
work

work out your own ſalvation with fear and trembling.

13 For it is God which worketh in you, both to will and to do of *his* good pleaſure.

14 Do all things without murmurings and diſputings:

15 That ye may be blameleſs and harmleſs, the ſons of God, without rebuke, in the midſt of a crooked and perverſe nation, among whom ye ſhine as lights in the world;

16 Holding forth the word of life; that I may rejoice in the day of Chriſt, that I have not run in vain, neither laboured in vain.

17 Yea, and if I be offered upon the ſacrifice and ſervice of your faith, I joy and rejoice with you all.

18 For the ſame cauſe alſo do ye joy, and rejoice with me.

19 But I truſt in the Lord Jeſus, to ſend Timotheus ſhortly unto you, that I alſo may be of good comfort when I know your ſtate.

20 For I have no man like-minded, who will naturally care for your ſtate.

21 For all ſeek their own, not the things which are Jeſus Chriſt's.

22 But ye know the proof of him, that, as a ſon with the father, he hath ſerved with me in the goſpel.

23 Him therefore I hope to ſend preſently, ſo ſoon as I ſhall ſee how it will go with me.

24 But I truſt in the Lord, that I alſo myſelf ſhall come ſhortly.

25 Yet I ſuppoſed it neceſſary to ſend to you Epaphroditus, my brother and companion in labour, and fellow-ſoldier, but your meſſenger, and he that miniſtered to my wants.

26 For he longed after you all, and was full of heavineſs, becauſe that ye had heard that he had been ſick.

27 For indeed he was ſick nigh unto death: but God had mercy on him; and not on him only, but on me alſo, leſt I ſhould have ſorrow upon ſorrow.

28 I ſent him therefore the more carefully, that, when ye ſee him again, ye may rejoice, and that I may be the leſs ſorrowful.

29 Receive him therefore in the Lord with all gladneſs; and hold ſuch in reputation:

30 Becauſe for the work of Chriſt he was nigh unto death, not regarding his life, to ſupply your lack of ſervice toward me.

CHAP. III.

To avoid falſe teachers.

FINALLY, my brethren, rejoice in the Lord. To write the ſame things to you, to me indeed *is* not grievous, but for you *it is* ſafe.

2 Beware of dogs, beware of evil workers, beware of the conciſion.

3 For we are the circumciſion, which worſhip God in the ſpirit, and rejoice in Chriſt Jeſus, and have no confidence in the fleſh.

4 Though I might alſo have confidence in the fleſh. If any other man thinketh that he hath whereof he might truſt in the fleſh, I more:

5 Circumciſed the eighth day, of the ſtock of Iſrael, *of* the tribe of Benjamin, an Hebrew of the Hebrews; as touching the law, a Phariſee;

6 Concerning zeal, perſecuting

ing the church; touching the
righteouſneſs which is in the
law, blameleſs.
7 But what things were gain
to me, thoſe I counted loſs for
Chriſt.
8 Yea, doubtleſs, and I count
all things *but* loſs for the ex-
cellency of the knowledge of
Chriſt Jeſus my Lord: for whom
I have ſuffered the loſs of all
things, and do count them *but*
dung, that I may win Chriſt,
9 And be found in him, not
having mine own righteouſneſs,
which is of the law, but that
which is through the faith of
Chriſt, the righteouſneſs which
is of God by faith:
10 That I may know him,
and the power of his reſurrec-
tion, and the fellowſhip of his
ſufferings, being made conform-
able unto his death;
11 If by any means I might
attain unto the reſurrection of
the dead.
12 Not as though I had al-
ready attained, either were al-
ready perfect: but I follow af-
ter, if that I may apprehend
that for which alſo I am appre-
hended of Chriſt Jeſus.
13 Brethren, I count not my-
ſelf to have apprehended: but
this one thing *I do*, forgetting
thoſe things which are behind,
and reaching forth unto thoſe
things which are before,
14 I preſs toward the mark,
for the prize of the high calling
of God in Chriſt Jeſus.
15 Let us therefore, as many
as be perfect, be thus minded:
and if in any thing ye be other-
wiſe minded, God ſhall reveal
even this unto you.
16 Nevertheleſs, whereto we
have already attained, let us
walk by the ſame rule, let us
mind the ſame thing.
17 Brethren, be followers to-
gether of me, and mark them
which walk ſo as ye have us
for an enſample.
18 (For many walk, of whom
I have told you often, and now
tell you even weeping, *that they
are* the enemies of the croſs of
Chriſt:
19 Whoſe end *is* deſtruction,
whoſe god *is their* belly, and
whoſe glory *is* in their ſhame,
who mind earthly things.)
20 For our converſation is in
heaven; from whence alſo we
look for the Saviour, the Lord
Jeſus Chriſt:
21 Who ſhall change our vile
body, that it may be faſhioned
like unto his glorious body, ac-
cording to the working where-
by he is able even to ſubdue all
things unto himſelf.

CHAP. IV.

General exhortations.

THEREFORE, my brethren
dearly beloved and longed
for, my joy and crown, ſo ſtand
faſt in the Lord, *my* dearly be-
loved.
2 I beſeech Euodias, and
beſeech Syntyche, that they be
of the ſame mind in the Lord.
3 And I intreat thee alſo, true
yokefellow, help thoſe women
which laboured with me in the
goſpel, with Clement alſo, and
with other my fellowlabourers,
whoſe names *are* in the book of
life.
4 Rejoice in the Lord alway:
and again I ſay, Rejoice.
5 Let your moderation be
known unto all men. The Lord
is at hand.
6 Be careful for nothing;
but in every thing by prayer
and ſupplication with thankſ-
giving let your requeſts be
made known unto God.

7 And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus.

8 Finally, brethren, whatsoever things are true, whatsoever things *are* honest, whatsoever things *are* just, whatsoever things *are* pure, whatsoever things *are* lovely, whatsoever things *are* of good report: if *there be* any virtue, and if *there be* any praise, think on these things.

9 Those things which ye have both learned and received, and heard, and seen in me, do: and the God of peace shall be with you.

10 But I rejoiced in the Lord greatly, that now at the last your care of me hath flourished again; wherein ye were also careful, but ye lacked opportunity.

11 Not that I speak in respect of want: for I have learned in whatsoever state I am, *therewith* to be content.

12 I know both how to be abased, and I know how to abound: every where, and in all things I am instructed, both to be full and to be hungry, both to abound and to suffer need.

13 I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me.

14 Notwithstanding, ye have well done, that ye did communicate with my affliction.

15 Now, ye Philippians, know also, that in the beginning of the gospel, when I departed from Macedonia, no church communicated with me, as concerning giving and recieving, but ye only.

16 For even in Thessalonica ye sent once and again unto my necessity.

17 Not because I desire a gift: but I desire fruit that may abound to your account.

18 But I have all, and abound: I am full, having received of Epaphroditus the things *which were sent* from you, an odour of a sweet smell, a sacrifice acceptable, wellpleasing to God.

19 But my God shall supply all your need, according to his riches in glory by Christ Jesus.

20 Now unto God and our Father *be* glory for ever and ever. Amen.

21 Salute every saint in Christ Jesus. The brethren which are with me greet you.

22 All the saints salute you, chiefly they that are of Cesar's houshold.

23 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to the Philippians from Rome by Epaphroditus

---

The Epistle of PAUL the Apostle to the COLOSSIANS.

CHAP. I.

He describeth the true Christ.

PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, and Timotheus *our* brother,

2 To the saints and faithful brethren in Christ, which are at Colosse: grace *be* unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

3 We give thanks to God and the Father of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, praying always for you,

4 Since we heard of your faith in Chriſt Jeſus, and of the love *which ye have* to all the ſaints,

5 For the hope which is laid up for you in heaven, whereof ye heard before in the word of the truth of the goſpel;

6 Which is come unto you, as *it is* in all the world; and bringeth forth fruit, as *it doth* alſo in you, ſince the day ye heard *of it*, and knew the grace of God in truth:

7 As ye alſo learned of Epaphras our dear fellowſervant, who is for you a faithful miniſter of Chriſt;

8 Who alſo declared unto us your love in the Spirit.

9 For this cauſe we alſo, ſince the day we heard *it*, do not ceaſe to pray for you, and to deſire that ye might be filled with the knowledge of his will, in all wiſdom and ſpiritual underſtanding;

10 That ye might walk worthy of the Lord unto all pleaſing, being fruitful in every good work, and increaſing in the knowledge of God;

11 Strengthened with all might according to his glorious power, unto all patience and longſuffering with joyfulneſs;

12 Giving thanks unto the Father which hath made us meet to be partakers of the inheritance of the ſaints in light:

13 Who hath delivered us from the power of darkneſs, and hath tranſlated *us* into the kingdom of his dear Son:

14 ¶ In whom we have redemption through his blood, *even* the forgiveneſs of ſins:

15 Who is the image of the inviſible God, the firſtborn of every creature:

16 For by him were all things created that are in heaven, and that are in earth, viſible and inviſible, whether *they be* thrones, or dominions, or principalities, or powers, all things were created by him, and for him:

17 And he is before all things, and by him all things conſiſt.

18 And he is the head of the body, the church: who is the beginning, the firſtborn from the dead; that in all *things* he might have the preeminence.

19 For it pleaſed *the Father* that in him ſhould all fulneſs dwell;

20 And, having made peace through the blood of his croſs, by him to reconcile all things unto himſelf; by him, *I ſay*, whether *they be* things in earth, or things in heaven.

21 And you that were ſometime alienated and enemies in *your* mind by wicked works, yet now hath he reconciled

22 In the body of his fleſh through death, to preſent you holy and unblameable and unreproveable in his ſight:

23 If ye continue in the faith grounded and ſettled, and *be* not moved away from the hope of the goſpel, which ye have heard, *and* which was preached to every creature which is under heaven: whereof I Paul am made a miniſter;

24 Who now rejoice in my ſufferings for you, and fill up that which is behind of the afflictions of Chriſt in my fleſh, for his body's ſake, which is the church:

25 Whereof I am made a mi-
niſter according to the diſpen-
ſation of God, which is given
to me for you, to fulfil the
word of God;
26 *Even* the myſtery which
hath been hid from ages and
from generations, but now is
made manifeſt to his ſaints:
27 To whom God would
make known what *is* the riches
of the glory of this myſtery
among the Gentiles; which is
Chriſt in you, the hope of glory:
28 Whom we preach, warn-
ing every man, and teaching
every man in all wiſdom; that
we may preſent every man per-
fect in Chriſt Jeſus:
29 Whereunto I alſo labour,
ſtriving according to his work-
ing, which worketh in me
mightily.

CHAP. II.

Exhortation to conſtancy.

FOR I would that ye knew
what great conflict I have
for you, and *for* them at Lao-
dicea, and *for* as many as have
not ſeen my face in the fleſh;
2 That their hearts might
be comforted, being knit to-
gether in love, and unto all
riches of the full aſſurance of
underſtanding, to the acknow-
ledgement of the myſtery of
God, and of the Father, and
of Chriſt;
3 In whom are hid all the
treaſures of wiſdom and know-
ledge.
4 And this I ſay, leſt any
man ſhould beguile you with
enticing words.
5 For though I be abſent in
the fleſh, yet am I with you in
the ſpirit, joying and beholding
your order, and the ſtedfaſtneſs
of your faith in Chriſt.
6 As ye have therefore receiv-
ed Chriſt Jeſus the Lord, *ſo*
walk ye in him:
7 Rooted and built up in him,
and ſtabliſhed in the faith, as
ye have been taught, abound-
ing therein with thankſgiving.
8 Beware leſt any man ſpoil
you through philoſophy and
vain deceit, after the tradition
of men, after the rudiments of
the world, and not after Chriſt.
9 For in him dwelleth all the
fulneſs of the Godhead bodily.
10 And ye are complete in
him, which is the head of all
principality and power:
11 In whom alſo ye are cir-
cumciſed with the circumciſion
made without hands, in putting
off the body of the ſins of the
fleſh by the circumciſion of
Chriſt:
12 Buried with him in bap-
tiſm, wherein alſo ye are riſen
with *him* through the faith of
the operation of God, who hath
raiſed him from the dead.
13 And you, being dead in
your ſins, and the uncircumciſi-
on of your fleſh, hath he quick-
ened together with him, having
forgiven you all treſpaſſes;
14 Blotting out the hand-
writing of ordinances that was
againſt us, which was contrary
to us, and took it out of the
way, nailing it to his croſs;
15 *And* having ſpoiled prin-
cipalities and powers, he made
a ſhew of them openly, tri-
umphing over them in it.
16 Let no man therefore
judge you in meat, or in drink,
or in reſpect of an holy day, or
of the new moon, or of the ſab-
bath *days*:
17 Which are a ſhadow of
things to come; but the body
is of Chriſt.
18 Let no man beguile you of

your reward, in a voluntary humility and worſhipping of angels, intruding into thoſe things which he hath not ſeen, vainly puffed up by his fleſhly mind,

19 And not holding the head, from which all the body, by joints and bands having nouriſhment miniſtered, and knit together, increaſeth with the increaſe of God.

20 Wherefore, if ye be dead with Chriſt from the rudiments of the world, why, as though living in the world, are ye ſubject to ordinances,

21 (Touch not, taſte not, handle not;

22 Which all are to periſh with the uſing) after the commandments and doctrines of men?

23 Which things have indeed a ſhew of wiſdom in will worſhip, and humility, and neglecting of the body, not in any honour to the ſatisfying of the fleſh.

C H A P. III.

Exhortation to ſundry duties.

IF ye then be riſen with Chriſt, ſeek thoſe things which are above, where Chriſt ſitteth on the right hand of God.

2 Set you affection on things above, not on things on the earth.

3 For ye are dead, and your life is hid with Chriſt in God.

4 When Chriſt, *who is* our life, ſhall appear, then ſhall ye alſo appear with him in glory.

5 Mortify therefore your members which are upon the earth; fornication, uncleanneſs, inordinate affection, evil concupiſcence, and covetouſneſs, which is idolatry:

6 For which things' ſake the wrath of God cometh on the children of diſobedience:

7 In the which ye alſo walked ſometime, when ye lived in them.

8 But now ye alſo put off all theſe; anger, wrath, malice, blaſphemy, filthy communication out of your mouth.

9 Lie not one to another, ſeeing that ye have put off the old man with his deeds;

10 And have put on the new *man* which is renewed in knowledge, after the image of him that created him:

11 Where there is neither Greek nor Jew, circumciſion nor uncircumciſion, Barbarian, Scythian, bond *nor* free: but Chriſt *is* all, and in all.

12 Put on therefore, as the elect of God, holy and beloved, bowels of mercies, kindneſs, humbleneſs of mind, meekneſs, longſuffering;

13 Forbearing one another, and forgiving one another, if any man have a quarrel againſt any: even as Chriſt forgave you, ſo alſo *do* ye.

14 And above all theſe things, *put on* charity, which is the bond of perfectneſs.

15 And let the peace of God rule in your hearts, to the which alſo ye are called in one body; and be ye thankful.

16 Let the word of Chriſt dwell in you richly in all wiſdom; teaching and admoniſhing one another in pſalms and hymns and ſpiritual ſongs, ſinging with grace in your hearts to the Lord.

17 And whatſoever ye do in word or deed, *do* all in the name of the Lord Jeſus, giving thanks to God and the Father by him.

18 Wives, ſubmit yourſelves un-

unto your own husbands, as it
is fit in the Lord.
19 Husbands, love *your* wives,
and be not bitter against them.
20 Children, obey *your* parents
in all things: for this is
well pleasing unto the Lord.
21 Fathers, provoke not your
children *to anger*, lest they be
discouraged.
22 Servants, obey in all things
your masters, according to the
flesh: not with eyeservice, as
menpleasers, but in singleness
of heart, fearing God:
23 And whatsoever ye do,
do *it* heartily, as to the Lord,
and not unto men;
24 Knowing that of the Lord
ye shall receive the reward of
the inheritance: for ye serve
the Lord Christ.
25 But he that doeth wrong
shall receive for the wrong
which he hath done: and there
is no respect of persons.

CHAP. IV.

Fervent prayer recommended.

MAsters, give unto *your* servants
that which is just
and equal: knowing that ye also
have a Master in heaven.
2 Continue in prayer, and
watch in the same with thanksgiving;
3 Withal, praying also for
us, that God would open unto
us a door of utterance, to speak
the mystery of Christ, for which
I am also in bonds:
4 That I may make it manifest
as I ought to speak.
5 Walk in wisdom toward
them that are without, redeeming
the time.
6 Let your speech *be* alway
with grace, seasoned with salt,
that ye may know how ye ought
to answer every man.
7 All my state shall Tychicus
declare unto you, *who is* a
beloved brother, and a faithful
minister, and fellowservant in
the Lord:
8 Whom I have sent unto
you for the same purpose, that
he might know your estate,
and comfort your hearts;
9 With Onesimus a faithful
and beloved brother, who is
one of you. They shall make
known unto you all things
which *are done* here.
10 Aristarchus my fellowprisoner
saluteth you, and Marcus,
sister's son to Barnabas (touching
whom ye received commandments:
if he come unto
you, receive him;)
11 And Jesus, which is called
Justus, who are of the circumcision.
These only *are my* fellowworkers
unto the kingdom
of God, which have been a
comfort unto me.
12 Epaphras, who is *one* of
you, a servant of Christ, saluteth
you, always labouring fervently
for you in prayers, that
ye may stand perfect, and complete
in all the will of God.
13 For I bear him record
that he hath a great zeal for you,
and them *that are* in Laodicea
and them in Hierapolis.
14 Luke the beloved physician,
and Demas, greet you.
15 Salute the brethren which
are in Laodicea, and Nymphas,
and the church which is in his
house.
16 And when this epistle is
read among you, cause that it
be read also in the church of the
Laodiceans, and that ye likewise
read the *epistle* from Laodicea.
17 And say to Archippus,
Take heed to the ministry
which thou hast received in the
Lord, that thou fulfil it.

18 The salutation by the hand of me Paul. Remember my bonds. Grace *be* with you. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to the Colossians by Tychicus and Onesimus.

The First Epistle of PAUL the Apostle to the THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

His joy of their conversion.

PAUL, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Thessalonians *which is* in God the Father, and *in* the Lord Jesus Christ: Grace *be* unto you, and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jesus Christ.

2 We give thanks to God always for you all, making mention of you in our prayers;

3 Remembering without ceasing your work of faith and labour of love, and patience of hope in our Lord Jesus Christ, in the sight of God and our Father;

4 Knowing, brethren beloved, your election of God.

5 For our gospel came not unto you in word only, but also in power, and in the Holy Ghost, and in much assurance: as ye know what manner of men we were among you for your sake.

6 And ye became followers of us, and of the Lord, having received the word, in much affliction, with joy of the Holy Ghost:

7 So that ye were ensamples to all that believe in Macedonia and Achaia.

8 For from you sounded out the word of the Lord, not only in Macedonia and Achaia, but also in every place your faith to God-ward is spread abroad, so that we need not to speak any thing.

9 For they themselves shew of us what manner of entering in we had unto you, and how ye turned to God from idols to serve the living and true God;

10 And to wait for his Son from heaven, whom he raised from the dead, *even* Jesus, which delivered us from the wrath to come.

CHAP. II.

How they received the gospel.

FOR yourselves, brethren, know our entrance in unto you, that it was not in vain:

2 But even after that we had suffered before, and were shamefully entreated, as ye know at Philippi, we were bold in our God to speak unto you the gospel of God, with much contention.

3 For our exhortation *was* not of deceit, nor of uncleanness, nor in guile:

4 But as we were allowed of God to be put in trust with the gospel, even so we speak, not as pleasing men, but God, which trieth our hearts.

5 For neither at any time used we flattering words, as ye know, nor a cloke of covetousness: God *is* witness:

6 Nor of men sought we glory, neither of you, nor *yet* of others, when we might have been burdensome, as the apostles of Christ.

7 But

7 But we were gentle among you, even as a nurse cherisheth her children:

8 So being affectionately desirous of you, we were willing to have imparted unto you, not the gospel of God only, but also our own souls, because ye were dear unto us.

9 For ye remember, brethren, our labour and travail. For labouring night and day, because we would not be chargeable unto any of you, we preached unto you the gospel of God.

10 Ye *are* witnesses, and God *also*, how holily and justly and unblameably we behaved ourselves among you that believe:

11 As ye know how we exhorted and comforted and charged every one of you, as a father *doth* his children,

12 That ye would walk worthy of God, who hath called you unto his kingdom and glory.

13 For this cause also thank we God without ceasing, because, when ye received the word of God which ye heard of us, ye received *it* not *as* the word of men, but as it is in truth, the word of God, which effectually worketh also in you that believe.

14 For ye, brethren, became followers of the churches of God, which in Judea are in Christ Jesus: for ye also have suffered like things of your own countrymen, even as they *have* of the Jews:

15 Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us; and they please not God, and are contrary to all men:

16 Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved, to fill up their sins alway. For the wrath is come upon them to the uttermost.

17 But we, brethren, being taken from you for a short time in presence, not in heart, endeavoured the more abundantly to see your face with great desire.

18 Wherefore we would have come unto you, even I Paul, once and again; but Satan hindered us.

19 For what *is* our hope, or joy, or crown of rejoicing? *are* not even ye in the presence of our Lord Jesus Christ at his coming?

20 For ye are our glory and joy.

CHAP. III.

His love in sending them Timothy.

WHerefore, when we could no longer forbear, we thought it good to be left at Athens alone;

2 And sent Timotheus, our brother, and minister of God, and our fellowlabourer in the gospel of Christ, to establish you, and to comfort you concerning your faith:

3 That no man should be moved by these afflictions: for yourselves know that we are appointed thereunto.

4 For verily when we were with you, we told you before that we should suffer tribulation; even as it came to pass and ye know.

5 For this cause, when I could no longer forbear, I sent to know your faith, lest by some means the tempter have tempted you, and our labour be in vain.

6 ¶ But now when Timotheus came

came from you unto us, and
brought us good tidings of your
faith and charity, and that ye
have good rememberance of us
always, deſiring greatly to ſee
us, as we alſo *to ſee* you:
7 Therefore, brethren, we
were comforted over you, in all
our affliction and diſtreſs, by
your faith:
8 For now we live, if ye ſtand
faſt in the Lord.
9 For what thanks can we
render to God again for you,
for all the joy wherewith we joy
for your ſakes before our God;
10 Night and day praying
exceedingly that we might ſee
your face, and might perfect
that which is lacking in your
faith?
11 Now God himſelf and our
Father, and our Lord Jeſus
Chriſt, direct our way unto you.
12 And the Lord make you
to increaſe and abound in love
one toward another, and to-
ward all *men* even as we *do*
toward you:
13 To the end he may ſta-
bliſh your hearts unblameable
in holineſs before God, even
our Father, at the coming of
our Lord Jeſus Chriſt with all
his ſaints.

CHAP. IV.

He exhorteth to go on in godlineſs.

FUrthermore then we be-
ſeech you, brethren, and
exhort *you* by the Lord Jeſus,
that as ye have received of us
how ye ought to walk and to
pleaſe God, *ſo* ye would abound
more and more.
2 For ye know what com-
mandments we gave you by
the Lord Jeſus.
3 For this is the will of God,
even your ſanctification, that ye
ſhould abſtain from fornication:
4 That every one of you
ſhould know how to poſſeſs his
veſſel in ſanctification and ho-
nour;
5 Not in the luſt of concupiſ-
cence, even as the Gentiles
which know not God:
6 That no *man* go beyond
and defraud his brother in *any*
matter: becauſe that the Lord
is the avenger of all ſuch, as we
alſo have forewarned you, and
teſtified.
7 For God hath not called
us unto uncleanneſs, but unto
holineſs.
8 He therefore that deſpiſeth,
deſpiſeth not man, but God,
who hath alſo given unto us his
Holy Spirit.
9 But as touching brotherly
love, ye need not that I write
unto you: for ye yourſelves are
taught of God to love one an-
other.
10 And indeed ye do it to-
ward all the brethren which
are in all Macedonia. But we
beſeech you, brethren, that ye
increaſe more and more;
11 And that ye ſtudy to be
quiet, and to do your own bu-
ſineſs, and to work with your
own hands, as we commanded
you;
12 That ye may walk honeſt-
ly toward them that are with-
out, and *that* ye may have lack
of nothing.
13 But I would not have you
to be ignorant, brethren, con-
cerning them which are aſleep,
that ye ſorrow not even as
others which have no hope.
14 For if we believe that
Jeſus died, and roſe again,
even ſo them alſo which ſleep
in Jeſus will God bring with
him.
15 For this we ſay unto yuo
by

by the word of the Lord, that we which are alive *and* remain unto the coming of the Lord ſhall not prevent them which are aſleep.

16 For the Lord himſelf ſhall deſcend from heaven with a ſhout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the trump of God: and the dead in Chriſt ſhall riſe firſt:

17 Then we which are alive, *and* remain, ſhall be caught up together with them in the clouds, to meet the Lord in the air; and ſo ſhall we ever be with the Lord.

18 Wherefore, comfort one another with theſe words.

CHAP. V.

Chriſt's ſecond judgement.

BUT of the times and the ſeaſons, brethren, ye have no need that I write unto you.

2 For yourſelves know perfectly, that the day of the Lord ſo cometh as a thief in the night.

3 For when they ſhall ſay, Peace and ſafety, then ſudden deſtruction cometh upon them, as travail upon a woman with child; and they ſhall not eſcape.

4 But ye, brethren, are not in darkneſs, that that day ſhould overtake you as a thief.

5 Ye are all the children of light, and the children of the day: we are not of the night nor of darkneſs.

6 Therefore let us not ſleep as *do* others; but let us watch and be ſober.

7 For they that ſleep, ſleep in the night; and they that be drunken, are drunken in the night.

8 But let us who are of the day, be ſober; putting on the breaſtplate of faith and love; and for an helmet, the hope of ſalvation.

9 For God hath not appointed us to wrath, but to obtain ſalvation, by our Lord Jeſus Chriſt,

10 Who died for us; that whether we wake or ſleep, we ſhould live together with him.

11 Wherefore comfort yourſelves together, and edify one another, even as alſo ye do.

12 And we beſeech you, brethren, to know them which labour among you, and are over you in the Lord, and admoniſh you;

13 And to eſteem them very highly in love for their works' ſake. *And* be at peace among yourſelves.

14 Now we exhort you, brethren, warn them that are unruly, comfort the feeble minded, ſupport the weak, be patient toward all *men*.

15 See that none render evil for evil unto any *man*; but ever follow that which is good, both among yourſelves, and to all *men*.

16 Rejoice evermore.

17 Pray without ceaſing.

18 In every thing give thanks: for this is the will of God in Chriſt Jeſus, concerning you.

19 Quench not the Spirit.

20 Deſpiſe not propheſyings.

21 Prove all things; hold faſt that which is good.

22 Abſtain from all appearance of evil.

23 And the very God of peace ſanctify you wholly; and *I pray God* your whole ſpirit and ſoul and body be preſerved blameleſs unto the coming of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

24 Faithful *is* he that calleth

you, who alſo will do *it.*

25 Brethren, pray for us.

26 Greet all the brethren with an holy kiſs.

27 I charge you by the Lord that this epiſtle be read unto all the holy brethren.

28 The grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt *be* with you. Amen.

¶ The firſt *epiſtle* unto the Theſſalonians was written from Athens.

The Second Epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle to the THESSALONIANS.

CHAP. I.

He comforts them againſt troubles.

PAUL, and Silvanus, and Timotheus, unto the church of the Theſſalonians, in God our Father, and the Lord Jeſus Chriſt:

2 Grace unto you and peace from God our Father, and the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

3 We are bound to thank God always for you, brethren, as it is meet, becauſe that your faith groweth exceedingly, and the charity of every one of you all toward each other aboundeth;

4 So that we ourſelves glory in you in the churches of God for your patience and faith in all your perſecutions and tribulations that ye endure:

5 *Which is* a manifeſt token of the righteous judgement of God, that ye may be counted worthy of the kingdom of God for which ye alſo ſuffer:

6 Seeing *it is* a righteous thing with God to recompenſe tribulation to them that trouble you;

7 And to you who are troubled, reſt with us, when the Lord Jeſus ſhall be revealed from heaven with his mighty angels,

8 In flaming fire, taking vengeance on them that know not God, and that obey not the goſpel of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt:

9 Who ſhall be puniſhed with everlaſting deſtruction from the preſence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power;

10 When he ſhall come to be glorified in his ſaints, and to be admired in all them that believe (becauſe our teſtimony among you was believed) in that day.

11 Wherefore alſo we pray always for you, that our God would count you worthy of *this* calling, and fulfil all the good pleaſure of *his* goodneſs, and the work of faith with power:

12 That the name of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt may be glorified in you, and ye in him, according to the grace of our God, and the Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

CHAP. II.

Of ſtedfaſtneſs in the truth.

NOW we beſeech you, brethren, by the coming of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, and *by* our gathering together unto him,

2 That ye be not ſoon ſhaken in mind, or be troubled, neither by ſpirit, nor by word, nor by letter, as from us, as that the day of Chriſt is at hand.

3 Let no man deceive you by any means, for *that day*

ſhall

ſhall not come, except there come a falling away firſt, and that man of ſin be revealed, the ſon of perdition;

4 Who oppoſeth and exalteth himſelf above all that is called God, or that is worſhipped: ſo that he as God ſitteth in the temple of God, ſhewing himſelf that he is God.

5 Remember ye not, that when I was yet with you I told you theſe things?

6 And now ye know what withholdeth, that he might be revealed in his time.

7 For the myſtery of iniquity doth already work: only he who now letteth *will let*, until he be taken out of the way.

8 And then ſhall that wicked be revealed, whom the Lord ſhall conſume with the ſpirit of his mouth, and ſhall deſtroy with the brightneſs of his coming:

9 *Even him*, whoſe coming is after the working of Satan, with all power, and ſigns, and lying wonders,

10 And with all deceivableneſs of unrighteouſneſs in them that periſh: becauſe they received not the love of the truth, that they might be ſaved.

11 And for this cauſe God ſhall ſend them ſtrong deluſion, that they ſhould believe a lie:

12 That they all might be damned who believed not the truth, but had pleaſure in unrighteouſneſs.

13 But we are bound to give thanks always to God for you, brethren beloved of the Lord, becauſe God hath from the beginning choſen you to ſalvation, through ſanctification of the Spirit, and belief of the truth:

14 Whereunto he called you by our goſpel, to the obtaining of the glory of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

15 Therefore, brethren, ſtand faſt, and hold the traditions which ye have been taught, whether by word, or our epiſtle.

16 Now our Lord Jeſus Chriſt himſelf, and God even our Father, which hath loved us, and hath given *us* everlaſting conſolation, and good hope through grace,

17 Comfort your hearts, and ſtabliſh you in every good word and work.

CHAP. III.

He ſolicits their prayers.

FInally, brethren, pray for us, that the word of the Lord may have *free* courſe, and be glorified, even as *it is* with you:

2 And that we may be delivered from unreaſonable and wicked men: for all *men* have not faith.

3 But the Lord is faithful, who ſhall ſtabliſh you, and keep *you* from evil.

4 And we have confidence in the Lord touching you, that ye both do, and will do the things which we command you.

5 And the Lord direct your hearts into the love of God, and into the patient waiting for Chriſt.

6 Now we command you, brethren, in the name of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, that ye withdraw yourſelves from every brother that walketh diſorderly, and not after the tradition which ye received of us.

7 For yourſelves know how ye ought to follow us. For we behaved not ourſelves diſorderly among you;

8 Neither did we eat any

man's bread for nought: but wrought with labour and travail night and day, that we might not be chargeable to any of you:

9 Not because we have not power, but to make ourselves an ensample unto you to follow us.

10 For even when we were with you, this we commanded you, that if any would not work, neither should he eat.

11 For we hear that there are some which walk among you disorderly, working not at all, but are busybodies.

12 Now them that are such we command, and exhort, by our Lord Jesus Christ, that with quietness they work and eat their own bread.

13 But ye, brethren, be not weary in well doing.

14 And if any man obey not our word by this epistle, note that man, and have no company with him, that he may be ashamed.

15 Yet count *him* not as an enemy, but admonish *him* as a brother.

16 Now the Lord of peace himself give you peace always by all means. The Lord *be* with you all.

17 The salutation of Paul with mine own hand, which is the token in every epistle; so I write.

18 The grace of our Lord Jesus Christ *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ The second *epistle* to the Thessalonians was written from Athens.

The First Epistle of PAUL the Apostle to TIMOTHY.

CHAP. I.

Timothy put in mind of his charge.

PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the commandment of God our Saviour, and Lord Jesus Christ, *which is* our hope;

2 Unto Timothy, *my* own son in the faith: Grace, mercy, *and* peace from God our Father, and Jesus Christ our Lord.

3 As I besought thee to abide still at Ephesus when I went into Macedonia, that thou mightest charge some that they teach no other doctrine,

4 Neither give heed to fables and endless genealogies, which minister questions rather than godly edifying, which is in faith; *so do.*

5 Now the end of the commandment is charity out of a pure heart, and *of* a good conscience, and *of* faith unfeigned:

6 From which some having swerved have turned aside unto vain jangling;

7 Desiring to be teachers of the law; understanding neither what they say, nor whereof they affirm.

8 But we know that the law *is* good, if a man use it lawfully;

9 Knowing this that the law is not made for a righteous man, but for the lawless and disobedient, for the ungodly and for sinners, for unholy and profane, for murderers of fathers and murderers of mothers, for manslayers,

10 For whoremongers, for
them that defile themſelves with
mankind, for menſtealers, for
liars, for perjured perſons, and
if there be any other thing that
is contrary to ſound doctrine;
11 According to the glorious
goſpel of the bleſſed God, which
was committed to my truſt.
12 And I thank Chriſt Jeſus
our Lord, who hath enabled me,
for that he counted me faithful,
putting me into the miniſtry;
13 Who was before a blaſ-
phemer, and a perſecutor, and
injurious. But I obtained mer-
cy, becauſe I did *it* ignorantly
in unbelief.
14 And the grace of our Lord
was exceeding abundant, with
faith and love which is in Chriſt
Jeſus.
15 This *is* a faithful ſaying,
and worthy of all acceptation,
that Chriſt Jeſus came into the
world to ſave ſinners; of whom
I am chief.
16 Howbeit for this cauſe I
obtained mercy, that in me
firſt Jeſus Chriſt might ſhew
forth all longſuffering, for a
pattern to them which ſhould
hereafter believe on him, to life
everlaſting.
17 Now unto the King eter-
nal, immortal, inviſible, the on-
ly wiſe God, *be* honour and glo-
ry for ever and ever. Amen.
18 This charge I commit un-
to thee, ſon Timothy, accord-
ing to the prophecies which
went before on thee, that thou
by them mighteſt war a good
warfare;
19 Holding faith and a good
conſcience; which ſome having
put away, concerning faith have
made ſhipwreck:
20 Of whom is Hymeneus and
Alexander; whom I have deli-
vered unto Satan, that they
may learn not to blaſpheme.

CHAP. II.

Prayers to be made for all men.

I Exhort therefore, that, firſt
of all, ſupplications, pray-
ers, interceſſions, *and* giving of
thanks, be made for all men;
2 For kings, and *for* all that
are in authority, that we may
lead a quiet and peaceable life
in all godlineſs and honeſty.
3 For this *is* good and ac-
ceptable in the ſight of God our
Saviour;
4 Who will have all men to
be ſaved, and to come unto the
knowledge of the truth.
5 For *there is* one God, and
one mediator between God and
men, the man Chriſt Jeſus;
6 Who gave himſelf a ran-
ſom for all, to be teſtified in
due time.
7 Whereunto I am ordained
a preacher, and an apoſtle, (I
ſpeak the truth in Chriſt, *and*
lie not,) a teacher of the Gen-
tiles in faith and verity.
8 I will therefore that men
pray every where, lifting up
holy hands, without wrath and
doubting.
9 In like manner alſo, that
women adorn themſelves in
modeſt apparel, with ſhame-
facedneſs and ſobriety; not
with broidered hair, or gold,
or pearls, or coſtly array;
10 But (which becometh wo-
men profeſſing godlineſs) with
good works.
11 Let the woman learn in
ſilence with all ſubjection.
12 But I ſuffer not a woman
to teach, nor to uſurp autho-
rity over the man, but to be in
ſilence.
13 For Adam was firſt form-
ed, then Eve.

14 And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression.

15 Notwithstanding, she shall be saved in childbearing, if they continue in faith and charity and holiness with sobriety.

CHAP. III.

How bishops, &c. should be qualified.

THIS *is* a true saying, If a man desire the office of a bishop, he desireth a good work.

2 A bishop then must be blameless, the husband of one wife, vigilant, sober, of good behaviour, given to hospitality, apt to teach;

3 Not given to wine, no striker, not greedy of filthy lucre; but patient, not a brawler, not covetous;

4 One that ruleth well his own house, having his children in subjection with all gravity;

5 (For if a man know not how to rule his own house, how shall he take care of the church of God?)

6 Not a novice, lest being lifted up with pride he fall into the condemnation of the devil.

7 Moreover he must have a good report of them which are without: lest he fall into reproach and the snare of the devil.

8 Likewise *must* the deacons *be* grave, not doubletongued, not given to much wine, not greedy of filthy lucre;

9 Holding the mystery of the faith in a pure conscience.

10 And let these also first be proved; then let them use the office of a deacon, being *found* blameless.

11 Even so *must their* wives *be* grave, not slanderers, sober, faithful in all things.

12 Let the deacons be the husbands of one wife, ruling their children and their own houses well.

13 For they that have used the office of a deacon well purchase to themselves a good degree, and great boldness in the faith which is in Christ Jesus.

14 These things write I unto thee, hoping to come unto thee shortly:

15 But if I tarry long, that thou mayest know how thou oughtest to behave thyself in the house of God, which is the church of the living God, the pillar and ground of the truth.

16 And without controversy great is the mystery of godliness; God was manifest in the flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed on in the world, received up into glory.

CHAP. IV.

Apostacy foretold.

NOW the Spirit speaketh expresly, that in the latter times some shall depart from the faith, giving heed to seducing spirits, and doctrines of devils;

2 Speaking lies in hypocrisy, having their conscience seared with a hot iron;

3 Forbidding to marry, *and commanding* to abstain from meats, which God hath created to be received with thanksgiving of them which believe and know the truth.

4 For every creature of God *is* good, and nothing to be refused, if it be received with thanksgiving:

5 For it is sanctified by the word of God and prayer.

6 If thou put the brethren in remembrance of these things, thou

thou shalt be a good minister of Jesus Christ, nourished up in the words of faith, and of good doctrine, whereunto thou hast attained.

7 But refuse profane and old wives' fables, and exercise thyself *rather* unto godliness.

8 For bodily exercise profiteth little; but godliness is profitable unto all things, having promise of the life that now is, and of that which is to come.

9 This *is* a faithful saying and worthy of all acceptation.

10 For therefore we both labour and suffer reproach, because we trust in the living God, who is the Saviour of all men, specially of those that believe.

11 These things command and teach.

12 Let no man despise thy youth; but be thou an example of the believers in word, in conversation, in charity, in spirit, in faith, in purity.

13 Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine.

14 Neglect not the gift that is in thee, which was given thee by prophecy, with the laying on of the hands of the presbytery.

15 Meditate upon these things; give thyself wholly to them, that thy profiting may appear to all.

16 Take heed unto thyself, and unto the doctrine; continue in them: for in doing this thou shalt both save thyself, and them that hear thee.

CHAP. V.

Of widows and elders.

REbuke not an elder, but entreat *him* as a father; *and* the younger men as brethren;

2 The elder women as mothers; the younger as sisters, with all purity.

3 Honour widows that are widows indeed.

4 But if any widow have children or nephews, let them learn first to shew piety at home, and to requite their parents: for that is good and acceptable before God.

5 Now she that is a widow indeed, and desolate, trusteth in God, and continueth in supplications and prayers night and day.

6 But she that liveth in pleasure, is dead while she liveth.

7 And these things give in charge, that they may be blameless.

8 But if any provide not for his own, and specially for those of his own house, he hath denied the faith, and is worse than an infidel.

9 Let not a widow be taken into the number under threescore years old, having been the wife of one man,

10 Well reported of for good works; if she have brought up children, if she have lodged strangers, if she have washed the saints' feet, if she have relieved the afflicted, if she have diligently followed every good work.

11 But the younger widows refuse: for when they have begun to wax wanton against Christ, they will marry;

12 Having damnation, because they have cast off their first faith.

13 And withal they learn *to be* idle, wandering about from house to house; and not only idle, but tattlers also, and busybodies, speaking things which they ought not.

14 I will therefore that the younger women marry, bear children, guide the house, give none

none occaſion to the adverſary
to ſpeak reproachfully.
15 For ſome are already turn-
ed aſide after Satan.
16 If any man or woman that
believeth have widows, let them
relieve them, and let not the
church be charged; that it may
relieve them that are widows
indeed.
17 Let the elders, that rule
well, be counted worthy of
double honour, eſpecially they
who labour in the word and
doctrine.
18 For the ſcripture ſaith,
Thou ſhalt not muzzle the ox
that treadeth out the corn.
And, The labourer *is* worthy
of his reward.
19 Againſt an elder receive
not an accuſation, but before
two or three witneſſes.
20 Them that ſin rebuke be-
fore all, that others alſo may fear.
21 I charge *thee* before God
and the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, and
the elect angels, that thou ob-
ſerve theſe things, without pre-
ferring one before another, do-
ing nothing by partiality.
22 Lay hands ſuddenly on no
man, neither be partaker of other
men's ſins: keep thyſelf pure.
23 Drink no longer water,
but uſe a little wine for thy
ſtomach's ſake and thine often
infirmities.
24 Some men's ſins are open
beforehand, going before to
judgement; and ſome *men* they
follow after.
25 Likewiſe alſo the good
works *of ſome* are manifeſt be-
forehand; and they that are
otherwiſe cannot be hid.

CHAP. VI.

The great gain of godlineſs.

LET as many ſervants as
are under the yoke, count
their own maſters worthy of all
honour, that the name of God
and *his* doctrine be not blaſ-
phemed.
2 And they that have believ-
ing maſters, let them not deſpiſe
them, becauſe they are brethren:
but rather do *them* ſervice, be-
cauſe they are faithful and be-
loved, partakers of the benefit.
Theſe things teach and exhort.
3 If any man teach other-
wiſe, and conſent not to whol-
ſome words, *even* the words of
our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, and to
the doctrine which is according
to godlineſs;
4 He is proud, knowing no-
thing, but doting about queſti-
ons and ſtrifes of words, where-
of cometh envy, ſtrife, railings,
evil ſurmiſings,
5 Perverſe diſputings of men
of corrupt minds, and deſtitute
of the truth, ſuppoſing that
gain is godlineſs: from ſuch
withdraw thyſelf.
6 But godlineſs with con-
tentment is great gain.
7 For we brought nothing
into *this* world, *and it is* certain
we can carry nothing out.
8 And having food and rai-
ment, let us be therewith con-
tent.
9 But they that will be rich,
fall into temptation, and a
ſnare, and *into* many fooliſh and
hurtful luſts, which drown men
in deſtruction and perdition.
10 For the love of money is
the root of all evil: which,
while ſome coveted after, they
have erred from the faith, and
pierced themſelves through
with many ſorrow[illegible]
11 But thou, O man [illegible] God,
flee theſe things; and [illegible]low
after righteouſneſs, g[illegible],
faith, love, patience, me[illegible]

I

12 Fight the good fight of faith, lay hold on eternal life, whereunto thou art also called, and hast professed a good profession before many witnesses.

13 I give thee charge in the sight of God, who quickeneth all things, and *fore* Christ Jesus, who before Pontius Pilate witnessed a good confession;

14 That thou keep *this* commandment without spot, unrebukeable, until the appearing of our Lord Jesus Christ:

15 Which in his times he shall shew, *who is* the blessed and only Potentate, the King of kings, and Lord of lords;

16 Who only hath immortality, dwelling in the light which no man can approach unto, whom no man hath seen, nor can see: to whom *be* honour and power everlasting. Amen.

17 Charge them that are rich in this world, that they be not high minded, nor trust in uncertain riches, but in the living God, who giveth us richly all things to enjoy;

That they do good, that they be rich in good works, re bute, willing to nicate,

Laying up in store for th es a good foundation the time to come, that hey may lay hold on eternal life.

20 O Timothy, keep that which is committed to thy trust, avoiding profane *and* vain babblings, and oppositions of science falsely so called:

21 Which some professing, have erred concerning the faith. Grace *be* with thee. Amen.

¶ The first to Timothy was written from Laodicea, which is the chiefest city of Phrygia Pacatiana.

The Second Epistle of PAUL the Apostle to TIMOTHY.

CHAP. I.

His love for Timothy.

PAUL, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, according to the promise of life which is in Christ Jesus,

2 To Timothy, *my* dearly beloved son: Grace, mercy, *and* peace, from God the Father and Christ Jesus our Lord.

3 I thank God, wh m I serve from *my* forefath s with pure conscience, th without ceasing I h remembrance of thee in my night and day;

4 y us ring to see thee, bei not, *y* thy tears, that I may be filled with joy;

5 When I call to remembrance the unfeigned faith that is in thee, which dwelt first in thy grandmother Lois, and thy mother Eunice; and I am persuaded that in thee also.

6 Wherefore I put thee in remembrance that thou stir up the gift of God, which is in thee by the putting on of my hands.

7 For God hath not given us the spirit of fear, but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.

8 Be not thou therefore ashamed of the testimony of our Lord,

abi

Lord, nor of me his priſ ner:
but be thou partaker of th af-
flictions of the goſpel, acc rd-
ing to the power of God;
9 Who hath ſaved us, and
called *us* with an holy c in
not according to [illegible] ks,
but according t his o [illegible]
poſe and grace, which [illegible] n
us in Chriſt Jeſus, be [illegible]
world began;
10 But is now mad manifeſ
by the appearing of our Saviour
Jeſus Chriſt, who hath aboliſh-
ed death, and hath brought
life and immortality to light
through the goſpel:
11 Whereunto I am appoint-
ed a preacher, and an apoſtle,
and a teacher of the Gentiles.
12 For the which cauſe I
alſo ſuffer theſe things: never-
theleſs I am not aſhamed: for
I know whom I have believed,
and am perſuaded that he is
able to keep that which I have
committed unto him againſt
that day.
13 Hold faſt the form of
ſound words, which thou haſt
heard of me, in faith and love
which is in Chriſt Jeſus.
14 That good thing which
was committed unto thee, keep
by the Holy Ghoſt which dwell-
eth in us.
15 This thou knoweſt, that
all they which are in Aſia be
turned away from me; of whom
are Phygellus and Hermogenes.
16 The Lord give mercy unto
the houſe of Oneſiphorus; for
he oft refreſhed me, and was
not aſhamed of my chain:
17 But when he was in Rome,
he ſought me out very diligent-
ly, and found *me*.
18 The Lord grant unto him
that he may find mercy of the
Lord in that day. And in how
many things he miniſtered un-
to me at Epheſus, thou know-
eſt very well.

CHAP. II.

Timothy exhorted to conſtancy.

THOU therefore, my ſon,
be ſtrong in the grace that
is in Chriſt Je s.
2 An the things that thou
haſt heard of me among many
witneſſes, the ſame commit
thou to faithful men, who ſhall
be able to teach others alſo.
3 Thou therefore endure
hardneſs, as a good ſoldier of
Jeſus Chriſt.
4 No man that warreth en-
tangleth himſelf with the af-
fairs of *this* life; that he may
pleaſe him who hath choſen
him to be a ſoldier.
5 And if a man alſo ſtrive for
maſteries, *yet* is he not crown-
ed, except he ſtrive lawfully.
6 The huſbandman that la-
boureth, muſt be firſt partaker
of the fruits.
7 Conſider what I ſay; and
the Lord give thee underſtand-
ing in all things.
8 Remember that Jeſus Chriſt
of the ſeed of David, was raiſed
from the dead according to my
goſpel:
9 Wherein I ſuffer trouble as
an evil doer, *even* unto bonds;
but the word of God is not
bound.
10 Therefore I endure all
things for the elect's ſakes, that
they may alſo obtain the ſalva-
tion which is in Chriſt Jeſus
w[illegible] eternal glory.
11 *It* [illegible] a faithful ſaying: For
if we be dea with *him*, we ſhall
alſo live with *h*[illegible]:
12 If we ſuffer, w ſhall alſo
reign with *him*: i deny
him, he alſo will den [illegible] he
13 If we believe [illegible] th

abideth faithful: he cannot de-
ny himſelf.
14 Of theſe things put *them*
in remembrance, charging *them*
before the Lord, that they ſtrive
not about words to no profit,
but to the ſubverting of the
hearers.
15 Study to ſhew thyſelf ap-
proved unto God, a workman
that needeth not to be aſhamed,
rightly dividing the word of
truth.
16 But ſhun profane *and* vain
babblings: for they will increaſe
unto more ungodlineſs.
17 And their word will eat
as doth a canker: of whom is
Hymeneus and Philetus;
18 Who concerning the truth
have erred, ſaying that the re-
ſurrection is paſt already; and
overthrow the faith of ſome.
19 Neverthelеſs the founda-
tion of God ſtandeth ſure, hav-
ing this ſeal, The Lord know-
eth them that are his. And,
Let every one that nameth the
name of Chriſt depart from
iniquity.
20 But in a great houſe there
are not only veſſels of gold, and
of ſilver, but alſo of wood, and
of earth; and ſome to honour,
and ſome to diſhonour.
21 If a man therefore purge
himſelf from theſe, he ſhall be
a veſſel unto honour, ſanctified
and meet for the maſter's uſe,
and prepared unto every good
work.
22 Flee alſo youthful luſts:
but follow righteouſneſs, faith,
charity, peace, with them that
call on the Lord out of a pure
heart.
23 But fooliſh and unlearned
queſtions avoid, knowing that
they do gender ſtrifes.
24 And the ſervant of the
Lord muſt not ſtrive; but be
gentle unto all *men*, apt to
teach, patient,
25 In meekneſs inſtructing
thoſe that oppoſe themſelves;
if God peradventure will give
them repentance to the ac-
knowledging of the truth;
26 And *that* they may reco-
ver themſelves out of the ſnare
of the devil, who are taken
captive by him at his will.

CHAP. III.

Enemies of the truth deſcribed.

THIS know alſo, that in the
laſt days perilous times
ſhall come.
2 For men ſhall be lovers of
their ownſelves, covetous, boaſt-
ers, proud, blaſphemers, diſo-
bedient to parents, unthankful,
unholy,
3 Without natural affection,
trucebreakers, falſe accuſers,
incontinent, fierce, deſpiſers of
thoſe that are good,
4 Traitors, heady, high-
minded, lovers of pleaſures
more than lovers of God;
5 Having a form of godlineſs,
but denying the power thereof:
from ſuch turn away.
6 For of this ſort are they
which creep into houſes, and
lead captive ſilly women, laden
with ſins, led away with divers
luſts,
7 Ever learning, and never
able to come to the knowledge
of the truth.
8 Now as Jannes and Jam-
bres withſtood Moſes, ſo do
theſe alſo reſiſt the truth; men
of corrupt minds, reprobate
concerning the faith.
9 But they ſhall proceed no
further: for their folly ſhall be
manifeſt unto all *men*, as their's
alſo was.
10 But thou haſt fully known
my

my doctrine, manner of [illegible]ife, purpoſe, faith, longſuffer[illegible]ng, charity, patience,

11 Perſecutions, afflictio[illegible]s, which came unto me at [illegible]ntioch, at Iconium, at Ly[illegible]; what perſecutions I [illegible]: but out of *them* all the [illegible] delivered me.

12 Yea, and all that [illegible] godly in Chriſt Jeſus [illegible] fer perſecution.

13 But evil men and ſeducers ſhall wax worſe and worſe, deceiving, and being deceived.

14 But continue thou in the things which thou haſt learned, and haſt been aſſured of, knowing of whom thou haſt learned *them*;

15 And that from a child thou haſt known the holy ſcriptures, which are able to make thee wiſe unto ſalvation, through faith which is in Chriſt Jeſus.

16 All ſcripture *is* given by inſpiration of God, and *is* profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for inſtruction in righteouſneſs:

17 That the man of God may be perfect, throughly furniſhed unto all good works.

CHAP. IV.

Paul's exhortation to Timothy.

I Charge *thee* therefore before God, and the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, who ſhall judge the quick and the dead at his appearing and his kingdom;

2 Preach the word; be inſtant in ſeaſon, out of ſeaſon; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longſuffering and doctrine.

3 For the time will come when they will not endure ſound doctrine; but after their own luſts ſhall they heap to themſelves teachers, having itching ears;

4 And they ſhall turn away *their* ears from the truth, and ſhall be turned unto fables.

5 But watch thou in all things, endure afflictions, do the work of an evangeliſt, make full proof of thy miniſtry.

6 For I am [illegible]w ready to be offered, a[illegible] the time of my departure is at hand.

7 I have fought a good fight, I have finiſhed *my* courſe, I have kept the faith:

8 Henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteouſneſs, which the Lord the righteous judge ſhall give me at that day: and not to me only, but unto all them alſo that love his appearing.

9 Do thy diligence to [illegible]ome ſhortly unto me:

10 For Demas hath forſaken me, having loved this preſent world, and is departed unto Theſſalonica; Creſcens to Galatia, Titus unto Dalmatia.

11 Only Luke is with me. Take Mark, and bring him with thee: for he is profitable to me for the miniſtry.

12 And Tychicus have I ſent to Epheſus.

13 The cloke that I left at Troas with Carpus, when thou comeſt, bring *with thee*, and the books, *but* eſpecially the parchments.

14 Alexander the copperſmith did me much evil: the Lord reward him according to his works:

1[illegible] [illegible]f whom be thou ware alſo; for [illegible] hath greatly withſtood our wo[illegible]s.

16 At my [illegible] anſwer no man ſtood with me, [illegible]ut all *men* forſook me: *I pra*[illegible] *God* that it may not be laid t[illegible] [illegible]eir charge.

17 Notwithſtanding the Lord
ſtood with me, and ſtrengthen-
ed me; that by me the preach-
ing might be fully known, and
that all the Gentiles might
hear: and I was delivered out
of the mouth of the lion.
18 And the Lord ſhall de-
liver me from every evil work,
and will preſerve *me* unto his
heavenly kingdom: to whom
be glory for ever and ever.
Amen.
19 Salute Priſca and Aquila,
and the houſhold of Oneſipho-
rus.
20 Eraſtus abode at Corinth:
but Trophimus have I left at
M[illegible]tum ſick.
21 Do thy diligence to come
be[illegible]re winter. Eubulus greet-
[illegible]hee, and Pudens, and Li-
nus and Claudia, and all the
b[illegible]
[illegible]he Lo[illegible]d Jeſus Chriſt *be*
[illegible]y ſpirit. Grace *be* with
yo[illegible]men.

¶ The ſecond *epiſtle* unto
Timotheus, ordained the
firſt biſhop of the church
of the Epheſians, was writ-
ten from Rome, when Paul
was brought before Nero
the ſecond time.

The Epiſtle of PAUL to TITUS.

CHAP. I.

How miniſters ſhould be qualified.

PAUL, a ſervant of God,
and an apoſtle of Jeſus
Chriſt, according to the
faith of God's elect, and the
acknowledging of the truth
which is after godlineſs;
2 In hope of eternal life,
which God, that cannot lie,
promiſed before the world
began;
3 But hath in due times ma-
nifeſted his word, through
preaching, which is committed
unto me, according to the com-
mandment of God our Saviour;
4 To Titus *mine* own ſon, af-
ter the common faith: Grace,
mercy, *and* peace from God
the Father, and the Lo[illegible] Jeſus
Chriſt our Saviour.
5 For this c[illegible]ſe left I thee
in Crete, tha[illegible]ou ſhouldeſt ſet
in ord[illegible] the things that are
wan[illegible]ing, and ordain elders in
ev[illegible]y city, as I had appointed
th[illegible]:
6 If any be blameleſs, the
huſband of one wife, having
faithful children, not accuſed
of riot, or unruly.
7 For a biſhop muſt be
blameleſs, as the ſteward of
God; not ſelfwilled, not ſoon
angry, not given to wine, no
ſtriker, not given to filthy lu-
cre;
8 But a lover of hopitality,
a lover of good men, ſober, juſt,
holy, temperate;
9 Holding faſt the faithful
word, as he hath been taught,
that he may be able, by ſound
doctrine, both to exhort and to
convince the gainſayers.
10 For there are many un-
ruly and vain talkers and de-
ceivers, ſpecially they of the
circumciſion:
11 Whoſe mouths muſt be
ſtopped, who ſubvert whole
houſes, teaching things which
they ought not for filthy lucre's
ſake.
12 One of themſelves, *even*
a pro-

a prophet of their own, ſaid,
The Cretians *are* alway liars,
evil beaſts, ſlow bellies.
13 This witneſs is true:
wherefore rebuke them ſharp-
ly, that they may be ſound in
the faith;
14 Not giving heed to [illegible]
fables, and commandments of
men, that turn from the truth.
15 Unto the pure all things
are pure: but unto them that
are defiled and unbelieving *is*
nothing pure; but even their
mind and conſcience is defiled.
16 They profeſs that they
know God; but in works they
deny *him*, being abominable,
and diſobedient, and unto eve-
ry good work reprobate.

CHAP. II.

Directions for life and doctrine.

BUT ſpeak thou the things
which become ſound doc-
trine:
2 That the aged men be ſo-
ber, grave, temperate, ſound in
faith, in charity, in patience.
3 The aged women likewiſe,
that *they be* in behaviour as be-
cometh holineſs, not falſe accu-
ſers, not given to much wine,
teachers of good things;
4 That they may teach the
young women to be ſober, to
love their huſbands, to love
their children,
5 *To be* diſcreet, chaſte, keep-
ers at home, good, obedient to
their own huſbands, that the
word of God be not blaſphem-
ed.
6 Young men likewiſe ex-
hort to be ſober minded.
7 In all things ſhewing thy-
ſelf a pattern of good works:
in doctrine *ſhewing* uncorrupt-
neſs, gravity, ſincerity,
8 Sound ſpeech that cannot
be condemned; that he that is
of the contrary part may be
aſhamed, having no evil thing
to ſay of you.
9 *Exhort* ſervants to be obe-
dient unto their own maſters,
and to pleaſe *them* well in all
things; not anſwering again;
10 Not purloining, but ſhew-
ing all good fidelity; that they
may adorn the doctrine of God
our Saviour in all things.
11 For the grace of God that
bringeth ſalvation hath appear-
ed to all men,
12 Teaching us that, deny-
ing ungodlineſs and worldly
luſts, we ſhould live ſoberly,
righteouſly, and godly in this
preſent world;
13 Looking for that bleſſed
hope, and the glorious appear-
ing of the great God and our
Saviour Jeſus Chriſt;
14 Who gave himſelf for us,
that he might redeem us from
all iniquity, and purify unto
himſelf a peculiar people, zeal-
ous of good works.
15 Theſe things ſpeak and
exhort, and rebuke with all
authority. Let no man deſpiſe
thee.

CHAP. III.

To reject obſtinate Hereticks.

PUT them in mind to be
ſubject to principalities and
powers, to obey magiſtrates, to
be ready to every good work,
2 To ſpeak evil of no man, to
be no brawlers, *but* gentle, ſhew-
ing all meekneſs unto all men.
3 For we ourſelves alſo were
ſometimes fooliſh, diſobedient,
deceived, ſerving divers luſts
and pleaſures, living in malice
and envy, hateful and hating
one another.
4 But after that the kindneſs
and love of God our Saviour
toward man appeared,

5 Not by works of righteouſ-
neſs which we have done, but
according to his mercy he ſaved
us, by the waſhing of regenera-
tion, and renewing of the Holy
Ghoſt;
6 Which he ſhed on us abun-
dantly through Jeſus Chriſt our
Saviour;
7 That being juſtified by his
grace, we ſhould be made heirs
according to the hope of eternal
life.
8 *This is* a faithful ſaying, and
theſe things I will that thou af-
firm conſtantly, that they which
have believed in God, might
be careful to maintain good
works. Theſe things are good
and profitable unto men.
9 But avoid fooliſh queſtions
and genealogies, and contenti-
ons, and ſtrivings about the
law: for they are unprofitable
and vain.
10 A man that is an heretick,
after the firſt and ſecond ad-
monition, reject;
11 Knowing that he that is
ſuch is ſubverted, and ſinneth,
being condemned of himſelf.
12 When I ſhall ſend Arte-
mas [illegible], or Tychicus,
be [illegible] to come unto me to
N[illegible]: for I have deter-
mi[illegible] re to winter.
[illegible] Bring Zenas the lawyer,
and Apollos on their journey
diligently, that nothing be
wanting unto them.
14 And let our's alſo learn to
maintain good works for ne-
ceſſary uſes, that they be not
unfruitful.
15 All that are with me ſa-
lute thee. Greet them that
love us in the faith. Grace *be*
with you all. Amen.

¶ It was written to Titus, or-
dained the firſt biſhop of the
church of the Cretians, from
Nicopolis of Macedonia.

The Epiſtle of PAUL to PHILEMON.

Philemon's faith commended.

PAUL, a priſoner of Jeſus
Chriſt, and Timothy *our*
brother, unto Philemon,
our dearly beloved and fellow-
labourer,
2 And to *our* beloved Ap-
phia, and Archippus our fel-
low ſoldier, and to the church
in thy houſe:
3 Grace to you, and peace
from God our Father, and the
Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
4 I thank my God, making
mention of thee always in my
prayers,
5 Hearing of thy love and
faith, which thou haſt toward
the L[illegible]d Jeſus, and toward all
ſain[illegible];
6 That the communication
of thy faith may become effec-
tual by the acknowledging of
every good thing which is in
you in Chriſt Jeſus.
7 For we have great joy and
conſolation in thy love, becauſe
the bowels of the ſaints are re-
freſhed by thee, brother.
8 Wherefore, though I might
be much bold in Chriſt to injoin
thee that which is convenient,
9 Yet for love's ſake I rather
beſeech *thee*, being ſuch an one
as Paul the aged, and now alſo
a priſoner of Jeſus Chriſt.
10 I beſeech thee for my ſon
Oneſimus, whom I have begot-
ten in my bonds:

11 Which in time paſt was to thee unprofitable, but now profitable to thee and to me:

12 Whom I have ſent again: thou therefore receive him, that is, mine own bowels:

13 Whom I would ha[illegible] retained with me, that in th[illegible] he might have miniſte[illegible] me in the bonds of the [illegible]:

14 But without thy [illegible] would I do nothing; that th[illegible] benefit ſhould not be as it were of neceſſity, but willingly.

15 For perhaps he therefore departed for a ſeaſon, that thou ſhouldeſt receive him for ever;

16 Not now as a ſervant, but above a ſervant, a brother beloved, ſpecially to me, but how much more unto thee, both in the fleſh, and in the Lord?

17 If thou count me therefore a partner, receive him as myſelf.

18 If he hath wronged thee, or oweth *thee* ought, put that on mine account;

19 I Paul have written *it* with mine own hand, I will repay *it:* albeit I do not ſay to thee how thou oweſt unto me even thine own ſelf beſides.

20 Yea, brother, let me have joy of thee in the Lord: refreſh my bowels in the Lord.

21 Having confidence in thy obedience, I wrote unto thee, knowing that thou wilt alſo do more than I ſay.

22 But withal prepare me alſo a lodging: for I truſt that through your prayers I ſhall be given unto you.

23 There ſalute thee Epaphras, my fellowpriſoner in Chriſt Jeſus;

24 Marcus, Ariſtarchus, Demas, Lucas, my fellowlabourers.

25 The grace of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt *be* with your ſpirit. Amen.

¶ Written from Rome to Philemon by Oneſimus a ſervant.

The Epiſtle of PAUL the Apoſtle to the HEBREWS.

CHAP. I.

Chriſt far above all angels.

GOD, who at ſundry times and in divers manners ſpake in time paſt unto the fathers by the prophets,

2 Hath in theſe laſt days ſpoken unto us by *his* Son, whom he hath appointed heir of all things, by whom alſo he made the world;

3 Who, being the brightneſs of *his* glory, and the expreſs image of his perſon, and upholding all things by the word of his power, when he had by himſelf purged our ſins, ſat down on the right hand of the Majeſty on high;

4 Being made ſo much better than the angels, as he hath by inheritance obtained a more excellent name than they.

5 For unto which of the angels ſai[illegible] he at any time, Thou art my So[illegible] this day have I begotten thee? And again, I will be to him a Fath[illegible] and he ſhall be to me a Son?

6 And again, when he [illegible]ringeth in the firſtbegotten in[illegible] the world,

world, he ſaith, And let all the
angels of God worſhip him.
7 And of the angels he ſaith,
Who maketh his angels ſpirits,
and his miniſters a flame of fire.
8 But unto the Son *he ſaith*,
Thy throne, O God, *is* for ever
and ever: a ſceptre of righte-
ouſneſs *is* the ſceptre of thy
kingdom.
9 Thou haſt loved righteouſ-
neſs, and hated iniquity: there-
fore God, *even* thy God, hath
anointed thee with the oil of
gladneſs above thy fellows.
10 And, Thou, Lord, in the
beginning haſt laid the foun-
dation of the earth: and the
heavens are the works of thine
hands.
11 They ſhall periſh; but thou
remaineſt: and they all ſhall
wax old as doth a garment;
12 And as a veſture ſhalt
thou fold them up, and they
ſhall be changed: but thou art
the ſame, and thy years ſhall
not fail.
13 But to which of the an-
gels ſaid he at any time, Sit on
my right hand, until I make
thine enemies thy footſtool?
14 Are they not all miniſter-
ing ſpirits, ſent forth to miniſter
for them who ſhall be heirs of
ſalvation?

CHAP. II.

Obedience due to Chriſt.

THerefore we ought to give the more earneſt heed to the things which we have heard, leſt at any time we ſhould let *them* ſlip.
2 For if the word ſpoken by
angels was ſtedfaſt, and every
tranſgreſſion and diſobedience
received a juſt recompence of
reward;
3 How ſhall we eſcape, if we
neglect ſo great ſalvation; which
at the firſt began to be ſpoken by
the Lord, and was confirmed
unto us by them that heard *him*;
4 God alſo bearing *them* wit-
neſs both with ſigns and won-
ders, and with divers miracles
and gifts of the Holy Ghoſt,
according to his own will?
5 For unto the angels hath he
not put in ſubjection the world
to come, whereof we ſpeak.
6 But one in a certain place
teſtified, ſaying, What is man,
that thou art mindful of him?
or the ſon of man, that thou
viſiteſt him?
7 Thou madeſt him a little
lower than the angels: thou
crownedſt him with glory and
honour, and didſt ſet him over
the works of thy hands:
8 Thou haſt put all things in
ſubjection under his feet. For
in that he put all in ſubjection
under him, he left nothing *that*
is not put under him. But
now we ſee not yet all things
put under him.
9 But we ſee Jeſus, who was
made a little lower than the
angels, for the ſuffering of
death, crowned with glory and
honour; that he by the grace
of God ſhould taſte death for
every man.
10 For it became him, for
whom *are* all things, and by
whom *are* all things, in bring-
ing many ſons unto glory, to
make the captain of their ſalva-
tion perfect through ſufferings.
11 For both he that ſancti-
fieth, and they who are ſanctifi-
ed, *are* all of one. For which
cauſe he is not aſhamed to call
them brethren,
12 Saying, I will declare thy
name unto my brethren, in
the midſt of the church will
I ſing praiſe unto thee.

13 And again, I will put my truſt in him. And again, Behold, I and the children which God hath given me.

14 Foraſmuch then as the children are partakers of fleſh and blood, he alſo himſelf likewiſe took part of the ſame; that through death he might deſtroy him that had the power of death, that is, the devil;

15 And deliver them who through fear of death were all their lifetime ſubject to bondage.

16 For verily he took not on *him the nature of* angels; but he took on *him* the ſeed of Abraham.

17 Wherefore in all things it behoved him to be made like unto *his* brethren; that he might be a merciful and faithful high prieſt, in things *pertaining* to God, to make reconciliation for the ſins of the people.

18 For in that he himſelf hath ſuffered, being tempted, he is able to ſuccour them that are tempted.

CHAP. III.

Christ worthier than Moſes.

WHerefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, conſider the apoſtle and high prieſt of our profeſſion, Chriſt Jeſus;

2 Who was faithful to him that appointed him, as alſo Moſes *was faithful* in all his houſe.

3 For this *man* was counted worthy of more glory than Moſes, inaſmuch as he who hath builded the houſe hath more honour than the houſe.

4 For every houſe is builded by ſome *man;* but he that built all things *is* God.

5 And Moſes verily *was* faithful in all his houſe as a ſervant, for a teſtimony of thoſe things which were to be ſpoken after;

6 But Chriſt as a Son over his own houſe: whoſe houſe are we, if we hold faſt the confidence and the rejoicing of the hope firm unto the end.

7 Wherefore (as the Holy Ghoſt ſaith, To day if ye will hear his voice,

8 Harden not your hearts, as in the provocation, in the day of temptation in the wilderneſs:

9 When your fathers tempted me, proved me, and ſaw my works forty years.

10 Wherefore I was grieved with that generation, and ſaid, They do alway err in *their* heart; and they have not known my ways.

11 So I ſware in my wrath, They ſhall not enter into my reſt.)

12 Take heed, brethren, leſt there be in any of you an evil heart of unbelief, in departing from the living God.

13 But exhort one another daily, while it is called To day; leſt any of you be hardened through the deceitfulneſs of ſin.

14 For we are made partakers of Chriſt, if we hold the beginning of our confidence ſtedfaſt unto the end;

15 While it is ſaid, To day if ye will hear his voice, harden not your hearts, as in the provocation.

16 For ſome, when they had heard, did provoke: howbeit not all that came out of Egypt by Moſes.

17 But with whom was he grieved forty years? *was it* not with them that had ſinned, whoſe carcaſes fell in the wilderneſs?

18 And

18 And to whom ſware he
that they ſhould not enter in-
to his reſt, but to them that
believed not?
19 So we ſee that they could
not enter in becauſe of unbe-
lief.

CHAP. IV.

Reſt attained by faith.

LET us therefore fear, leſt,
a promiſe being left *us* of
entering into his reſt, any of
you ſhould ſeem to come ſhort
of it.
2 For unto us was the goſ-
pel preached, as well as unto
them: but the word preached
did not pofit them, not being
mixed with faith in them that
heard *it*.
3 For we, which have believ-
ed, do enter into reſt, as he
ſaid, As I have ſworn in my
wrath, if they ſhall enter into
my reſt: although the works
were finiſhed from the foun-
dation of the world.
4 For he ſpake in a certain
place of the ſeventh *day* on this
wiſe, And God did reſt the ſe-
venth day from all his works.
5 And in this *place* again, If
they ſhall enter into my reſt.
6 Seeing therefore it remain-
eth that ſome muſt enter there-
in, and they to whom it was
firſt preached entered not in
becauſe of unbelief:
7 (Again, he limiteth a cer-
tain day, ſaying in David, To
day, after ſo long a time; as it
is ſaid, To day if ye will hear
his voice, harden not your
hearts.
8 For if Jeſus had given them
reſt, then would he not after-
ward have ſpoken of another
day.
9 There remaineth therefore
a reſt to the people of God.
10 For he that is entered in-
to his reſt, he alſo hath ceaſed
from his own works, as God
did from his.)
11 Let us labour therefore to
enter into that reſt, leſt any
man fall after the ſame exam-
ple of unbelief.
12 For the word of God *is*
quick, and powerful, and ſharp-
er than any twoedged ſword,
piercing even to the dividing
aſunder of ſoul and ſpirit, and
of the joints and marrow; and
is a diſcerner of the thoughts
and intents of the heart.
13 Neither is there any crea-
ture that is not manifeſt in his
ſight: but all things *are* naked
and opened unto the eyes of
him with whom we have to do.
14 Seeing then that we have
a great high prieſt, that is paſſ-
ed into the heavens, Jeſus the
Son of God, let us hold faſt *our*
profeſſion.
15 For we have not an high
prieſt which cannot be touched
with the feeling of our infir-
mities; but was in all points
tempted like as *we are*, *yet*
without ſin.
16 Let us therefore come
boldly unto the throne of
grace, that we may obtain
mercy, and find grace to help
in time of need.

CHAP. V.

Of Chriſt's prieſthood.

FOR every high prieſt taken
from among men is or-
dained for men in things *per-
taining* to God, that he may
offer both gifts and ſacrifices
for ſins:
2 Who can have compaſſion
on the ignorant, and on them
that are out of the way; for
that he himſelf alſo is com-
paſſed with infirmity.

3 And by reaſon hereof he ought, as for the people, ſo alſo for himſelf, to offer for ſins.

4 And no man taketh this honour unto himſelf, but he that is called of God, as *was* Aaron.

5 So alſo Chriſt glorified not himſelf to be made an high prieſt; but he that ſaid unto him, Thou art my Son, to day have I begotten thee.

6 As he ſaith alſo in another *place*, Thou *art* a prieſt for ever after the order of Melchiſedec.

7 Who in the days of his fleſh, when he had offered up prayers and ſupplications, with ſtrong crying and tears, unto him that was able to ſave him from death, and was heard in that he feared;

8 Though he were a Son, yet learned he obedience, by the things which he ſuffered;

9 And being made perfect, he became the author of eternal ſalvation unto all them that obey him;

10 Called of God an high prieſt after the order of Melchiſedec.

11 Of whom we have many things to ſay, and hard to be uttered, ſeeing ye are dull of hearing.

12 For when for the time ye ought to be teachers, ye have need that one teach you again which *be* the firſt principles of the oracles of God; and are become ſuch as have need of milk, and not of ſtrong meat.

13 For every one that uſeth milk *is* unſkilful in the word of righteouſneſs: for he is a babe.

14 But ſtrong meat belongeth to them that are full age, *even* thoſe, who by reaſon of uſe have their ſenſes exerciſed to diſcern both good and evil.

CHAP. VI.

The danger of apoſtacy.

THerefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Chriſt, let us go on unto perfection; not laying again the foundation of repentance from dead works, and of faith toward God,

2 Of the doctrine of baptiſms, and of laying on of hands, and of reſurrection of the dead, and of eternal judgement.

3 And this will we do, if God permit.

4 For *it is* impoſſible for thoſe who were once enlightened, and have taſted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghoſt,

5 And have taſted the good word of God, and the powers of the world to come,

6 If they ſhall fall away, to renew them again unto repentance; ſeeing they crucify to themſelves the Son of God afreſh, and put *him* to an open ſhame.

7 For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dreſſed, receiveth bleſſing from God:

8 But that which beareth thorns and briers *is* rejected, and *is* nigh unto curſing; whoſe end *is* to be burned.

9 But, beloved, we are perſuaded better things of you, and things that accompany ſalvation, though we thus ſpeak.

10 For God *is* not unrighteous, to forget your work and labour of love, which ye have ſhewed toward his name, in that ye have miniſtered to the ſaints, and do miniſter.

11 And we deſire that every one of you do ſhew the ſame

diligence, to the full aſſurance
of hope unto the end:
12 That ye be not ſlothful,
but followers of them who
through faith and patience in-
herit the promiſes.
13 For when God made pro-
miſe to Abraham, becauſe he
could ſwear by no greater, he
ſware by himſelf,
14 Saying, Surely bleſſing I
will bleſs thee, and multiply-
ing I will multiply thee.
15 And ſo, after he had pa-
tiently endured, he obtained
the promiſe.
16 For men verily ſwear by
the greater: and an oath for
confirmation *is* to them an end
of all ſtrife.
17 Wherein God, willing
more abundantly to ſhew unto
the heirs of promiſe the im-
mutability of his counſel, con-
firmed *it* by an oath:
18 That by two immutable
things, in which *it was* impoſ-
ſible for God to lie, we might
have a ſtrong conſolation, who
have fled for refuge to lay hold
upon the hope ſet before us:
19 Which *hope* we have as an
anchor of the ſoul, both ſure
and ſtedfaſt, and which enter-
eth into that within the veil;
20 Whither the forerunner
is for us entered, *even* Jeſus,
made an high prieſt for ever
after the order of Melchiſedec.

CHAP. VII.

Melchiſedec and Chriſt.

FOR this Melchiſedec, king
of Salem, prieſt of the
moſt high God, who met
Abraham returning from the
ſlaughter of the kings, and
bleſſed him;
2 To whom alſo Abraham
gave a tenth part of all; firſt
being by interpretation King of
righteouſneſs, and after that
alſo King of Salem, which is,
King of peace;
3 Without father, without
mother, without deſcent, hav-
ing neither beginning of days,
nor end of life; but made like
unto the Son of God, abideth
a prieſt continually.
4 Now conſider how great
this man *was*, unto whom even
the patriarch Abraham gave
the tenth of the ſpoils.
5 And verily they that are
of the ſons of Levi, who re-
ceive the office of the prieſt-
hood, have a commandment
to take tithes of the people
according to the law, that is,
of their brethren, though they
come out of the loins of Abra-
ham:
6 But he whoſe deſcent is not
counted from them, received
tithes of Abraham, and bleſſed
him that had the promiſes.
7 And without all contra-
diction, the leſs is bleſſed of
the better.
8 And here men that die re-
ceive tithes; but there he *re-
ceiveth them*, of whom it is
witneſſed that he liveth.
9 And as I may ſo ſay, Levi
alſo, who received tithes, pay-
ed tithes in Abraham.
10 For he was yet in the
loins of his father when Mel-
chiſedec met him.
11 If therefore perfection
were by the Levitical prieſthood
(for under it the people receiv-
ed the law) what further need
was there that another prieſt
ſhould riſe after the order of
Melchiſedec, and not be called
after the order of Aaron?
12 For the prieſthood being
changed, there is made of ne-
ceſſity a change alſo of the law.

13 For he of whom these things are spoken, pertaineth to another tribe, of which no man gave attendance at the altar.

14 For *it is* evident that our Lord sprang out of Juda; of which tribe Moses spake nothing concerning priesthood.

15 And it is yet far more evident: for that after the similitude of Melchisedec there ariseth another priest,

16 Who is made not after the law of a carnal commandment, but after the power of an endless life.

17 For he testifieth, Thou *art* a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec.

18 For there is verily a disannulling of the commandment going before for the weakness and unprofitableness thereof.

19 For the law made nothing perfect, but the bringing in of a better hope *did;* by the which we draw nigh unto God.

20 And inasmuch as not without an oath *he was made priest:*

21 (For those priests were made without an oath; but this with an oath, by him that said unto him, The Lord sware and will not repent, Thou *art* a priest for ever after the order of Melchisedec:)

22 By so much was Jesus made a surety of a better testament.

23 And they truly were many priests, because they were not suffered to continue by reason of death:

24 But this *man*, because he continueth ever, hath an unchangeable priesthood.

25 Wherefore he is able also to save them to the uttermost that come unto God by him, seeing he ever liveth to make intercession for them.

26 For such an high priest became us, *who is* holy, harmless, undefiled, separate from sinners, and made higher than the heavens;

27 Who needeth not daily, as those high priests, to offer up sacrifice, first for his own sins, and then for the people's; for this he did once, when he offered up himself.

28 For the law maketh men high priests which have infirmity; but the word of the oath which was since the law, *maketh* the Son, who is consecrated for evermore.

CHAP. VIII.

Aaron's priesthood lost in Christ.

NOW of the things which we have spoken *this is* the sum: We have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens;

2 A minister of the sanctuary, and of the true tabernacle which the Lord pitched, and not man.

3 For every high priest is ordained to offer gifts and sacrifices: wherefore *it is* of necessity that this man have somewhat also to offer.

4 For if he were on earth, he should not be a priest, seeing that there are priests that offer gifts according to the law:

5 Who serve unto the example and shadow of heavenly things, as Moses was admonished of God when he was about to make the tabernacle. For, See, saith he, *that* thou make all things according to the pattern shewed to thee in the mount.

6 But

6 But now hath he obtained a
more excellent miniſtry, by how
much alſo he is the mediator of
a better covenant, which was
eſtabliſhed upon better promiſes.
7 For if that firſt *covenant*
had been faultleſs, then ſhould
no place have been ſought for
the ſecond.
8 For finding fault with them
he ſaith, Behold, the days come,
ſaith the Lord, when I will make
a new covenant with the houſe
of Iſrael and with the houſe of
Judah:
9 Not according to the covenant
that I made with their
fathers in the day when I took
them by the hand to lead
them out of the land of Egypt;
becauſe they continued not in
my covenant, and I regarded
them not, ſaith the Lord.
10 For this *is* the covenant
that I will make with the houſe
of Iſrael after thoſe days, ſaith
the Lord; I will put my laws
into their mind, and write them
in their hearts: and I will be
to them a God, and they ſhall
be to me a people:
11 And they ſhall not teach
every man his neighbour, and
every man his brother, ſaying,
Know the Lord; for all ſhall
know me, from the leaſt to the
greateſt.
12 For I will be merciful to
their unrighteouſneſs, and their
ſins and their iniquities will I
remember no more.
13 In that he ſaith, A new
covenant, he hath made the
firſt old. Now that which decayeth
and waxeth old *is* ready
to vaniſh away.

CHAP. IX.

Blood of Chriſt above all ſacrifice.

THEN verily the firſt *covenant*
had alſo ordinances
of divine ſervice, and a worldly
ſanctuary.
2 For there was a tabernacle
made; the firſt, wherein *was*
the candleſtick, and the table,
and the ſhewbread; which is
called the ſanctuary.
3 And after the ſecond veil,
the tabernacle which is called
the Holieſt of all;
4 Which had the golden cenſer,
and the ark of the covenant
overlaid round about with gold,
wherein *was* the golden pot
that had manna, and Aaron's
rod that budded, and the tables
of the covenant;
5 And over it the cherubims
of glory ſhadowing the mercy
ſeat; of which we cannot now
ſpeak particularly.
6 Now when theſe things
were thus ordained, the prieſts
went always into the firſt tabernacle,
accompliſhing the ſervice
of God.
7 But into the ſecond *went*
the high prieſt alone once
every year, not without blood,
which he offered for himſelf,
and *for* the errors of the people:
8 The Holy Ghoſt this ſignifying,
that the way into the
holieſt of all was not yet made
manifeſt, while as the firſt tabernacle
was yet ſtanding:
9 Which *was* a figure for
the time then preſent, in which
were offered both gifts and ſacrifices,
that could not make
him that did the ſervice perfect,
as pertaining to the conſcience;
10 *Which ſtood* only in meats
and drinks, and divers waſhings,
and carnal ordinances,
impoſed *on them* until the time
of reformation.
11 But Chriſt being come
an

an high prieſt of good things to
come, by a greater and more
perfect tabernacle, not made
with hands, that is to ſay, not
of this building;
12 Neither by the blood of
goats and calves, but by his
own blood, he entered in once
into the holy place, having ob-
tained eternal redemption *for
us.*
13 For if the blood of bulls
and of goats, and the aſhes of
an heifer ſprinkling the un-
clean, ſanctifieth to the puri-
fying of the fleſh:
14 How much more ſhall the
blood of Chriſt, who through
the eternal Spirit offered him-
ſelf without ſpot to God, purge
your conſcience from dead
works to ſerve the living God?
15 And for this cauſe he
is the mediator of the new
teſtament, that by means of
death, for the redemption of
the tranſgreſſions *that were*
under the firſt teſtament, they
which are called might re-
ceive the promiſe of eternal
inheritance.
16 For where a teſtament *is,*
there muſt alſo of neceſſity be
the death of the teſtator.
17 For a teſtament *is* of force
after men are dead: otherwiſe
it is of no ſtrength at all while
the teſtator liveth.
18 Whereupon neither the
firſt *teſtament* was dedicated
without blood.
19 For when Moſes had ſpok-
en every precept to all the peo-
ple, according to the law, he
took the blood of calves and of
goats, with water and ſcarlet
wool, and hyſſop, and ſprink-
led both the book, and all the
people,
20 Saying, This *is* the blood
of the teſtament which God
hath injoined unto you.
21 Moreover he ſprinkled
likewiſe with blood both the
tabernacle and all the veſſels
of the miniſtry.
22 And almoſt all things are
by the law purged with blood:
and without ſhedding of blood
is no remiſſion.
23 *It was* therefore neceſſary
that the patterns of things in
the heavens ſhould be purified
with theſe; but the heavenly
things themſelves with better
ſacrifices than theſe.
24 For Chriſt is not entered
into the holy places made with
hands, *which are* the figures of
the true; but into heaven itſelf,
now to appear in the preſence
of God for us:
25 Nor yet that he ſhould
offer himſelf often, as the high
prieſt entereth into the holy
place every year with blood of
others;
26 For then muſt he often
have ſuffered ſince the founda-
tion of the world: but now
once in the end of the world
hath he appeared to put away
ſin by the ſacrifice of himſelf.
27 And as it is appointed un-
to men once to die, but after
this the judgement:
28 So Chriſt was once offer-
ed to bear the ſins of many;
and unto them that look for
him ſhall he appear the ſecond
time without ſin unto ſalva-
tion.

CHAP. X.

Chriſt's perfect ſacrifice.

FOR the law having a ſha-
dow of good things to
come, *and* not the very image
of the things, can never, with
thoſe ſacrifices which they of-
fered year by year continually,
make

make the comers thereunto perfect.

2 For then would they not have ceaſed to be offered; becauſe that the worſhippers once purged ſhould have had no more conſcience of ſins.

3 But in thoſe *ſacrifices there is* a rememberance again *made* of ſins every year.

4 For *it is* not poſſible that the blood of bulls and of goats ſhould take away ſins.

5 Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he ſaith, Sacrifice and offering thou wouldeſt not, but a body haſt thou prepared me:

6 In burnt offerings and *ſacrifices* for ſin thou haſt had no pleaſure:

7 Then ſaid I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me) to do thy will, O God.

8 Above when he ſaid, Sacrifice and offering and burnt offerings and *offering* for ſin thou wouldeſt not, neither hadſt pleaſure *therein;* which are offered by the law;

9 Then ſaid he, Lo, I come to do thy will, O God. He taketh away the firſt, that he may eſtabliſh the ſecond.

10 By the which will we are ſanctified, through the offering of the body of Jeſus Chriſt once *for all.*

11 And every prieſt ſtandeth daily miniſtering and offering oftentimes the ſame ſacrifices, which can never take away ſins:

12 But this man, after he had offered one ſacrifice for ſins, for ever ſat down on the right hand of God;

13 From henceforth expecting till his enemies be made his footſtool.

14 For by one offering he hath perfected for ever them that are ſanctified.

15 *Whereof* the Holy Ghoſt alſo is a witneſs to us: for after that he had ſaid before,

16 This *is* the covenant that I will make with them after thoſe days, ſaith the Lord; I will put my laws into their hearts, and in their minds will I write them;

17 And their ſins and iniquities will I remember no more.

18 Now where remiſſion of theſe *is, there is* no more offering for ſin.

19 Having therefore, brethren, boldneſs to enter into the holieſt by the blood of Jeſus,

20 By a new and living way which he hath conſecrated for us, through the veil, that is to ſay, his fleſh;

21 And *having* an high prieſt over the houſe of God;

22 Let us draw near with a true heart, in full aſſurance of faith, having our hearts ſprinkled from an evil conſcience, and our bodies waſhed with pure water.

23 Let us hold faſt the profeſſion of *our* faith without wavering; for he *is* faithful that promiſed:

24 And let us conſider one another to provoke unto love, and to good works:

25 Not forſaking the aſſembling of ourſelves together, as the manner of ſome *is;* but exhorting *one another:* and ſo much the more, as ye ſee the day approaching.

26 For if we ſin wilfully after that we have received the knowledge of the truth, there remaineth no more ſacrifice for ſins,

27 But a certain fearful looking for of judgement, and fiery indignation, which ſhall devour the adverſaries.

28 He that deſpiſed Moſes' law died without mercy, under two or three witneſſes:

29 Of how much ſorer puniſhment, ſuppoſe ye, ſhall he be thought worthy, who hath trodden under foot the Son of God, and hath counted the blood of the covenant, wherewith he was ſanctified, an unholy thing, and hath done deſpite unto the ſpirit of grace?

30 For we know him that hath ſaid, Vengeance *belongeth* unto me, I will recompenſe, ſaith the Lord. And again, The Lord ſhall judge his people.

31 *It is* a fearful thing to fall into the hands of the living God.

32 But call to remembrance the former days, in which, after ye were illuminated, ye endured a great fight of afflictions;

33 Partly, whilſt ye were made a gazingſtock, both by reproaches and afflictions; and partly, whilſt ye became companions of them that were ſo uſed.

34 For ye had compaſſion of me in my bonds, and took joyfully the ſpoiling of your goods, knowing in yourſelves that ye have in heaven a better and an enduring ſubſtance.

35 Caſt not away therefore your confidence, which hath great recompence of reward.

36 For ye have need of patience: that after ye have done the will of God, ye might receive the promiſe.

37 For yet a little while, and he that ſhall come will come, and will not tarry.

38 Now the juſt ſhall live by faith: but if *any man* draw back, my ſoul ſhall have no pleaſure in him.

39 But we are not of them who draw back unto perdition; but of them that believe, to the ſaving of the ſoul.

CHAP. XI.

Of faith and its fruits.

NOW faith is the ſubſtance of things hoped for, the evidence of things not ſeen.

2 For by it the elders obtained a good report.

3 Through faith we underſtand that the worlds were framed by the word of God, ſo that things which are ſeen were not made of things which do appear.

4 By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent ſacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witneſs that he was righteous, God teſtifying of his gifts: and by it he being dead, yet ſpeaketh.

5 By faith Enoch was tranſlated, that he ſhould not ſee death; and was not found, becauſe God had tranſlated him: for before his tranſlation he had this teſtimony, that he pleaſed God.

6 But without faith *it is* impoſſible to pleaſe *him*. For he that cometh to God muſt believe that he is, and *that* he is a rewarder of them that diligently ſeek him.

7 By faith Noah, being warned of God of things not ſeen as yet, moved with fear, prepared an ark to the ſaving of his houſe; by the which he condemned the world, and became heir of the righteouſneſs which is by faith.

8 By faith Abraham, when

he

he was called to go out into a place which he ſhould after receive for an inheritance, obeyed; and he went out, not knowing whither he went.

9 By faith he ſojourned in the land of promiſe as *in* a ſtrange country, dwelling in tabernacles with Iſaac and Jacob, the heirs with him of the ſame promiſe:

10 For he looked for a city which hath foundations, whoſe builder and maker *is* God.

11 Through faith alſo Sara herſelf received ſtrength to conceive ſeed, and was delivered of a child when ſhe was paſt age, becauſe ſhe judged him faithful who had promiſed.

12 Therefore ſprang there even of one, and him as good as dead, *ſo many* as the ſtars of the ſky in multitude, and as the ſand which is by the ſea ſhore innumerable.

13 Theſe all died in faith, not having received the promiſes, but having ſeen them afar off, and were perſuaded of *them*, and embraced *them*, and confeſſed that they were ſtrangers and pilgrims on the earth.

14 For they that ſay ſuch things declare plainly that they ſeek a country.

15 And truly if they had been mindful of that *country* from whence they came out, they might have had opportunity to have returned.

16 But now they deſire a better *country*, that is, an heavenly. Wherefore God is not aſhamed to be called their God, for he hath prepared for them a city.

17 By faith Abraham, when he was tried, offered up Iſaac: and he that had received the promiſes offered up his only begotten *ſon*,

18 Of whom it was ſaid, That in Iſaac ſhall thy ſeed be called:

19 Accounting that God *was* able to raiſe *him* up, even from the dead; from whence alſo he received him in a figure.

20 By faith Iſaac bleſſed Jacob and Eſau concerning things to come.

21 By faith Jacob, when he was a dying, bleſſed both the ſons of Joſeph; and worſhipped, *leaning* upon the top of his ſtaff.

22 By faith Joſeph, when he died, made mention of the departing of the children of Iſrael; and gave commandment concerning his bones.

23 By faith Moſes, when he was born, was hid three months of his parents, becauſe they ſaw *he was* a proper child: and they were not afraid of the king's commandment.

24 By faith Moſes, when he was come to years, refuſed to be called the ſon of Pharaoh's daughter;

25 Chooſing rather to ſuffer affliction with the people of God, than to enjoy the pleaſures of ſin for a ſeaſon;

26 Eſteeming the reproach of Chriſt greater riches than the treaſures in Egypt: for he had reſpect unto the recompence of the reward.

27 By faith he forſook Egypt, not fearing the wrath of the king: for he endured, as ſeeing him who is inviſible.

28 Through faith he kept the paſſover and the ſprinkling of blood, leſt he that deſtroyed the firſtborn ſhould touch them.

29 By faith they paſſed through the Red ſea as by dry *land*: which the Egyptians aſſaying to do were drowned.

30 By faith the walls of Jericho fell down, after they were compaſſed about ſeven days.

31 By faith the harlot Rahab periſhed not with them that believed not, when ſhe had received the ſpies with peace.

32 And what ſhall I more ſay? for the time would fail me to tell of Gedeon, and *of* Barak, and *of* Samſon, and *of* Jephthae; *of* David alſo, and Samuel, and *of* the prophets:

33 Who through faith ſubdued kingdoms, wrought righteouſneſs, obtained promiſes, ſtopped the mouths of lions,

34 Quenched the violence of fire, eſcaped the edge of the ſword, out of weakneſs were made ſtrong, waxed valiant in fight, turned to flight the armies of the aliens.

35 Women received their dead raiſed to life again: and others were tortured, not accepting deliverance, that they might obtain a better reſurrection:

36 And others had trial of *cruel* mockings and ſcourgings, yea, moreover of bonds and impriſonment:

37 They were ſtoned, they were ſawn aſunder, were tempted, were ſlain with the ſword: they wandered about in ſheepſkins and goatſkins; being deſtitute, afflicted, tormented;

38 (Of whom the world was not worthy) they wandered in deſerts, and *in* mountains, and *in* dens and caves of the earth.

39 And theſe all having obtained a good report, through faith received not the promiſe:

40 God having provided ſome better thing for us, that they without us ſhould not be made perfect.

CHAP. XII.

Exhortation to conſtancy.

WHerefore, ſeeing we alſo are compaſſed about with ſo great a cloud of witneſſes, let us lay aſide every weight, and the ſin which doth ſo eaſily beſet *us*, and let us run with patience the race that is ſet before us,

2 Looking unto Jeſus the author and finiſher of *our* faith; who, for the joy that was ſet before him, endured the croſs, deſpiſing the ſhame, and is ſet down at the right hand of the throne of God.

3 For conſider him that endured ſuch contradiction of ſinners againſt himſelf; leſt ye be wearied and faint in your minds.

4 Ye have not yet reſiſted unto blood, ſtriving againſt ſin.

5 And ye have forgotten the exhortation, which ſpeaketh unto you as unto children, My ſon, deſpiſe not thou the chaſtening of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him:

6 For whom the Lord loveth he chaſteneth, and ſcourgeth every ſon whom he receiveth.

7 If ye endure chaſtening, God dealeth with you as with ſons: for what ſon is he whom the father chaſteneth not?

8 But if ye be without chaſtiſement, whereof all are partakers, then are ye baſtards, and not ſons.

9 Furthermore we have had fathers of our fleſh, which corrected *us*, and we gave *them* reverence: ſhall we not much rather be in ſubjection unto the Father of ſpirits, and live?

10 For they verily for a few days chaſtened *us* after their own pleaſure; but he for *our* profit,

profit, that *we* might be par-
takers of his holiness.
11 Now no chastening for the
present seemeth to be joyous, but
grievous: nevertheless after-
ward it yieldeth the peaceable
fruit of righteousness unto them
which are exercised thereby.
12 Wherefore lift up the
hands which hang down, and
the feeble knees;
13 And make straight paths
for your feet, lest that which is
lame be turned out of the way;
but let it rather be healed.
14 Follow peace with all *men*,
and holiness, without which no
man shall see the Lord:
15 Looking diligently, lest
any man fail of the grace of
God; lest any root of bitter-
ness springing up trouble *you*,
and thereby many be defiled;
16 Lest there *be* any fornica-
tor, or profane person, as Esau,
who for one morsel of meat
sold his birthright.
17 For ye know how that af-
terward, when he would have
inherited the blessing, he was
rejected: for he found no place
of repentance, though he sought
it carefully with tears.
18 For ye are not come unto
the mount that might be touch-
ed, and that burned with fire,
nor unto blackness, and dark-
ness, and tempest,
19 And the sound of a trum-
pet, and the voice of words;
which *voice* they that heard,
intreated that the word should
not be spoken to them any
more:
20 (For they could not endure
that which was commanded,
And if so much as a beast touch
the mountain, it shall be stoned,
or thrust through with a dart:
21 And so terrible was the
sight, *that* Moses said, I ex-
ceedingly fear and quake:)
22 But ye are come unto
mount Sion, and unto the city
of the living God, the heavenly
Jerusalem, and to an innume-
rable company of angels,
23 To the general assembly
and church of the firstborn,
which are written in heaven,
and to God the Judge of all,
and to the spirits of just men
made perfect,
24 And to Jesus the media-
tor of the new covenant, and
to the blood of sprinkling, that
speaketh better things than
that of Abel.
25 See that ye refuse not him
that speaketh. For if they escaped
not, who refused him that spake
on earth, much more *shall not*
we *escape*, if we turn away from
him that *speaketh* from heaven:
26 Whose voice then shook
the earth: but now he hath
promised, saying, Yet once
more I shake not the earth on-
ly, but also heaven.
27 And this *word*, Yet once
more, signifieth the removing
of those things that are shaken,
as of things that are made, that
those things which cannot be
shaken may remain.
28 Wherefore, we receiving a
kingdom which cannot be mov-
ed, let us have grace, whereby
we may serve God acceptably,
with reverence and godly fear:
29 For our God *is* a consum-
ing fire.

CHAP. XIII.

Divers godly admonitions.

LET brotherly love continue.
2 Be not forgetful to en-
tertain strangers: for thereby
some have entertained angels
unawares.
3 Remember them that are
in

in bonds, as bound with them: *and* them which ſuffer adverſity, as being yourſelves alſo in the body.

4 Marriage *is* honourable in all, and the bed undefiled: but whoremongers and adulterers God will judge.

5 *Let your* converſation *be* without covetouſneſs; *and be* content with ſuch things as ye have. For he hath ſaid, I will never leave thee, nor forſake thee.

6 So that we may boldly ſay, The Lord *is* my helper, and I will not fear what man ſhall do unto me.

7 Remember them which have the rule over you, who have ſpoken unto you the word of God: whoſe faith follow, conſidering the end of *their* converſation:

8 Jeſus Chriſt, the ſame yeſterday, and to day, and for ever.

9 Be not carried about with divers and ſtrange doctrines: for *it is* a good thing that the heart be eſtabliſhed with grace, not with meats, which have not profited them that have been occupied therein.

10 We have an altar, whereof they have no right to eat which ſerve the tabernacle.

11 For the bodies of thoſe beaſts, whoſe blood is brought into the ſanctuary by the high prieſt for ſin, are burned without the camp.

12 Wherefore Jeſus alſo, that he might ſanctify the people with his own blood, ſuffered without the gate.

13 Let us go forth therefore unto him without the camp, bearing his reproach.

14 For here have we no continuing city, but we ſeek one to come.

15 By him therefore let us offer the ſacrifice of praiſe to God continually, that is, the fruit of *our* lips, giving thanks to his name.

16 But to do good, and to communicate, forget not: for with ſuch ſacrifices God is well pleaſed.

17 Obey them that have the rule over you, and ſubmit yourſelves: for they watch for your ſouls, as they that muſt give account: that they may do it with joy, and not with grief: for that *is* unprofitable for you.

18 Pray for us: for we truſt we have a good conſcience, in all things willing to live honeſtly.

19 But I beſeech *you* the rather to do this, that I may be reſtored to you the ſooner.

20 Now the God of peace, that brought again from the dead our Lord Jeſus, that great Shepherd of the ſheep, through the blood of the everlaſting covenant,

21 Make you perfect in every good work to do his will, working in you that which is wellpleaſing in his ſight, through Jeſus Chriſt: to whom *be* glory for ever and ever. Amen.

22 And I beſeech you, brethren, ſuffer the word of exhortation: for I have written a letter unto you in few words.

23 Know ye that *our* brother Timothy is ſet at liberty; with whom, if he come ſhortly, I will ſee you.

24 Salute all them that have the rule over you, and all the ſaints. They of Italy ſalute you.

25 Grace *be* with you all. Amen.

¶ Written to the Hebrews from Italy by Timothy.

The General Epiſtle of JAMES.

CHAP. I.

Wiſdom to be ſought of God.

JAMES, a ſervant of God,
and of the Lord Jeſus
Chriſt, to the twelve tribes
which are ſcattered abroad,
greeting.
2 My brethren, count it all
joy when ye fall into divers
temptations;
3 Knowing *this*, that the try-
ing of your faith worketh pa-
tience.
4 But let patience have *her*
perfect work, that ye may be
perfect and entire, wanting
nothing.
5 If any of you lack wiſ-
dom, let him aſk of God that
giveth to all *men* liberally, and
upbraideth not: and it ſhall be
given him.
6 But let him aſk in faith,
nothing wavering. For he that
wavereth is like a wave of the
ſea, driven with the wind, and
toſſed.
7 For let not that man think
that he ſhall receive any thing
of the Lord.
8 A double minded man *is*
unſtable in all his ways.
9 Let the brother of low de-
gree rejoice in that he is ex-
alted:
10 But the rich in that he
is made low: becauſe as the
flower of the graſs he ſhall paſs
away.
11 For the ſun is no ſooner
riſen with a burning heat, but
it withereth the graſs, and the
flower thereof falleth, and the
grace of the faſhion of it pe-
riſheth: ſo alſo ſhall the rich
man fade away in his ways.
12 Bleſſed *is* the man that
endureth temptation: for when
he is tried, he ſhall receive the
crown of life, which the Lord
hath promiſed to them that
love him.
13 Let no man ſay when he
is tempted, I am tempted of
God; for God cannot be tempt-
ed with evil, neither tempteth
he any man:
14 But every man is tempt-
ed, when he is drawn away of
his own luſt, and enticed.
15 Then when luſt hath con-
ceived, it bringeth forth ſin:
and ſin, when it is finiſhed,
bringeth forth death.
16 Do not err, my beloved
brethren.
17 Every good gift, and eve-
ry perfect gift, is from above,
and cometh down from the
Father of lights, with whom
is no variableneſs, neither ſha-
dow of turning.
18 Of his own will begat he
us with the word of truth, that
we ſhould be a kind of firſt-
fruits of his creatures.
19 Wherefore, my beloved
brethren, let every man be
ſwift to hear, ſlow to ſpeak,
ſlow to wrath:
20 For the wrath of man
worketh not the righteouſneſs
of God.
21 Wherefore lay apart all
filthineſs, and ſuperfluity of
naughtineſs, and receive with
meekneſs the engrafted word,
which is able to ſave your
ſouls.
22 But be ye doers of the
word, and not hearers only,
deceiving your ownſelves.
23 For if any be a hearer
of the word, and not a doer,
he

he is like unto a man beholding
his natural face in a glaſs:
24 For he beholdeth himſelf,
and goeth his way, and ſtraight-
way forgetteth what manner of
man he was.
25 But whoſo looketh into
the perfect law of liberty, and
continueth *therein*, he being
not a forgetful hearer, but a
doer of the work, this man
ſhall be bleſſed in his deed.
26 If any man among you
ſeem to be religious, and bri-
dleth not his tongue, but de-
ceiveth his own heart, this
man's religion *is* vain.
27 Pure religion and unde-
filed before God and the Fa-
ther is this, To viſit the fa-
therleſs and widows in their
affliction, *and* to keep himſelf
unſpotted from the world.

CHAP. II.

Of faith and works.

MY brethren, have not the
faith of our Lord Jeſus
Chriſt, *the Lord* of glory, with
reſpect of perſons.
2 For if there come unto
your aſſembly a man with a
gold ring, in goodly apparel,
and there come in alſo a poor
man in vile raiment;
3 And ye have reſpect to him
that weareth the gay clothing,
and ſay unto him, Sit thou here
in a good place; and ſay to the
poor, Stand thou there, or ſit
here under my footſtool:
4 Are ye not then partial in
yourſelves, and are become
judges of evil thoughts?
5 Hearken, my beloved bre-
thren, Hath not God choſen
the poor of this world rich in
faith, and heirs of the king-
dom which he hath promiſed
to them that love him?
6 But ye have deſpiſed the
poor. Do not rich men op-
preſs you, and draw you be-
fore the judgement ſeats?
7 Do not they blaſpheme
that worthy name by the
which ye are called?
8 If ye fulfil the royal law
according to the ſcripture,
Thou ſhalt love thy neigh-
bour as thyſelf, ye do well:
9 But if ye have reſpect to
perſons, ye commit ſin, and are
convinced of the law as tranſ-
greſſors.
10 For whoſoever ſhall keep
the whole law, and yet offend
in one *point*, he is guilty of all.
11 For he that ſaid, Do not
commit adultery; ſaid alſo, Do
not kill. Now if thou commit
no adultery, yet if thou kill,
thou art become a tranſgreſſor
of the law.
12 So ſpeak ye, and ſo do,
as they that ſhall be judged by
the law of liberty.
13 For he ſhall have judge-
ment without mercy, that
hath ſhewed no mercy; and
mercy rejoiceth againſt judge-
ment.
14 What *doth it* profit, my
brethren, though a man ſay he
hath faith, and have not works?
can faith ſave him?
15 If a brother or ſiſter be
naked, and deſtitute of daily
food,
16 And one of you ſay un-
to them, Depart in peace, be
ye warmed, and filled; not-
withſtanding ye give them not
thoſe things which are need-
ful to the body; what *doth it*
profit?
17 Even ſo faith, if it hath
not works, is dead, being alone.
18 Yea, a man may ſay,
Thou haſt faith, and I have
works: ſhew me thy faith with-
out

out thy works, and I will ſhew
thee my faith by my works.
19 Thou believeſt that there
is one God; thou doeſt well.
The devils alſo believe, and
tremble.
20 But wilt thou know, O
vain man, that faith without
works is dead?
21 Was not Abraham our
father juſtified by works, when
he had offered Iſaac his ſon
upon the altar?
22 Seeſt thou how faith
wrought with his works, and by
works was faith made perfect?
23 And the ſcripture was ful-
filled, which ſaith, Abraham
believed God, and it was im-
puted unto him for righteouſ-
neſs: and he was called the
Friend of God.
24 Ye ſee then how that by
works a man is juſtified, and
not by faith only.
25 Likewiſe alſo was not
Rahab the harlot juſtified by
works, when ſhe had received
the meſſengers, and had ſent
them out another way?
26 For as the body without
the ſpirit is dead, ſo faith with-
out works is dead alſo.

CHAP. III.

Of prudence in reproving.

MY brethren, be not many
maſters, knowing that
we ſhall receive the greater
condemnation.
2 For in many things we of-
fend all. If any man offend not
in word, the ſame *is* a perfect
man, *and* able alſo to bridle the
whole body.
3 Behold, we put bits in the
horſes' mouths, that they may
obey us; and we turn about
their whole body.
4 Behold alſo the ſhips,
which, though *they be* ſo great,
and *are* driven of fierce winds,
yet are they turned about with
a very ſmall helm, whitherſo-
ever the governor liſteth.
5 Even ſo the tongue is a lit-
tle member, and boaſteth great
things. Behold, how great a
matter a little fire kindleth!
6 And the tongue *is* a fire,
a world of iniquity. So is the
tongue among our members,
that it defileth the whole body,
and ſetteth on fire the courſe of
nature; and it is ſet on fire of
hell.
7 For every kind of beaſts,
and of birds, and of ſerpents,
and of things in the ſea, is
tamed, and hath been tamed
of mankind:
8 But the tongue can no man
tame; *it is* an unruly evil, full
of deadly poiſon.
9 Therewith bleſs we God,
even the Father; and therewith
curſe we men, which are made
after the ſimilitude of God.
10 Out of the ſame mouth
proceedeth bleſſing and curſ-
ing. My brethren, theſe things
ought not ſo to be.
11 Doth a fountain ſend forth
at the ſame place ſweet *water*
and bitter?
12 Can the fig tree, my bre-
thren, bear olive berries? either
a vine figs? ſo *can* no fountain
both yield ſalt water and freſh.
13 Who *is* a wiſe man, and
endued with knowledge among
you? let him ſhew out of a
good converſation his works
with meekneſs of wiſdom.
14 But if ye have bitter en-
vying and ſtrife in your hearts,
glory not, and lie not againſt
the truth.
15 This wiſdom deſcendeth
not from above, but *is* earthly,
ſenſual, deviliſh.

16 For

16 For where envying and
ſtrife *is*, there *is* confuſion, and
every evil work.
17 But the wiſdom that is
from above is firſt pure, then
peaceabe, gentle, *and* eaſy to
be intreated, full of mercy and
good fruits, without partiality,
and without hypocriſy.
18 And the fruit of righte-
ouſneſs is ſown in peace of
them that make peace.

CHAP. IV.

Againſt covetouſneſs, &c.

FROM whence *come* wars
and fightings among you?
come they not hence, *even* of
your luſts that war in your
members?
2 Ye luſt, and have not: ye
kill, and deſire to have, and can-
not obtain: ye fight and war, yet
ye have not, becauſe ye aſk not.
3 Ye aſk, and receive not, be-
cauſe ye aſk amiſs, that ye may
conſume *it* upon your luſts.
4 Ye adulterers, and adul-
tereſſes, know ye not that the
friendſhip of the world is enmi-
ty with God? whoſoever there-
fore will be a friend of the
world is the enemy of God.
5 Do ye think that the ſcrip-
ture ſaith in vain, The ſpirit
that dwelleth in us luſteth to
envy?
6 But he giveth more grace.
Wherefore he ſaith, God re-
ſiſteth the proud, but giveth
grace unto the humble.
7 Submit yourſelves there-
fore to God. Reſiſt the devil,
and he will flee from you.
8 Draw nigh to God, and
he will draw nigh to you
Cleanſe *your* hands, *ye* ſinners,
and purify *your* hearts, *ye* dou-
bleminded.
9 Be afflicted, and mourn,
and weep: let your laughter be
turned to mourning, and *your*
joy to heavineſs.
10 Humble yourſelves in the
ſight of the Lord, and he ſhall
lift you up.
11 Speak not evil one of an-
other, brethren. He that ſpeak-
eth evil of *his* brother, and
judgeth his brother, ſpeaketh
evil of the law, and judgeth
the law: but if thou judge the
law, thou art not a doer of the
law, but a judge.
12 There is one lawgiver,
who is able to ſave, and to de-
ſtroy. Who art thou that judg-
eſt another?
13 Go to now, ye that ſay,
To day or to morrow we will
go into ſuch a city, and conti-
nue there a year, and buy, and
ſell, and get gain:
14 Whereas ye know not
what *ſhall be* on the morrow.
For what *is* your life? it is even
a vapour that appeareth for a
little time, and then vaniſheth
away.
15 For that ye *ought* to ſay,
If the Lord will, we ſhall live,
and do this, or that.
16 But now ye rejoice in
your boaſtings. All ſuch re-
joicing is evil.
17 Therefore to him that
knoweth to do good, and do-
eth *it* not, to him it is ſin.

CHAP. V.

Of wicked rich men, &c.

GO to now, *ye* rich men,
weep and howl for your
miſeries that ſhall come upon
you.
2 Your riches are corrupted,
and your garments are moth-
eaten.
3 Your gold and ſilver is
cankered; and the ruſt of them
ſhall be a witneſs againſt you,
and ſhall eat your fleſh as it
were

were fire. Ye have heaped treaſure together for the laſt days.

4 Behold, the hire of the labourers, who have reaped down your fields, which is of you kept back by fraud, crieth: and the cries of them which have reaped, are entered into the ears of the Lord of ſabaoth.

5 Ye have lived in pleaſure on the earth, and been wanton; ye have nouriſhed your hearts, as in a day of ſlaughter.

6 Ye have condemned *and* killed the juſt; *and* he doth not reſiſt you.

7 Be patient therefore, brethren, unto the coming of the Lord. Behold, the huſbandman waiteth for the precious fruit of the earth, and hath long patience for it, until he receive the early and latter rain.

8 Be ye alſo patient; ſtabliſh your hearts: for the coming of the Lord draweth nigh.

9 Grudge not one againſt another, brethren, leſt ye be condemned: behold, the judge ſtandeth before the door.

10 Take, my brethren, the prophets, who have ſpoken in the name of the Lord, for an example of ſuffering affliction, and of patience.

11 Behold, we count them happy which endure. Ye have heard of the patience of Job, and have ſeen the end of the Lord: that the Lord is very pitiful, and of tender mercy.

12 But above all things, my brethren, ſwear not, neither by heaven, neither by the earth, neither by any other oath: but let your yea be yea, and *your* nay, nay; leſt ye fall into condemnation.

13 Is any among you afflicted? let him pray. Is any merry? let him ſing pſalms.

14 Is any ſick among you? let him call for the elders of the church; and let them pray over him, anointing him with oil, in the name of the Lord:

15 And the prayer of faith ſhall ſave the ſick, and the Lord ſhall raiſe him up; and if he have committed ſins, they ſhall be forgiven him.

16 Confeſs *your* faults one to another, and pray one for another, that ye may be healed. The effectual fervent prayer of a righteous man availeth much.

17 Elias was a man ſubject to like paſſions as we are, and he prayed earneſtly that it might not rain: and it rained not on the earth by the ſpace of three years and ſix months.

18 And he prayed again, and the heaven gave rain, and the earth brought forth her fruit.

19 Brethren, if any of you do err from the truth, and one convert him;

20 Let him know, that he which converteth the ſinner from the error of his way, ſhall ſave a ſoul from death, and ſhall hide a multitude of ſins.

The Firſt Epiſtle General of PETER.

CHAP. I.

God's manifold ſpiritual graces.

PETER, an apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt, to the ſtrangers ſcattered throughout Pontus, Galatia, Cappadocia, Aſia, and Bithynia,

2 Elect according to the foreknowledge of God the Father, through ſanctification of the Spirit unto obedience, and ſprinkling of the blood of Jeſus Chriſt: Grace unto you, and peace be multiplied.

3 Bleſſed *be* the God and Father of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt, which according to his abundant mercy hath begotten us again unto a lively hope by the reſurrection of Jeſus Chriſt from the dead,

4 To an inheritance incorruptible and undefiled, and that fadeth not away, reſerved in heaven for you,

5 Who are kept by the power of God, through faith, unto ſalvation, ready to be revealed in the laſt time.

6 Wherein ye greatly rejoice, though now for a ſeaſon, if need be, ye are in heavineſs through manifold temptations:

7 That the trial of your faith being much more precious than of gold that periſheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praiſe, and honour, and glory, at the appearing of Jeſus Chriſt:

8 Whom having not ſeen, ye love; in whom, though now ye ſee *him* not, yet believing, ye rejoice with joy unſpeakable, and full of glory:

9 Receiving the end of your faith, even the ſalvation of *your* ſouls.

10 Of which ſalvation the prophets have enquired and ſearched diligently, who propheſied of the grace *that ſhould come* unto you:

11 Searching what, or what manner of time, the Spirit of Chriſt which was in them did ſignify, when it teſtified beforehand the ſufferings of Chriſt, and the glory that ſhould follow.

12 Unto whom it was revealed, that not unto themſelves, but unto us, they did miniſter the things which are now reported unto you by them that have preached the goſpel unto you with the Holy Ghoſt ſent down from heaven; which things the angels deſire to look into.

13 Wherefore gird up the loins of your mind, be ſober, and hope to the end for the grace that is to be brought unto you at the revelation of Jeſus Chriſt;

14 As obedient children, not faſhioning yourſelves according to the former luſts in your ignorance:

15 But as he which hath called you is holy, ſo be ye holy in all manner of converſation;

16 Becauſe it is written, Be ye holy; for I am holy.

17 And if ye call on the Father who, without reſpect of perſons, judgeth according to every man's work, paſs the time of your ſojourning *here* in fear:

18 Foraſmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, *as* ſilver and gold, from your vain converſation

tion *received* by tradition from your fathers;

19 But with the precious blood of Chriſt, as of a lamb without blemiſh and without ſpot:

20 Who verily was foreordained before the foundation of the world, but was manifeſt in theſe laſt times for you,

21 Who by him do believe in God, that raiſed him up from the dead, and gave him glory, that your faith and hope might be in God.

22 Seeing ye have purified your ſouls in obeying the truth through the Spirit unto unfeigned love of the brethren, *ſee that ye* love one another with a pure heart fervently:

23 Being born again, not of corruptible ſeed, but of incorruptible, by the word of God, which liveth and abideth for ever.

24 For all fleſh *is* as graſs, and all the glory of man as the flower of graſs. The graſs withereth, and the flower thereof falleth away:

25 But the word of the Lord endureth for ever. And this is the word which by the goſpel is preached unto you.

CHAP. II.

To avoid uncharitableneſs.

WHerefore laying aſide all malice, and all guile, and hypocriſies, and envies, and all evil ſpeakings,

2 As new born babes deſire the ſincere milk of the word, that ye may grow thereby:

3 If ſo be ye have taſted that the Lord *is* gracious.

4 To whom coming, *as unto* a living ſtone, diſallowed indeed of men, but choſen of God, *and* precious,

5 Ye alſo, as lively ſtones, are built up a ſpiritual houſe, an holy prieſthood, to offer up ſpiritual ſacrifices, acceptable to God by Jeſus Chriſt.

6 Wherefore alſo it is contained in the ſcripture, Behold, I lay in Sion a chief corner ſtone, elect, precious: and he that believeth on him ſhall not be confounded.

7 Unto you therefore which believe *he is* precious: but unto them which be diſobedient, the ſtone which the builders diſallowed, the ſame is made the head of the corner,

8 And a ſtone of ſtumbling, and a rock of offence, *even to them* which ſtumble at the word, being diſobedient, whereunto alſo they were appointed.

9 But ye *are* a choſen generation, a royal prieſthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye ſhould ſhew forth the praiſes of him who hath called you out of darkneſs into his marvellous light:

10 Which in time paſt *were* not a people, but *are* now the people of God; which had not obtained mercy, but now have obtained mercy.

11 Dearly beloved, I beſeech *you* as ſtrangers and pilgrims, abſtain from fleſhly luſts, which war againſt the ſoul;

12 Having your converſation honeſt among the Gentiles: that whereas they ſpeak againſt you as evil doers, they may, by *your* good works which they ſhall behold, glorify God in the day of viſitation.

13 Submit yourſelves to every ordinance of man for the Lord's ſake: whether it be to the king, as ſuprem[e];

14 Or unto gove[rn]ors, as un-

to them that are ſent by him
for the puniſhment of evildo-
ers, and for the praiſe of them
that do well.
15 For ſo is the will of God,
that with well doing ye may
put to ſilence the ignorance of
fooliſh men:
16 As free, and not uſing
your liberty for a cloke of ma-
liciouſneſs, but as the ſervants
of God.
17 Honour all *men*. Love
the brotherhood. Fear God.
Honour the king.
18 Servants *be* ſubject to *your*
maſters with all fear, not only
to the good and gentle, but al-
ſo to the froward.
19 For this *is* thankworthy,
if a man for conſcience toward
God endure grief, ſuffering
wrongfully.
20 For what glory *is it*, if
when ye be buffeted for your
faults, ye ſhall take it patient-
ly? but if when ye do well,
and ſuffer *for it*, ye take it pa-
tiently, this *is* acceptable with
God.
21 For even hereunto were
ye called: becauſe Chriſt alſo
ſuffered for us, leaving us an
example, that ye ſhould follow
his ſteps:
22 Who did no ſin, neither
was guile found in his mouth:
23 Who, when he was revil-
ed, reviled not again; when he
ſuffered, he threatened not; but
committed *himſelf* to him that
judgeth righteouſly:
24 Who his own ſelf bare
our ſins in his own body on the
tree, that we being dead to
ſins ſhould live unto righte-
ouſneſs: by whoſe ſtripes ye
were healed.
25 For ye were as ſheep go-
ing aftray; but are now re-
turned unto the Shepherd and
Biſhop of your ſouls.

CHAP. III.

Duty of wives and huſbands.

LIkewiſe, ye wives, *be* in
ſubjection to your own
huſbands; that if any obey not
the word, they alſo may with-
out the word be won by the
converſation of the wives;
2 While they behold your
chaſte converſation *coupled* with
fear.
3 Whoſe adorning, let it not
be that outward *adorning* of
plaiting the hair, and of wear-
ing of gold, or of putting on of
apparel;
4 But *let it be* the hidden man
of the heart, in that which is
not corruptible, *even the orna-
ment* of a meek and quiet ſpirit,
which is in the ſight of God of
great price.
5 For after this manner, in
the old time, the holy women
alſo who truſted in God adorn-
ed themſelves, being in ſub-
jection unto their own huſ-
bands:
6 Even as Sara obeyed Abra-
ham, calling him lord: whoſe
daughters ye are as long as ye
do well, and are not afraid with
any amazement.
7 Likewiſe, ye huſbands,
dwell with *them* according to
knowledge, giving honour un-
to the wife as unto the weaker
veſſel, and as being heirs toge-
ther of the grace of life; that
your prayers be not hindered.
8 Finally, *be ye* all of one
mind, having compaſſion one
of another, love as brethren,
be pitiful, *be* courteous:
9 Not rendering evil for evil,
or railing for railing: but con-
trariwiſe, bleſſing; knowing
that ye are thereunto called,
that

that ye ſhould inherit a bleſſ-
ing.
10 For he that will love life,
and ſee good days, let him re-
frain his tongue from evil, and
his lips that they ſpeak no guile:
11 Let him eſchew evil, and
do good; let him ſeek peace,
and enſue it.
12 For the eyes of the Lord
are over the righteous, and his
ears *are open* unto their pray-
ers: but the face of the Lord
is againſt them that do evil.
13 And who *is* he that will
harm you, if ye be followers of
that which is good?
14 But and if ye ſuffer for
righteouſneſs' ſake, happy *are*
ye: and be not afraid of their
terror, neither be troubled;
15 But ſanctify the Lord
God in your hearts: and *be*
ready always to *give* an anſwer
to every man that aſketh you a
reaſon of the hope that is in
you, with meekneſs and fear:
16 Having a good conſci-
ence; that whereas they ſpeak
evil of you, as of evil doers,
they may be aſhamed that
falſely accuſe your good con-
verſation in Chriſt.
17 For *it is* better, if the
will of God be ſo, that ye ſuf-
fer for well doing than for
evil doing.
18 For Chriſt alſo hath once
ſuffered for ſins, the juſt for the
unjuſt, that he might bring us
to God, being put to death in
the fleſh, but quickened by the
Spirit:
19 By which alſo he went
and preached unto the ſpirits
in priſon;
20 Which ſometime were
diſobedient, when once the
longſuffering of God waited
in the days of Noah, while the
ark was a preparing, wherein
few, that is, eight ſouls, were
ſaved by water.
21 The like figure whereun-
to, *even* baptiſm, doth alſo now
ſave us (not the putting away
of the filth of the fleſh, but the
anſwer of a good conſcience
toward God) by the reſurrec-
tion of Jeſus Chriſt:
22 Who is gone into heaven,
and is on the right hand of
God; angels, and authorities,
and powers, being made ſub-
ject unto him.

CHAP. IV.

Of ceaſing from ſin.

FOraſmuch then as Chriſt
hath ſuffered for us in the
fleſh, arm yourſelves likewiſe
with the ſame mind: for he
that hath ſuffered in the fleſh,
hath ceaſed from ſin;
2 That he no longer ſhould
live the reſt of *his* time in the
fleſh to the luſts of men, but
to the will of God.
3 For the time paſt of *our* life
may ſuffice us to have wrought
the will of the Gentiles, when
we walked in laſciviouſneſs,
luſts, exceſs of wine, revellings,
banquetings, and abominable
idolatries:
4 Wherein they think it
ſtrange that ye run not with
them to the ſame exceſs of riot,
ſpeaking evil of *you:*
5 Who ſhall give account to
him that is ready to judge the
quick and the dead.
6 For for this cauſe was the
goſpel preached alſo to them
that are dead, that they might
be judged according to men in
the fleſh, but live according to
God in the ſpirit.
7 But the end of all things is
at hand: be ye therefore ſober
and watch unto prayer.

8 And above all things have fervent charity among yourselves: for charity shall cover the multitude of sins.

9 Use hospitality one to another without grudging.

10 As every man hath received the gift, *even so* minister the same one to another, as good stewards of the manifold grace of God.

11 If any man speak, *let him speak* as the oracles of God: if any man minister, *let him do it* as of the ability which God giveth: that God in all things may be glorified through Jesus Christ; to whom be praise and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12 Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial, which is to try you, as though some strange thing happened unto you:

13 But rejoice, inasmuch as ye are partakers of Christ's sufferings; that when his glory shall be revealed, ye may be glad also with exceeding joy.

14 If ye be reproached for the name of Christ, happy *are ye*: for the spirit of glory and of God resteth upon you. On their part he is evil spoken of, but on your part he is glorified.

15 But let none of you suffer as a murderer, or *as* a thief, or *as* an evildoer, or as a busy-body in other men's matters.

16 Yet if *any man suffer* as a Christian, let him not be ashamed; but let him glorify God on this behalf.

17 For the time *is come* that judgement must begin at the house of God: and if *it* first *begin* at us, what shall the end *be* of them that obey not the gospel of God?

18 And if the righteous scarcely be saved, where shall the ungodly and the sinner appear?

19 Wherefore let them that suffer according to the will of God, commit the keeping of their souls *to him* in well doing, as unto a faithful Creator.

CHAP. V.

The duty of elders, &c.

THE elders which are among you I exhort, who am also an elder, and a witness of the sufferings of Christ, and also a partaker of the glory that shall be revealed:

2 Feed the flock of God which is among you, taking the oversight *thereof*, not by constraint, but willingly; not for filthy lucre, but of a ready mind;

3 Neither as being lords over *God's* heritage, but being ensamples to the flock.

4 And when the chief Shepherd shall appear, ye shall receive a crown of glory that fadeth not away.

5 Likewise, ye younger, submit yourselves unto the elder. Yea, all *of you* be subject one to another, and be clothed with humility. For God resisteth the proud, and giveth grace to the humble.

6 Humble yourselves therefore under the mighty hand of God, that he may exalt you in due time:

7 Casting all your care upon him; for he careth for you.

8 Be sober, be vigilant; because your adversary the devil, as a roaring lion, walketh about, seeking whom he may devour:

9 Whom resist stedfast in the faith, knowing that the same afflictions are accomplished in your

your brethren that are in the world.

10 But the God of all grace, who hath called us unto his eternal glory by Chriſt Jeſus, after that ye have ſuffered a while, make you perfect, ſtabliſh, ſtrengthen, ſettle *you.*

11 To him *be* glory and dominion for ever and ever. Amen.

12 By Silvanus, a faithful brother unto you, as I ſuppoſe, I have written briefly, exhorting, and teſtifying, that this is the true grace of God wherein ye ſtand.

13 The *church that is* at Babylon, elected together with *you,* ſaluteth you; and *ſo doth* Marcus my ſon.

14 Greet ye one another with a kiſs of charity. Peace *be* with you all that are in Chriſt Jeſus. Amen.

The Second Epiſtle general of PETER.

CHAP. I.

Exhortation to ſeveral duties.

SIMON Peter, a ſervant and an apoſtle of Jeſus Chriſt, to them that have obtained like precious faith with us through the righteouſneſs of God and our Saviour Jeſus Chriſt:

2 Grace and peace be multiplied unto you through the knowledge of God and of Jeſus our Lord,

3 According as his divine power hath given unto us all things that *pertain* unto life and godlineſs, through the knowledge of him that hath called us to glory and virtue:

4 Whereby are given unto us exceeding great and precious promiſes; that by theſe ye might be partakers of the divine nature, having eſcaped the corruption that is in the world through luſt.

5 And beſide this, giving all diligence, add to your faith virtue, and to virtue knowledge;

6 And to knowledge temperance, and to temperance patience, and to patience godlineſs;

7 And to godlineſs brotherly kindneſs, and to brotherly kindneſs charity.

8 For if theſe things be in you, and abound, they make *you that ye ſhall* neither *be* barren nor unfruitful in the knowledge of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.

9 But he that lacketh theſe things is blind, and cannot ſee afar off, and hath forgotten that he was purged from his old ſins.

10 Wherefore the rather, brethren, give diligence to make your calling and election ſure: for, if ye do theſe things, ye ſhall never fall:

11 For ſo an entrance ſhall be miniſtered unto you abundantly, into the everlaſting kingdom of our Lord and Saviour Jeſus Chriſt.

12 Wherefore I will not be negligent to put you always in remembrance of theſe things, though ye know *them,* and be eſtabliſhed in the preſent truth.

13 Yea, I think it meet, as long as I am in this tabernacle, to ſtir you up, by putting *you* in remembrance;

14 Knowing that ſhortly I muſt put off *this* my tabernacle,

even as our Lord Jefus Chrift
hath fhewed me.
15 Moreover I will endea-
vour, that ye may be able after
my deceafe to have thefe things
always in remembrance.
16 For we have not followed
cunningly devifed fables, when
we made known unto you the
power and coming of our Lord
Jefus Chrift, but were eyewit-
neffes of his majefty.
17 For he received from
God the Father honour and
glory, when there came fuch a
voice to him from the excellent
glory, This is my beloved Son,
in whom I am well pleafed.
18 And this voice, which
came from heaven, we heard,
when we were with him in the
holy mount.
19 We have alfo a more fure
word of prophecy; whereunto
ye do well that ye take heed,
as unto a light that fhineth in a
dark place, until the day dawn,
and the day ftar arife in your
hearts:
20 Knowing this firft, that
no prophecy of the fcripture is
of any private interpretation.
21 For the prophecy came
not in old time by the will of
man: but holy men of God
fpake *as they were* moved by
the Holy Ghoft.

CHAP. II.

Falfe teachers foretold.

BUT there were falfe pro-
phets alfo among the peo-
ple, even as there fhall be falfe
teachers among you, who pri-
vily fhall bring in damnable he-
refies, even denying the Lord
that bought them, and bring
upon themfelves fwift deftruc-
tion.
2 And many fhall follow their
[illegible]; by reafon of
whom the way of truth fhall be
evil fpoken of.
3 And through covetoufnefs
fhall they with feigned words
make merchandife of you;
whofe judgement now of a long
time lingereth not, and their
damnation flumbereth not.
4 For if God fpared not the
angels that finned, but caft
them down to hell, and deli-
vered *them* into chains of dark-
nefs, to be referved unto judge-
ment;
5 And fpared not the old
world, but faved Noah, the
eighth *perfon*, a preacher of
righteoufnefs, bringing in the
flood upon the world of the
[illegible];
6 And turning the cities of
Sodom and Gomorrha into
afhes, condemned *them* with
an overthrow, making *them* an
enfample unto thofe that after
fhould live ungodly;
7 And delivered juft Lot,
vexed with the filthy conver-
fation of the wicked:
8 (For that righteous man,
dwelling among them, in fee-
ing, and hearing, vexed *his*
righteous foul from day to day
with *their* unlawful deeds;)
9 The Lord knoweth how
to deliver the godly out of
temptations, and to referve the
unjuft unto the day of judge-
ment to be punifhed:
10 But chiefly them that
walk after the flefh in the luft
of uncleannefs, and defpife go-
vernment. Prefumptuous *are
they*, felfwilled, they are not
afraid to fpeak evil of dignities.
11 Whereas angels, which
are greater in power and
might, bring not railing accu-
fation againft them before the
Lord.

12 But

12 But theſe, as natural brute
beaſts, made to be taken and
deſtroyed, ſpeak evil of the
things that they underſtand
not; and ſhall utterly periſh in
their own corruption;
13 And ſhall receive the
reward of unrighteouſneſs, *as*
they that count it pleaſure to
riot in the day time. Spots
they are, and blemiſhes, ſport-
ing themſelves with their own
deceivings, while they feaſt
with you;
14 Having eyes full of adul-
tery, and that cannot ceaſe
from ſin; beguiling unſtable
ſouls; an heart they have ex-
ercifed with covetous practices;
curſed children:
15 Which have forſaken the
right way, and are gone
aſtray, following the way of
Balaam *the ſon* of Boſor, who
loved the wages of unrighte-
ouſneſs;
16 But was rebuked for his
iniquity. The dumb aſs ſpeak-
ing with man's voice, forbad
the madneſs of the prophet.
17 Theſe are wells without
water, clouds that are carried
with a tempeſt; to whom the
miſt of darkneſs is reſerved for
ever.
18 For when they ſpeak
great ſwelling *words* of vanity,
they allure through the luſts
of the fleſh, *through much* wan-
tonneſs, thoſe that were clean
eſcaped from them who live in
error.
19 While they promiſe them
liberty, they themſelves are the
ſervants of corruption: for of
whom a man is overcome, of
the ſame is he brought in bond-
age.
20 For if after they have
eſcaped the pollutions of the
world, through the knowledge
of the Lord and Saviour Jeſus
Chriſt, they are again entangled
therein, and overcome; the lat-
ter end is worſe with them than
the beginning.
21 For it had been better for
them not to have known the
way of righteouſneſs, than after
they have known *it*, to turn
from the holy commandment
delivered unto them.
22 But it is happened unto
them, according to the true
proverb, The dog *is* turned to
his own vomit again; and the
ſow that was waſhed, to her
wallowing in the mire.

CHAP. III.

Certainty of the laſt judgement.

THIS ſecond epiſtle, be-
loved, I now write unto
you; in *both* which I ſtir up
your pure minds by way of re-
membrance:
2 That ye may be mindful of
the words which were ſpoken
before by the holy prophets,
and of the commandment of
us the apoſtles of the Lord and
Saviour:
3 Knowing this firſt, that
there ſhall come in the laſt days
ſcoffers, walking after their
own luſts,
4 And ſaying, Where is the
promiſe of his coming? for
ſince the fathers fell aſleep,
all things continue as *they were*
from the beginning of the cre-
ation.
5 For this they willingly are
ignorant of, that by the word
of God the heavens were of
old, and the earth ſtanding out
of the water, and in the water:
6 Whereby the world that
then [illegible] overflowed
with water, [illegible]ed:
7 But the [illegible] and the

 earth,

earth, which are now, by the
same word are kept in store,
reserved unto fire against the
day of judgement, and perdi-
tion of ungodly men.
8 But, beloved, be not ig-
norant of this one thing, that
one day *is* with the Lord as a
thousand years, and a thousand
years as one day.
9 The Lord is not slack con-
cerning his promise, as some men
count slackness; but is longsuf-
fering to us-ward, not willing
that any should perish, but that
all should come to repentance.
10 But the day of the Lord
will come as a thief in the
night: in the which the hea-
vens shall pass away with a
great noise, and the elements
shall melt with fervent heat, th[illegible]
earth also and the works that
are therein shall be burned up.
11 *Seeing* then *that* all these
things shall be dissolved, what
manner *of persons* ought ye to
be in *all* holy conversation and
godliness,
12 Looking for and hasting
unto the coming of the day of
God, wherein the heavens be-
ing on fire shall be dissolved,
and the elements shall melt
with f[illegible]at?
13 Nevertheless we, accord-
ing to his promise, look for
new heavens and a new earth,
wherein dwelleth righteous-
ness.
14 Wherefore, beloved, see-
ing that ye look for such things,
be diligent that ye may [illegible]
found of him in peace, with-
out spot, and blameless.
15 And account *that* the long-
suffering of our Lord *is* salva-
tion; even as our beloved bro-
ther Paul also, according to the
wisdom given unto him, hath
written unto you;
16 As [illegible]lso in all *his* epistles
spea[illegible]king in them of these
thin[illegible]s; [illegible]in which are some
th[illegible]rd to be understood;
which [illegible]hat are unlearned
and unstab[illegible] wres[illegible], as *the[illegible] do*
also the other [illegible]criptures, unto
their own destruction.
17 Ye therefore, beloved,
seeing ye know *these things* be-
fore, beware lest ye also, being
led away with the error of the
wicked, fall from your own
stedfastness.
18 But grow in grace, and
in the knowledge of our Lord
and Saviour Jesus Christ. To
him *be* glory both now and for
ever. Amen.

The First Epistle [illegible]eneral of JOHN[illegible]

CHAP. I.

Person of Christ des[illegible]

THAT wh[illegible]was from
the b[illegible]inning, which
[illegible]e ha[illegible]e heard, which
we [illegible]ave seen with our eyes,
which we ha[illegible] look[illegible] upon,
and our han[illegible]ndled
of the word o[illegible]
2 (Fo[illegible] manifest-
ed, and we have seen [illegible], and
bear witness, and shew unto
you that eternal life, which
was with the Father, and was
manifested unto us;)
[illegible] That which we have seen
and heard declare we unto you,
tha[illegible] ye also may have fellow-
ship with us; and truly our
fellowship *is* with the Father,
and

and with his Son Jeſus Chriſt.
4 And theſe things write we
unto you, that our joy may
be full.
5 This then is the meſſage
which we have heard of him,
and declare unto you, that God
is light, and in him is no dark-
neſs at all.
6 If we ſay that we have fel-
lowſhip with him, and walk in
darkneſs, we lie, and do not
the truth:
7 But if we walk in the light,
as he is in the light, we have
fellowſhip one with another,
and the blood of Jeſus Chriſt
his ſon cleanſeth us from all ſin.
8 If we ſay that we have no
ſin, we deceive ourſelves, and
the truth is not in us.
9 If we confeſs our ſins, he is
faithful and juſt to forgive us
our ſins, and to cleanſe us from
all unrighteouſneſs.
10 If we ſay that we have not
ſinned, we make him a liar, and
his word is not in us.

CHAP. II.

Chriſt our advocate.

MY little children, theſe
things write I unto you,
that ye ſin not. And if any man
ſin, we have an advocate with
the Father, Jeſus Chriſt the
righteous:
2 And he is the propitiation
for our ſins: and not for ours
only, but alſo for *the ſins of* the
whole world.
3 And hereby we do know
that we know him, if we keep
his commandments.
4 He that ſaith, I know him,
and keepeth not his command-
ments, is a liar, and the truth
is not in him.
5 But whoſo keepeth his
word, in him verily is the love
of God perfected: hereby
know we that we are in him.
6 He that ſaith he abideth in
him ought himſelf alſo ſo to
walk, even as he walked.
7 Brethren, I write no new
commandment unto you, but
an old commandment, which
ye had from the beginning:
the old commandment is the
word which ye have heard from
the beginning.
8 Again, a new command-
ment I write unto you, which
thing is true in him, and in
you; becauſe the darkneſs is
paſt, and the true light now
ſhineth.
9 He that ſaith he is in the
light, and hateth his brother,
is in darkneſs even until now.
10 He that loveth his brother
abideth in the light, and there
is none occaſion of ſtumbling
in him.
11 But he that hateth his
brother is in darkneſs, and
walketh in darkneſs, and know-
eth not whither he goeth, be-
cauſe that darkneſs hath blind-
ed his eyes.
12 I write unto you, little
children, becauſe your ſins are
forgiven you for his name's
ſake.
13 I write unto you, fathers,
becauſe ye have known him
that is from the beginning. I
write unto you, young men,
becauſe ye have overcome the
wicked one. I write unto you,
little children, becauſe ye have
known the Father.
14 I have written unto you,
fathers, becauſe ye have known
him *that is* from the beginning.
I have written unto you, young
men, becauſe ye are ſtrong, and
the word of God abideth in
you, and ye have overcome the
wicked one.

15 Love not the world, nei-
ther the things *that are* in the
world. If any man love the
world, the love of the Father
is not in him.
16 For all that *is* in the
world, the luſt of the fleſh, and
the luſt of the eyes, and the
pride of life, is not of the Fa-
ther, but is of the world.
17 And the world paſſeth
away, and the luſt thereof: but
he that doeth the will of God
abideth for ever.
18 Little children, it is the
laſt time; and as ye have heard
that antichriſt ſhall come, even
now are there many antichriſts;
whereby we know that it is the
laſt time.
19 They went out from [illegible],
but they were not of us; for if
they had been of us, they would
no doubt have continued with
us: but *they went out*, that they
might be made manifeſt, that
they were not all of us.
20 But ye have an unction
from the Holy One, and ye
know all things.
21 I have not written unto
you becauſe ye know not the
truth, but becauſe ye know it,
and that no lie is of the truth.
22 Who is a liar, but he that
denieth that Jeſus is the Chriſt?
He is antichriſt, that denieth
the Father and the Son.
23 Whoſoever denieth the
Son, the ſame hath not the
Father: [*but*] *he that acknow-
ledgeth the Son hath the Father
alſo.*
24 Let that therefore abide
in you which ye have heard
from the beginning. If that
which ye have heard from the
beginning ſhall remain in you,
ye alſo ſhall continue in the
Son, and in the Father.

25 And this is the promiſe
that he hath promiſed us, *even*
eternal life.
26 Theſe *things* have I writ-
ten unto you, concerning them
that ſeduce you.
27 But the anointing which
ye have received of him abid-
eth in you, and ye need not
that any man teach you: but,
as the ſame anointing teacheth
you of all things, and is truth,
and is no lie; and even as it
hath taught you, ye ſhall abide
in him.
28 And now, little children,
abide in him; that when he
ſhall appear, we may have con-
fidence, and not be aſhamed
before him at his coming.
29 If ye know that he is
righteous, ye know that every
one that doeth righteouſneſs is
born of him.

CHAP. III.

God's ſingular love to us.

BEhold, what manner of love
the Father hath beſtowed
upon us, that we ſhould be call-
ed the ſons of God: therefore
the world knoweth us not, be-
cauſe it knew him not.
2 Beloved, now are we the
ſons of God, and it doth not yet
appear what we ſhall be: but
we know that, when he ſhall
appear, we ſhall be like him;
for we ſhall ſee him as he is.
3 And every man that hath
this hope in him purifieth him-
ſelf, even as he is pure.
4 Whoſoever committeth ſin
tranſgreſſeth alſo the law: for
ſin is the tranſgreſſion of the
law.
5 And ye know that he was
manifeſted to take away our
ſins; and in him is no ſin.
6 Whoſoever abideth in him
ſinneth not: whoſoever ſinneth
hath

hath not ſeen him, neither known him.

7 Little children, let no man deceive you. He that doeth righteouſneſs is righteous, even as he is righteous.

He that committeth ſin is of the devil; for the devil ſinneth from the beginning. For this purpoſe the Son of God was manifeſted that he might deſtroy the works of the devil.

9 Whoſoever is born of God doth not commit ſin; for his ſeed remaineth in him: and he cannot ſin, becauſe he is born of God.

10 In this the children of God are manifeſt, and the children of the devil: whoſoever doeth not righteouſneſs is not of God, neither he that loveth not his brother.

11 For this is the meſſage that ye heard from the beginning, that we ſhould love one another.

12 Not as Cain, *who* was of that wicked one, and ſlew his brother. And wherefore ſlew he him? Becauſe his own works were evil, and his brother's righteous.

13 Marvel not, my brethren, if the world hate you.

14 We know that we have paſſed from death unto life, becauſe we love the brethren. He that loveth not *his* brother abideth in death.

15 Whoſoever hateth his brother is a murderer: and ye know that no murderer hath eternal life abiding in him.

16 Hereby perceive we the love *of God*, becauſe he laid down his life for us: and we ought to lay down *our* lives for the brethren.

17 But whoſo hath this world's good, and ſeeth his brother have need, and ſhutteth up his bowels *of compaſſion* from him, how dwelleth the love of God in him?

18 My little children, let us not love in word, neither in tongue; but in deed and in truth.

19 And hereby we know that we are of the truth, and ſhall aſſure our hearts before him.

20 For if our heart condemn us, God is greater than our heart, and knoweth all things.

21 Beloved, if our heart condemn us not, *then* have we confidence toward God.

22 And whatſoever we aſk, we receive of him, becauſe we keep his commandments, and do thoſe things that are pleaſing in his ſight.

23 And this is his commandment, That we ſhould believe on the name of his Son Jeſus Chriſt, and love one another, as he gave us commandment.

24 And he that keepeth his commandments dwelleth in him, and he in him. And hereby we know that he abideth in us, by the Spirit which he hath given us.

CHAP. IV.

Againſt believing all teachers.

BEloved, believe not every ſpirit, but try the ſpirits whether they are of God: becauſe many falſe prophets are gone out into the world.

2 Hereby know ye the Spirit of God: Every ſpirit that confeſſeth that Jeſus Chriſt is come in the fleſh, is of God:

3 A
P

feſſeth not that Jeſus Chriſt is
come in the fleſh, is not of
God. And this is that *ſpirit* of
antichriſt, whereof ye have
heard that it ſhould come, and
even now already is it in the
world.
4 Ye are of God, little chil-
dren, and have overcome
them: becauſe greater is he
that is in you, than he that is
in the world.
5 They are of the world:
therefore ſpeak they of the
world, and the world heareth
them.
6 We are of God. He that
knoweth God heareth us: he
that is not of God heareth not
us. Hereby know we the ſpirit
of truth, and the ſpirit of error.
7 Beloved, let us love one
another, for love is of God;
and every one that loveth, is
born of God, and knoweth
God.
8 He that loveth not know-
eth not God; for God is love.
9 In this was manifeſted the
love of God toward us, be-
cauſe that God ſent his only
begotten Son into the world,
that we might live through
him.
10 Herein is love, not that
we loved God, but that he lov-
ed us, and ſent his Son *to be*
the propitiation for our ſins.
11 Beloved, if God ſo loved
us, we ought alſo to love one
another.
12 No man hath [illegible] God
at any time. [illegible] we love one
another, [illegible] dwelleth in us,
and his love is perfected in
us.
13 Hereby know we that we
dwell in him, and he in us,
becauſe he h[illegible] given us of his
[illegible]

14 And we have ſeen and
do teſtify, that the Father ſent
the Son *to be* the Saviour of the
world.
15 Whoſoever ſhall confeſs
that Jeſus is the Son of God,
God dwelleth in him, and he
in God.
16 And we have known
and believed the love that
God hath to us. God is love,
and he that dwelleth in love,
dwelleth in God, and God in
him.
17 Herein is our love made
perfect, that we may have bold-
neſs in the day of judgement:
becauſe as he is, ſo are we in
this world.
18 There is no fear in love;
but perfect love caſteth out
fear: becauſe fear hath tor-
ment. He that feareth is not
made perfect in love.
19 We love him, becauſe he
firſt loved us.
20 If a man ſay, I love God,
and hateth his brother, he is a
liar: for he that loveth not his
brother whom he hath ſeen,
how can he love God whom
he hath not ſeen?
21 And this commandment
have we from him, That he
who loveth God, love his bro-
ther alſo.

CHAP. V.

The three witneſſes.

WHoſoever believeth that
Jeſus is the Chriſt, is
born of God: and every one
that loveth him that begat,
loveth him alſo that is begot-
ten of him.
2 By this we know that we
love the children of God, when
we love God, and keep his
commandments.
3 For this is the love of God,
that we keep his command-
ments:

ments: and his commandments
are not grievous.
4 For whatsoever is born of
God, overcometh the world:
and this is the victory that
overcometh the world, *even*
our faith.
5 Who is he that overcometh
the world, but he that believ-
eth that Jesus is the Son of
God?
6 This is he that came by
water and blood, *even* Jesus
Christ; not by water only, but
by water and blood. And it is
the Spirit that beareth witness,
because the Spirit is truth.
7 For there are three that
bear record in heaven, the Fa-
ther, the Word, and the Holy
Ghost: and these three are one.
8 And there are three that
bear witness in earth, the spirit,
and the water, and the blood:
and these three agree in one.
9 If we receive the witness
of men, the witness of God is
greater: for this is the witness
of God, which he hath testified
of his Son.
10 He that believeth on the
Son of God, hath the witness
in himself: he that believeth
not God, hath made him a liar,
because he believeth not the
record that God gave of his
Son.
11 And this is the record, that
God hath given to us eternal
life, and this life is in his Son.
12 He that hath the Son,
hath life; *and* he that hath not
the Son of God, hath not life.
13 These things have I writ-
ten unto you that believe on
the name of the Son of God;
that ye may know that ye have
eternal life, and that ye may
believe on the name of the Son
of God.
14 And this is the confidence
that we have in him, that if we
ask any thing according to his
will he heareth us:
15 And if we know that he
hear us, whatsoever we ask, we
know that we have the peti-
tions that we desired of him.
16 If any man see his bro-
ther sin a sin *which is* not unto
death, he shall ask, and he shall
give him life for them that sin
not unto death. There is a sin
unto death: I do not say that
he shall pray for it.
17 All unrighteousness is
sin: and there is a sin not un-
to death.
18 We know that whosoever
is born of God sinneth not;
but he that is begotten of God
keepeth himself, and that wick-
ed one toucheth him not.
19 *And* we know that we are
of God, and the whole world
lieth in wickedness.
20 And we know that the
Son of God is come, and hath
given us an understanding, that
we may know him that is true.
And we are in him that is true,
even in his Son Jesus Christ.
This is the true God, and eter-
nal life.
21 Little children, keep your-
selves from idols. Amen.

An elect lady, &c. exhorted.

THE elder unto the
elect lady, and her chil-
dren, whom I love in
the truth, and not I only, but
alſo all they that have known
the truth;
2 For the truth's ſake, which
dwelleth in us, and ſhall be
with us for ever.
3 Grace be with you, mercy,
and peace from God the Fa-
ther, and from the Lord Jeſus
Chriſt, the Son of the Father, in
truth and love.
4 I rejoiced greatly that I
found of thy children walking
in truth, as we have received
a commandment from the Fa-
ther.
5 And now I beſeech thee,
lady, not as though I wrote a
new commandment unto thee,
but that which we had from
the beginning, that we love
one another.
6 And this is love, that we
walk after his commandments.
This is the commandment, That,
as ye have heard from the be-
ginning, ye ſhould walk in it.
7 For many deceivers are
entered into the world, who
confeſs not that Jeſus Chriſt is
come in the fleſh. This is a
deceiver and an antichriſt.
8 Look to yourſelves, that
we loſe not thoſe things which
we have wrought, but that we
receive a full reward.
9 Whoſoever tranſgreſſeth,
and abideth not in the doctrine
of Chriſt, hath not God. He
that abideth in the doctrine of
Chriſt, he hath both the Father
and the Son.
10 If there come any unto
you, and bring not this doc-
trine, receive him not into *your*
houſe, neither bid him God
ſpeed:
11 For he that biddeth him
God ſpeed, is partaker of his
evil deeds.
12 Having many things to
write unto you, I would not
write with paper and ink: but
I truſt to come unto you, and
ſpeak face to face, that our joy
may be full.
13 The children of thy elect
ſiſter greet thee. Amen.

The Third Epiſtle of JOHN.

Gaius' piety commended.

THE elder unto the well-
beloved Gaius, whom I
love in the truth.
2 Beloved, I wiſh, above all
things [illegible] thou mayeſt proſ-
[illegible] in health, even as
[illegible]ſpereth.
[illegible] rejoiced greatly
[illegible]ethren came and
teſtified of the truth that is in
thee, even as thou walkeſt in
the truth.
4 I have no greater joy than
to hear that my children walk
in truth.
5 Beloved, thou doeſt faith-
fully whatſoever thou doeſt to
the brethren, and to ſtrang-
ers;

6 Which

6 Which have borne witneſs
of thy charity before the
church: whom if thou bring
forward on their journey after a
godly ſort, thou ſhalt do well:
7 Becauſe that for his name's
ſake they went forth, taking
nothing of the Gentiles.
8 We therefore ought to re-
ceive ſuch, that we might be
fellowhelpers to the truth.
9 I wrote unto the church:
but Diotrephes, who loveth to
have the preeminence among
them, receiveth us not.
10 Wherefore, if I come, I
will remember his deeds which
he doeth, prating againſt us
with malicious words: and not
content therewith, neither doth
he himſelf receive the brethren,
and forbiddeth them that
would, and caſteth *them* out of
the church.
11 Beloved, follow not that
which is evil, but that which is
good. He that doeth good is
of God: but he that doeth evil
hath not ſeen God.
12 Demetrius hath good re-
port of all *men*, and of the
truth itſelf: yea, and we *alſo*
bear record; and ye know that
our record is true.
13 I had many things to
write, but I will not with ink
and pen write unto thee:
14 But I truſt I ſhall ſhortly
ſee thee, and we ſhall ſpeak face
to face. Peace *be* to thee. *Our*
friends ſalute thee. Greet the
friends by name.

The general Epiſtle of JUDE.

Of conſtancy in the faith.

JUDE, the ſervant of Je-
ſus Chriſt, and brother of
James, to them that are
ſanctified by God the Father,
and preſerved in Jeſus Chriſt,
and called:
2 Mercy unto you and peace
and love be multiplied.
3 Beloved, when I gave all
diligence to write unto you of
the common ſalvation, it was
needful for me to write unto
you, and exhort *you*, that ye
ſhould earneſtly contend for
the faith which was once deli-
vered unto the ſaints.
4 For there are certain men
crept in unawares, who were
before of old ordained to this
condemnation, ungodly men,
turning the grace of our God
into laſciviouſneſs, and deny-
ing the only Lord God, and
our Lord Jeſus Chriſt.
5 I will therefore put you in
remembrance, though ye once
knew this, how that the Lord
having ſaved the people out of
the land of Egypt, afterward
deſtroyed them that believed
not.
6 And the angels which kept
not their firſt eſtate, but left
their own habitation, he hath
reſerved in everlaſting chains
under darkneſs, unto the judge-
ment of the great day.
7 Even as Sodom and Gomor-
rha, and the cities about them in
like manner, giving themſelves
over to fornication, and going
after ſtrange fleſh, are ſet forth
for an example, ſuffering the
vengeance of eternal fire.
8 Likewiſe alſo theſe *filthy*
dreamers defile the fleſh, de-
ſpiſe dominion, and ſpeak evil
of dignities.

9 Yet Michael the archangel, when contending with the devil he diſputed about the body of Moſes, durſt not bring againſt him a railing accuſation, but ſaid, The Lord rebuke thee.

10 But theſe ſpeak evil of thoſe things which they know not: but what they know naturally, as brute beaſts, in thoſe things they corrupt themſelves.

11 Woe unto them! for they have gone in the way of Cain, and ran greedily after the error of Balaam for reward, and periſhed in the gainſaying of Core.

12 Theſe are ſpots in your feaſts of charity, when they feaſt with you, feeding themſelves without fear: clouds *they are* without water, carried about of winds; trees whoſe fruit withereth; without fruit, twice dead, plucked up by the roots:

13 Raging waves of the ſea, foaming out their own ſhame; wandering ſtars to whom is reſerved the blackneſs of darkneſs for ever.

14 And Enoch alſo, the ſeventh from Adam, propheſied of theſe, ſaying, Behold, the Lord cometh with ten thouſand of his ſaints,

15 To execute judgement upon all, and to convince all that are ungodly among them, of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard *ſpeeches*, which ungodly ſinners have ſpoken againſt him.

16 Theſe are murmurers, complainers, walking after their own luſts; and their mouth ſpeaketh great ſwelling words, having men's perſons in admiration becauſe of advantage.

17 But, beloved, remember ye the words which were ſpoken before of the apoſtles of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt;

18 How that they told you there ſhould be mockers in the laſt time, who ſhould walk after their own ungodly luſts.

19 Theſe be they who ſeparate themſelves, ſenſual, having not the Spirit.

20 But ye, beloved, building up yourſelves on your moſt holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghoſt,

21 Keep yourſelves in the love of God, looking for the mercy of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt unto eternal life.

22 And of ſome have compaſſion, making a difference:

23 And others ſave with fear, pulling *them* out of the fire; hating even the garment ſpotted by the fleſh.

24 Now unto him that is able to keep you from falling, and to preſent *you* faultleſs before the preſence of his glory with exceeding joy,

25 To the only wiſe God our Saviour, *be* glory and majeſty, dominion and power, both now and ever. Amen.

The

The Revelation of St. JOHN the Divine.

CHAP. I.

Of the coming of Chriſt.

THE Revelation of Jeſus
Chriſt, which God gave
unto him to ſhew unto his ſer-
vants things which muſt ſhort-
ly come to paſs; and he ſent
and ſignified *it* by his angel un-
to his ſervant John:
2 Who bare record of the
word of God, and of the teſti-
mony of Jeſus Chriſt, and of
all things that he ſaw.
3 Bleſſed *is* he that readeth,
and they that hear the words
of this prophecy, and keep
thoſe things which are written
therein: for the time *is* at
hand.
4 JOHN to the ſeven churches
which are in Aſia: Grace
be unto you, and peace,
from him which is, and which
was, and which is to come; and
from the ſeven Spirits which
are before his throne;
5 And from Jeſus Chriſt, *who*
is the faithful witneſs, *and* the
firſt begotten of the dead, and
the prince of the kings of the
earth. Unto him that loved us,
and waſhed us from our ſins in
his own blood,
6 And hath made us kings
and prieſts unto God and his
Father; to him *be* glory and
dominion for ever and ever.
Amen.
7 Behold, he cometh with
clouds; and every eye ſhall ſee
him, and they *alſo* which
pierced him: and all kin-
dreds of the earth ſhall wail
becauſe of him. Even ſo,
Amen.
8 I am Alpha and Omega,
the beginning and the ending,
ſaith the Lord, which is, and
which was, and which is to
come, the Almighty.
9 I John, who alſo am your
brother, and companion in tri-
bulation, and in the kingdom
and patience of Jeſus Chriſt,
was in the iſle that is called
Patmos, for the word of God,
and for the teſtimony of Jeſus
Chriſt.
10 I was in the Spirit on the
Lord's day; and heard behind
me a great voice, as of a trum-
pet,
11 Saying, I am Alpha and
Omega, the firſt and the laſt:
and, What thou ſeeſt, write in
a book, and ſend *it* unto the
ſeven churches which are in
Aſia; unto Epheſus, and unto
Smyrna, and unto Pergamos,
and unto Thyatira, and unto
Sardis, and unto Philadelphia,
and unto Laodicea.
12 And I turned to ſee the
voice that ſpake with me. And
being turned, I ſaw ſeven gold-
en candleſticks;
13 And in the midſt of the
ſeven candleſticks, *one* like un-
to the Son of man clothed
with a garment down to the
foot, and girt about the paps
with a golden gridle.
14 His head and his hairs
were white like wool, as white
as ſnow; and his eyes *were* as
a flame of fire;
15 And his feet like unto
fine braſs, as if they burned in
a furnace; and his voice as the
ſound of many waters.
16 And he had in his right
hand ſeven ſtars: and out of
his mouth went a ſharp two-
edged ſword: and his coun-
tenance *was* as the ſun ſhineth
in his ſtrength.

17 And

17 And when I ſaw him, I fell at his feet as dead. And he laid his right hand upon me, ſaying unto me, Fear not, I am the firſt and the laſt:

18 *I am* he that liveth, and was dead: and, behold, I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the keys of hell and of death.

19 Write the things which thou haſt ſeen, and the things which are, and the things which ſhall be hereafter;

20 The myſtery of the ſeven ſtars whch thou ſaweſt in my right hand, and the ſeven golden candleſticks. The ſeven ſtars are the angels of the ſeven churches: and the ſeven candleſticks which thou ſaweſt are the ſeven churches.

CHAP. II.

To the church of Epheſus, &c.

UNTO the angel of the church of Epheſus write; Theſe things ſaith he that holdeth the ſeven ſtars in his right hand, who walketh in the midſt of the ſeven golden candleſticks;

2 I know thy works, and thy labour, and thy patience, and how thou canſt not bear them which are evil: and thou haſt tried them which ſay they are apoſtles, and are not; and haſt found them liars:

3 And haſt borne, and haſt patience, and for my name's ſake haſt laboured, and haſt not fainted.

4 Nevertheleſs I have *ſomewhat* againſt thee, becauſe thou haſt left thy firſt love.

5 Remember therefore from whence thou art fallen, and repent, and do the firſt works: or elſe I will come unto thee quickly, and will remove thy candleſtick out of his place, except thou repent.

6 But this thou haſt, that thou hateſt the deeds of the Nicolaitanes, which I alſo hate.

7 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit ſaith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midſt of the paradiſe of God.

8 And unto the angel of the church in Smyrna write; Theſe things ſaith the firſt and the laſt, which was dead and is alive;

9 I know thy works and tribulation, and poverty (but thou art rich) and *I know* the blaſphemy of them which ſay they are Jews, and are not, but *are* the ſynagogue of Satan.

10 Fear none of thoſe things which thou ſhalt ſuffer. Behold the devil ſhall caſt *ſome* of you into priſon, that ye may be tried: and ye ſhall have tribulation ten days: be thou faithful unto death, and I will give thee a crown of life.

11 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit ſaith unto the churches; He that overcometh ſhall not be hurt of the ſecond death.

12 And to the angel of the church in Pergamos write; Theſe things ſaith he which hath the ſharp ſword with two edges;

13 I know thy works, and where thou dwelleſt, *even* where Satan's ſeat *is:* and thou holdeſt faſt my name, and haſt not denied my faith, even in thoſe days wherein Antipas *was* my faithful martyr, who was ſlain among you where Satan dwelleth.

14 But I have a few things againſt thee, becauſe thou haſt there

... them that hold the doc-
trine of Balaam, who taught
Balak to caſt a ſtumbling-
block before the children of
Iſrael, to eat things ſacrificed
unto idols, and to commit for-
nication.
15 So haſt thou alſo them
that hold the doctrine of the
Nicolaitanes, which thing I
hate.
16 Repent; or elſe I will
come unto thee quickly, and
will fight againſt them with the
ſword of my mouth.
17 He that hath an ear, let
him hear what the Spirit ſaith
unto the churches; To him
that overcometh will I give to
eat of the hidden manna, and
will give him a white ſtone,
and in the ſtone a new name
written, which no man know-
eth, ſaving he that receiveth *it*.
18 And unto the angel of
the church in Thyatira write;
Theſe things ſaith the Son of
God, who hath his eyes like
unto a flame of fire, and his
feet *are* like fine braſs;
19 I know thy works, and cha-
rity, and ſervice, and faith, and
thy patience, and thy works; and
the laſt *to be* more than the firſt.
20 Notwithſtanding I have
a few things againſt thee, be-
cauſe thou ſuffereſt that woman
Jezebel, which calleth herſelf
a propheteſs, to teach and to
ſeduce my ſervants to commit
fornication, and to eat things
ſacrificed unto idols.
21 And I gave her ſpace to
repent of her fornication, and
ſhe repented not.
22 Behold, I will caſt her in-
to a bed, and them that com-
mit adultery with her into
great tribulation, except they
repent of their deeds.
23 And I will kill her chil-
dren with death; and all the
churches ſhall know that I am
he which ſearcheth the reins
and hearts: and I will give un-
to every one of you according
to your works.
24 But unto you I ſay, and
unto the reſt in Thyatira, as
many as have not this doctrine,
and which have not known the
depths of Satan, as they ſpeak:
I will put upon you none other
burden.
25 But that which ye have
already, hold faſt till I come.
26 And he that overcometh,
and keepeth my works unto
the end, to him will I give
power over the nations:
27 And he ſhall rule them
with a rod of iron: as the veſ-
ſels of a potter ſhall they be
broken to ſhivers: even as I
received of my Father.
28 And I will give him the
morning ſtar.
29 He that hath an ear, let
him hear what the Spirit ſaith
unto the churches.

CHAP. III.

To the church of Sardis, &c.

AND unto the angel of the
church in Sardis write;
Theſe things ſaith he that
hath the ſeven Spirits of God,
and the ſeven ſtars; I know
thy works, that thou haſt a
name that thou liveſt, and art
dead.
2 Be watchful, and ſtrength-
en the things which remain
that are ready to die: for I
have not found thy works per-
fect before God.
3 Remember therefore how
thou haſt received and heard,
and hold faſt, and repent. If
therefore thou ſhalt not watch,
I will come on thee as a thief,

and thou ſhalt not know what hour I will come upon thee.

4 Thou haſt a few names even in Sardis, which have not defiled their garments; and they ſhall walk with me in white: for they are worthy.

5 He that overcometh, the ſame ſhall be clothed in white raiment; and I will not blot out his name out of the book of life, but I will confeſs his name before my Father, and before his angels.

6 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit ſaith unto the churches.

7 And to the angel of the church in Philadelphia write; Theſe things ſaith he that is holy, he is that true; he that hath the key of David; he that openeth, and no man ſhutteth; and ſhutteth, and no man openeth;

8 I know thy works: behold, I have ſet before thee an open door, and no man can ſhut it: for thou haſt a little ſtrength, and haſt kept my word, and haſt not denied my name.

9 Behold, I will make them of the ſynagogue of Satan, which ſay they are Jews, and are not, but do lie; behold, I will make them to come and worſhip before thy feet, and to know that I have loved thee.

10 Becauſe thou haſt kept the word of my patience, I alſo will keep thee from the hour of temptation, which ſhall come upon all the world, to try them that dwell upon the earth.

11 Behold, I come quickly: hold that faſt which thou haſt, that no man take thy crown.

12 Him that overcometh will I make a pillar in the temple of my God, and he ſhall go no more out: and I will write upon him the name of my God, and the name of the city of my God, *which is* new Jeruſalem, which cometh down out of heaven, from my God: and *I will write upon him* my new name.

13 He that hath an ear, let him hear what the Spirit ſaith unto the churches.

14 And unto the angel of the church of the Laodiceans write; Theſe things ſaith the Amen, the faithful and true witneſs, the beginning of the creation of God;

15 I know thy works, that thou art neither cold nor hot; I would thou wert cold or hot.

16 So then becauſe thou art lukewarm, and neither cold nor hot, I will ſpue thee out of my mouth.

17 Becauſe thou ſayeſt, I am rich, and increaſed with goods, and have need of nothing; and knoweſt not that thou art wretched, and miſerable, and poor, and blind, and naked:

18 I counſel thee to buy of me gold tried in the fire, that thou mayeſt be rich; and white raiment, that thou mayeſt be clothed, and *that* the ſhame of thy nakedneſs do not appear; and anoint thine eyes with eyeſalve, that thou mayeſt ſee.

19 As many as I love I rebuke and chaſten: be zealous therefore, and repent.

20 Behold, I ſtand at the door, and knock: if any man hear my voice, and open the door, I will come in to him, and will ſup with him, and he with me.

21 To him that overcometh
will I grant to ſit with me in
my throne, even as I alſo over-
came, and am ſet down with
my Father in his throne.
22 He that hath an ear, let
him hear what the Spirit ſaith
unto the churches.

CHAP. IV.

The viſion of God's throne.

AFTER this I looked, and,
behold, a door *was* open-
ed in heaven: and the firſt
voice which I heard *was* as it
were of a trumpet talking with
me; which ſaid, Come up
hither, and I will ſhew thee
things which muſt be here-
after.
2 And immediately I was in
the ſpirit: and, behold, a throne
was ſet in heaven, and *one* ſat
on the throne.
3 And he that ſat was to
look upon like a jaſper, and
a ſardine ſtone: and *there was*
a rainbow round about the
throne, in ſight like unto an
emerald.
4 And round about the
throne *were* four and twenty
ſeats: and upon the ſeats I ſaw
four and twenty elders ſitting,
clothed in white raiment; and
they had on their heads crowns
of gold.
5 And out of the throne pro-
ceeded lightnings, and thun-
derings, and voices. And *there*
were ſeven lamps of fire burn-
ing before the throne, which
are the ſeven Spirits of God.
6 And before the throne *there*
was a ſea of glaſs, like unto cry-
ſtal: and in the midſt of the
throne, and round about the
throne, *were* four beaſts full of
eyes before and behind.
7 And the firſt beaſt *was*
like a lion, and the ſecond beaſt
like a calf, and the third beaſt
had a face as a man, and the
fourth beaſt *was* like a flying
eagle.
8 And the four beaſts had
each of them ſix wings about
him: and *they were* full of eyes
within: and they reſt not day
and night, ſaying, Holy, holy,
holy, Lord God Almighty,
which was, and is, and is to
come.
9 And when thoſe beaſts
give glory, and honour, and
thanks to him that ſat on the
throne, who liveth for ever and
ever,
10 The four and twenty el-
ders fall down before him that
ſat on the throne, and worſhip
him that liveth for ever and
ever, and caſt their crowns be-
fore the throne, ſaying,
11 Thou art worthy, O
Lord, to receive glory, and
honour, and power: for thou
haſt created all things, and for
thy pleaſure they are and were
created.

CHAP. V.

The book with ſeven ſeals.

AND I ſaw in the right hand
of him that ſat on the
throne a book written within
and on the back ſide, ſealed
with ſeven ſeals.
2 And I ſaw a ſtrong angel
proclaiming with a loud voice,
Who is worthy to open the
book, and to looſe the ſeals
thereof?
3 And no man in heaven,
nor in earth, neither under the
earth, was able to open the
book, neither to look thereon.
4 And I wept much, becauſe
no man was found worthy to
open and to read the book,
neither to look thereon.
5 And one of the elders
ſaith

ſaith unto me, Weep not: be-
hold, the Lion of the tribe of
Juda, the Root of David, hath
prevailed to open the book, and
to looſe the ſeven ſeals thereof.
6 And I beheld, and, lo, in
the midſt of the throne, and
of the four beaſts, and in the
midſt of the elders, ſtood a
Lamb, as it had been ſlain,
having ſeven horns, and ſeven
eyes, which are the ſeven Spi-
rits of God ſent forth into all
the earth.
7 And he came and took the
book out of the right hand of
him that ſat upon the throne.
8 And when he had taken the
book, the four beaſts, and four
and twenty elders fell down
before the Lamb, having every
one of them harps and golden
vials full of odours, which are
the prayers of ſaints.
9 And they ſung a new ſong,
ſaying, Thou art worthy to
take the book, and to open the
ſeals thereof: for thou waſt
ſlain, and haſt redeemed us to
God, by thy blood, out of
every kindred, and tongue, and
people, and nation;
10 And haſt made us unto
our God kings and prieſts: and
we ſhall reign on the earth.
11 And I beheld, and I
heard the voice of many an-
gels round about the throne,
and the beaſts, and the elders:
and the number of them was
ten thouſand times ten thou-
ſand, and thouſands of thou-
ſands;
12 Saying with a loud voice,
Worthy is the Lamb that was
ſlain to receive power, and
riches, and wiſdom, and ſtrength,
and honour, and glory, and
bleſſing.
13 And every creature which
is in heaven, and on the earth,
and under the earth, and ſuch
as are in the ſea, and all that are
in them, heard I ſaying, Bleſſ-
ing, and honour, and glory, and
power, *be* unto him that ſitteth
upon the throne, and unto the
Lamb for ever and ever.
14 And the four beaſts ſaid,
Amen. And the four *and*
twenty elders fell down and
worſhipped him that liveth for
ever and ever.

CHAP. VI.

Six of the ſeals opened.

AND I ſaw when the Lamb
opened one of the ſeals,
and I heard, as it were the noiſe
of thunder, one of the four
beaſts, ſaying, Come and ſee.
2 And I ſaw, and, behold, a
white horſe: and he that ſat on
him had a bow; and a crown
was given unto him: and he
went forth conquering, and to
conquer.
3 And when he had opened
the ſecond ſeal, I heard the ſe-
cond beaſt ſay, Come and ſee.
4 And there went out ano-
ther horſe *that was* red: and
power was given to him that
ſat thereon to take peace from
the earth, and that they ſhould
kill one another: and there
was given unto him a great
ſword.
5 And when he had opened
the third ſeal, I heard the
third beaſt ſay, Come and
ſee. And I beheld, and, lo, a
black horſe: and he that ſat
on him had a pair of balances
in his hand.
6 And I heard a voice in the
midſt of the four beaſts ſay, A
meaſure of wheat for a penny,
and three meaſures of barley
for a penny; and *ſee* thou hurt
not the oil and the wine.

7 And when he had opened the fourth ſeal, I heard the voice of the fourth beaſt ſay, Come and ſee.

8 And I looked, and, behold, a pale horſe: and his name that ſat on him was Death, and hell followed with him. And power was given unto them over the fourth part of the earth, to kill with ſword, and with hunger, and with death, and with the beaſts of the earth.

9 And when he had opened the fifth ſeal, I ſaw under the altar the ſouls of them that were ſlain for the word of God, and for the teſtimony which they held:

10 And they cried with a loud voice, ſaying, How long, O Lord, holy and true, doſt thou not judge and avenge our blood on them that dwell on the earth?

11 And white robes were given unto every one of them; and it was ſaid unto them, that they ſhould reſt yet for a little ſeaſon, until their fellowſervants alſo, and their brethren that ſhould be killed as they *were*, ſhould be fulfilled.

12 And I beheld when he had opened the ſixth ſeal, and, lo, there was a great earthquake; and the ſun became black as ſackcloth of hair, and the moon became as blood;

13 And the ſtars of heaven fell unto the earth, even as a fig tree caſteth her untimely figs, when ſhe is ſhaken of a mighty wind.

14 And the heaven departed as a ſcrowl when it is rolled together; and every mountain and iſland were moved out of their places.

15 And the kings of the earth, and the great men, and the rich men, and the chief captains, and the mighty men, and every bondman, and every free man, hid themſelves in the dens, and in the rocks of the mountains;

16 And ſaid to the mountains and rocks, Fall on us, and hide us from the face of him that ſitteth on the throne, and from the wrath of the Lamb:

17 For the great day of his wrath is come; and who ſhall be able to ſtand?

CHAP. VII.

The number of the ſealed.

AND after theſe things, I ſaw four angels ſtanding on the four corners of the earth, holding the four winds of the earth, that the wind ſhould not blow on the earth, nor on the ſea, nor on any tree.

2 And I ſaw another angel aſcending from the eaſt, having the ſeal of the living God. And he cried with a loud voice to the four angels, to whom it was given to hurt the earth and the ſea,

3 Saying, Hurt not the earth, neither the ſea, nor the trees, till we have ſealed the ſervants of our God in their foreheads.

4 And I heard the number of them which were ſealed: *and there were* ſealed an hundred *and* forty *and* four thouſand, of all the tribes of the children of Iſrael.

5 Of the tribe of Juda *were* ſealed twelve thouſand. Of the tribe of Reuben *were* ſealed twelve thouſand. Of the tribe of Gad *were* ſealed twelve thouſand.

6 Of

6 Of the tribe of Aſer *were* ſealed twelve thouſand. Of the tribe of Nepthalim *were* ſealed twelve thouſand. Of the tribe of Manaſſes *were* ſealed twelve thouſand.

7 Of the tribe of Simeon *were* ſealed twelve thouſand. Of the tribe of Levi *were* ſealed twelve thouſand. Of the tribe of Iſſachar *were* ſealed twelve thouſand.

8 Of the tribe of Zabulon *were* ſealed twelve thouſand. Of the tribe of Joſeph *were* ſealed twelve thouſand. Of the tribe of Benjamin *were* ſealed twelve thouſand.

9 After this I beheld, and, lo, a great multitude, which no man could number, of all nations, and kindreds, and people, and tongues, ſtood before the throne, and before the Lamb, clothed with white robes, and palms in their hands;

10 And cried with a loud voice, ſaying, Salvation to our God which ſitteth upon the throne, and unto the Lamb.

11 And all the angels ſtood round about the throne, and *about* the elders, and the four beaſts, and fell before the throne on their faces, and worſhipped God,

12 Saying, Amen: Bleſſing, and glory, and wiſdom, and thankſgiving, and honour, and power, and might *be* unto our God for ever and ever. Amen.

13 And one of the elders anſwered, ſaying unto me, What are theſe which are arrayed in white robes? and whence came they?

14 And I ſaid unto him, Sir, thou knoweſt. And he ſaid to me, Theſe are they which came out of great tribulation, and have waſhed their robes, and made them white in the blood of the Lamb.

15 Therefore are they before the throne of God: and ſerve him day and night in his temple: and he that ſitteth on the throne ſhall dwell among them.

16 They ſhall hunger no more, neither thirſt any more: neither ſhall the ſun light on them, nor any heat.

17 For the Lamb which is in the midſt of the throne ſhall feed them, and ſhall lead them unto living fountains of waters; and God ſhall wipe away all tears from their eyes.

CHAP. VIII.

Seven angels with trumpets.

AND when he had opened the ſeventh ſeal, there was ſilence in heaven about the ſpace of half an hour.

2 And I ſaw the ſeven angels which ſtood before God: and to them were given ſeven trumpets.

3 And another angel came and ſtood at the altar, having a golden cenſer; and there was given unto him much incenſe, that he ſhould offer *it* with the prayers of all ſaints, upon the golden altar which was before the throne.

4 And the ſmoke of the incenſe, *which came* with the prayers of the ſaints, aſcended up before God, out of the angel's hand.

5 And the angel took the cenſer, and filled it with fire of the altar, and caſt *it* into the earth: and there were voices, and thunderings, and lightnings, and an earthquake.

6 And

6 And the ſeven angels which
had the ſeven trumpets prepar-
ed themſelves to ſound.
7 The firſt angel ſounded,
and there followed hail, and
fire mingled with blood, and
they were caſt upon the earth:
and the third part of trees was
burnt up, and all green graſs
was burnt up.
8 And the ſecond angel
ſounded, and as it were a great
mountain burning with fire
was caſt into the ſea: and the
third part of the ſea became
blood;
9 And the third part of the
creatures which were in the
ſea, and had life, died; and
the third part of the ſhips were
deſtroyed.
10 And the third angel ſound-
ed, and there fell a great ſtar
from heaven, burning as it were
a lamp, and it fell upon the third
part of the rivers, and upon
the fountains of waters;
11 And the name of the ſtar
is called Wormwood: and the
third part of the waters became
wormwood: and many men
died of the waters, becauſe they
were made bitter.
12 And the fourth angel
ſounded, and the third part of
the ſun was ſmitten, and the
third part of the moon, and the
third part of the ſtars; ſo as the
third part of them was darken-
ed, and the day ſhone not for a
third part of it, and the night
likewiſe.
13 And I beheld, and heard
an angel flying through the
midſt of heaven, ſaying with a
loud voice, Woe, woe, woe, to
the inhabiters of the earth, by
reaſon of the other voices of
the trumpet of the three angels
which are yet to ſound!

CHAP. IX.

A ſtar falleth from heaven.

AND the fifth angel ſound-
ed, and I ſaw a ſtar fall
from heaven unto the earth:
and to him was given the key
of the bottomleſs pit.
2 And he opened the bot-
tomleſs pit, and there aroſe a
ſmoke out of the pit, as the
ſmoke of a great furnace; and
the ſun and the air were dark-
ened by reaſon of the ſmoke of
the pit.
3 And there came out of the
ſmoke locuſts upon the earth:
and unto them was given pow-
er, as the ſcorpions of the earth
have power.
4 And it was commanded
them that they ſhould not hurt
the graſs of the earth, neither
any green thing, neither any
tree; but only thoſe men which
have not the ſeal of God in
their foreheads.
5 And to them it was given
that they ſhould not kill them,
but that they ſhould be tor-
mented five months: and their
torment *was* as the torment of
a ſcorpion when he ſtriketh a
man.
6 And in thoſe days ſhall men
ſeek death, and ſhall not find
it; and ſhall deſire to die, and
death ſhall flee from them.
7 And the ſhapes of the lo-
cuſts *were* like unto horſes pre-
pared unto battle; and on their
heads *were* as it were crowns
like gold, and their faces *were*
as the faces of men.
8 And they had hair as the
hair of women, and their teeth
were as *the teeth* of lions.
9 And they had breaſt-
plates as it were breaſtplates
of iron; and the ſound of their
wings *was* as the ſound of
cha-

chariots of many horſes run-
ning to battle.
10 And they had tails like
unto ſcorpions, and there were
ſtings in their tails: and their
power *was* to hurt men five
months.
11 And they had a king
over them, *which is* the angel
of the bottomleſs pit, whoſe
name in the Hebrew tongue *is*
Abaddon, but in the Greek
tongue hath *his* name Apol-
lyon.
12 One woe is paſt, *and*, be-
hold, there come two woes
more hereafter.
13 And the ſixth angel ſound-
ed, and I heard a voice from
the four horns of the golden
altar which is before God,
14 Saying to the ſixth an-
gel which had the trumpet,
Looſe the four angels which
are bound in the great river
Euphrates.
15 And the four angels were
looſed, which were prepared
for an hour, and a day, and a
month, and a year, for to ſlay
the third part of men.
16 And the number of the
army of the horſemen *were*
two hundred thouſand thou-
ſand: and I heard the number
of them.
17 And thus I ſaw the horſes
in the viſion, and them that
ſat on them, having breaſt-
plates of fire, and of jacinth,
and brimſtone: and the heads
of the horſes *were* as the heads
of lions; and out of their
mouths iſſued fire and ſmoke
and brimſtone.
18 By theſe three was the
third part of men killed, by the
fire, and by the ſmoke, and by
the brimſtone, which iſſued out
of their mouths.
19 For their power is in their
mouth, and in their tails: for
their tails *were* like unto ſer-
pents, and had heads, and with
them they do hurt.
20 And the reſt of the men
which were not killed by theſe
plagues, yet repented not of
the works of their hands, that
they ſhould not worſhip devils,
and idols of gold, and ſilver,
and braſs, and ſtone, and of
wood; which neither can ſee,
nor hear, nor walk:
21 Neither repented they of
their murders, nor of their ſor-
ceries, nor of their fornication,
nor of their thefts.

CHAP. X.

An angel with a book open.

AND I ſaw another mighty
angel come down from
heaven, clothed with a cloud:
and a rainbow *was* upon his
head, and his face *was* as it
were the ſun, and his feet as
pillars of fire:
2 And he had in his hand a
little book open. And he ſet
his right foot upon the ſea, and
his left *foot* on the earth,
3 And cried with a loud
voice, as *when* a lion roareth:
and when he had cried, ſeven
thunders uttered their voices.
4 And when the ſeven thun-
ders had uttered their voices, I
was about to write: and I
heard a voice from heaven,
ſaying unto me, Seal up thoſe
things which the ſeven thunders
uttered, and write them not.
5 And the angel which I ſaw
ſtand upon the ſea, and upon
the earth, lifted up his hand to
heaven,
6 And ſware by him that liv-
eth for ever and ever, who cre-
ated heaven, and the things
that therein are, and the earth,
and

and the things that therein are,
and the ſea, and the things
which are therein, that there
ſhould be time no longer:
7 But in the days of the voice
of the ſeventh angel, when he
ſhall begin to ſound, the myſte-
ry of God ſhould be finiſhed,
as he hath declared to his ſer-
vants the prophets.
8 And the voice which I
heard from heaven ſpake unto
me again, and ſaid, Go, *and*
take the little book which is
open in the hand of the angel
which ſtandeth upon the ſea,
and upon the earth.
9 And I went unto the angel,
and ſaid unto him, Give me the
little book. And he ſaid unto
me, Take *it*, and eat it up; and
it ſhall make thy belly bitter,
but it ſhall be in thy mouth
ſweet as honey.
10 And I took the little book
out of the angel's hand, and
ate it up: and it was in my
mouth ſweet as honey: and as
ſoon as I had eaten it, my bel-
ly was bitter.
11 And he ſaid unto me,
Thou muſt propheſy again be-
fore many peoples, and nations,
and tongues, and kings.

C H A P. XI.

The two witneſſes.

AND there was given me a
reed like unto a rod: and
the angel ſtood, ſaying, Riſe
and meaſure the temple of God
and the altar, and them that
worſhip therein.
2 But the court which is
without the temple leave out,
and meaſure it not: for it is
given unto the Gentiles: and
the holy city ſhall they tread un-
der foot forty *and* two months.
3 And I will give *power*
unto my two witneſſes, and
they ſhall propheſy a thouſand
two hundred *and* threeſcore
days clothed in ſackcloth.
4 Theſe are the two olive
trees, and the two candleſticks,
ſtanding before the God of the
earth.
5 And if any man will hurt
them, fire proceedeth out of
their mouth, and devoureth
their enemies: and if any man
will hurt them, he muſt in this
manner be killed.
6 Theſe have power to ſhut
heaven, that it rain not in the
days of their prophecy: and
have power over waters to
turn them to blood, and to
ſmite the earth with all plagues,
as often as they will.
7 And when they ſhall have
finiſhed their teſtimony, the
beaſt that aſcendeth out of the
bottomleſs pit ſhall make war
againſt them, and ſhall over-
come them, and kill them.
8 And their dead bodies
ſhall lie in the ſtreet of the
great city, which ſpiritually is
called Sodom and Egypt, where
alſo our Lord was crucified.
9 And they of the people,
and kindreds, and tongues, and
nations, ſhall ſee their dead
bodies three days and an half,
and ſhall not ſuffer their dead
bodies to be put in graves.
10 And they that dwell up-
on the earth ſhall rejoice over
them, and make merry, and
ſhall ſend gifts one to another;
becauſe theſe two prophets
tormented them that dwelt on
the earth.
11 And after three days and
an half, the Spirit of life from
God entered into them; and
they ſtood upon their feet, and
great fear fell upon them which
ſaw them.

12 And they heard a great voice from heaven, ſaying unto them, Come up hither. And they aſcended up to heaven in a cloud; and their enemies beheld them.

13 And the ſame hour was there a great earthquake, and the tenth part of the city fell, and in the earthquake were ſlain of men ſeven thouſand: and the remnant were affrighted, and gave glory to the God of heaven.

14 The ſecond woe is paſt; *and*, behold, the third woe cometh quickly.

15 And the ſeventh angel ſounded; and there were great voices in heaven, ſaying, The kingdoms of this world are become *the kingdoms* of our Lord, and of his Chriſt; and he ſhall reign for ever and ever.

16 And the four and twenty elders, which ſat before God on their ſeats, fell upon their faces, and worſhipped God,

17 Saying, We give thee thanks, O Lord God Almighty, which art, and waſt, and art to come; becauſe thou haſt taken to thee thy great power, and haſt reigned.

18 And the nations were angry, and thy wrath is come, and the time of the dead that they ſhould be judged, and that thou ſhouldeſt give reward unto thy ſervants the prophets, and to the ſaints, and them that fear thy name, ſmall and great: and ſhouldeſt deſtroy them which deſtroy the earth.

19 And the temple of God was opened in heaven, and there was ſeen in his temple the ark of his teſtament: and there were lightnings, and voices, and thunderings, and an earthquake, and great hail.

CHAP. XII.

The great red dragon.

AND there appeared a great wonder in heaven; a woman clothed with the ſun, and the moon under her feet, and upon her head a crown of twelve ſtars:

2 And ſhe being with child, cried, travailing in birth, and pained to be delivered.

3 And there appeared another wonder in heaven; and, behold, a great red dragon, having ſeven heads, and ten horns, and ſeven crowns upon his heads.

4 And his tail drew the third part of the ſtars of heaven, and did caſt them to the earth. And the dragon ſtood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as ſoon as it was born.

5 And ſhe brought forth a man child, who was to rule all nations with a rod of iron: and her child was caught up unto God, and *to* his throne.

6 And the woman fled into the wilderneſs, where ſhe hath a place prepared of God, that they ſhould feed her there a thouſand two hundred *and* threeſcore days.

7 And there was war in heaven: Michael and his angels fought againſt the dragon, and the dragon fought and his angels,

8 And prevailed not; neither was their place found any more in heaven.

9 And the great dragon was caſt out, that old ſerpent, called the devil and Satan, which deceiveth the whole world: he was caſt out into the earth, and his angels were caſt out with him.

10 And

10 And I heard a loud voice ſaying in heaven, Now is come ſalvation, and ſtrength, and the kingdom of our God, and the power of his Chriſt: for the accuſer of our brethren is caſt down, which accuſed them before our God day and night.

11 And they overcame him by the blood of the Lamb, and by the word of their teſtimony; and they loved not their lives unto the death.

12 Therefore rejoice, *ye* heavens, and ye that dwell in them. Woe to the inhabiters of the earth and of the ſea! for the devil is come down unto you, having great wrath, becauſe he knoweth that he hath but a ſhort time.

13 And when the dragon ſaw that he was caſt unto the earth, he perſecuted the woman which brought forth the man *child*.

14 And to the woman were given two wings of a great eagle, that ſhe might fly into the wilderneſs into her place, where ſhe is nouriſhed for a time, and times, and half a time, from the face of the ſerpent.

15 And the ſerpent caſt out of his mouth water as a flood after the woman, that he might cauſe her to be carried away of the flood.

16 And the earth helped the woman, and the earth opened her mouth, and ſwallowed up the flood which the dragon caſt out of his mouth.

17 And the dragon was wroth with the woman, and went to make war with the remnant of her ſeed, which keep the commandments of God, and have the teſtimony of Jeſus Chriſt.

CHAP. XIII.

Beaſt with ſeven heads, &c.

AND I ſtood upon the ſand of the ſea, and ſaw a beaſt riſe up out of the ſea, having ſeven heads and ten horns, and upon his horns ten crowns, and upon his heads the name of blaſphemy.

2 And the beaſt which I ſaw was like unto a leopard, and his feet were as *the feet* of a bear, and his mouth as the mouth of a lion: and the dragon gave him his power, and his ſeat, and great authority.

3 And I ſaw one of his heads, as it were wounded to death; and his deadly wound was healed: and all the world wondered after the beaſt.

4 And they worſhipped the dragon which gave power unto the beaſt: and they worſhipped the beaſt, ſaying, Who *is* like unto the beaſt? who is able to make war with him?

5 And there was given unto him a mouth ſpeaking great things, and blaſphemies; and power was given unto him to continue forty *and* two months.

6 And he opened his mouth in blaſphemy againſt God, to blaſpheme his name, and his tabernacle, and them that dwell in heaven.

7 And it was given unto him to make war with the ſaints, and to overcome them: and power was given him over all kindreds, and tongues, and nations.

8 And all that dwell upon the earth ſhall worſhip him, whoſe names are not written in the book of life of the Lamb ſlain from the foundation of the world.

9 If any man have an ear, let him hear.

10 He that leadeth into captivity ſhall go into captivity: he that killeth with the ſword muſt be killed with the ſword. Here is the patience and the faith of the ſaints.

11 And I beheld another beaſt coming up out of the earth: and he had two horns like a lamb, and he ſpake as a dragon.

12 And he exerciſeth all the power of the firſt beaſt before him, and cauſeth the earth, and them which dwell therein, to worſhip the firſt beaſt, whoſe deadly wound was healed.

13 And he doeth great wonders, ſo that he maketh fire come down from heaven on the earth in the ſight of men,

14 And deceiveth them that dwell on the earth by *the means of* thoſe miracles which he had power to do in the ſight of the beaſt; ſaying to them that dwell on the earth, that they ſhould make an image to the beaſt which had the wound by a ſword, and did live.

15 And he had power to give life unto the image of the beaſt, that the image of the beaſt ſhould both ſpeak, and cauſe that as many as would not worſhip the image of the beaſt ſhould be killed.

16 And he cauſeth all, both ſmall and great, rich and poor, free and bond, to receive a mark in their right hand, or in their foreheads:

17 And that no man might buy or ſell, ſave he that had the mark, or the name of the beaſt, or the number of his name.

18 Here is wiſdom. Let him that hath underſtanding count the number of the beaſt: for it is the number of a man; and his number *is* ſix hundred threeſcore *and* ſix.

CHAP. XIV.

The Lamb and his company.

AND I looked, and, lo, a Lamb ſtood on the mount Sion, and with him an hundred forty *and* four thouſand, having his Father's name written in their foreheads.

2 And I heard a voice from heaven, as the voice of many waters, and as the voice of a great thunder: and I heard the voice of harpers harping with their harps:

3 And they ſung as it were a new ſong before the throne, and before the four beaſts, and the elders: and no man could learn that ſong but the hundred *and* forty *and* four thouſand, which were redeemed from the earth.

4 Theſe are they which were not defiled with women; for they are virgins. Theſe are they which follow the Lamb whitherſoever he goeth. Theſe were redeemed from among men, *being* the firſtfruits unto God, and to the Lamb.

5 And in their mouth was found no guile: for they are without fault before the throne of God.

6 And I ſaw another angel fly in the midſt of heaven, having the everlaſting goſpel to preach unto them that dwell on the earth, and to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people,

7 Saying with a loud voice, Fear God, and give glory to him; for the hour of his judgement is come: and worſhip him that made heaven and earth,

and the ſea, and the fountains
of waters.
8 And there followed ano-
ther angel, ſaying, Babylon is
fallen, is fallen, that great city,
becauſe ſhe made all nations
drink of the wine of the wrath
of her fornication.
9 And the third angel fol-
lowed them, ſaying with a loud
voice, If any man worſhip the
beaſt and his image, and receive
his mark in his forehead, or in
his hand,
10 The ſame ſhall drink of
the wine of the wrath of God,
which is poured out without
mixture into the cup of his
indignation; and he ſhall be
tormented with fire and brim-
ſtone in the preſence of the
holy angels, and in the preſence
of the Lamb:
11 And the ſmoke of their
torment aſcendeth up for ever
and ever: and they have no
reſt day nor night, who wor-
ſhip the beaſt and his image,
and whoſoever receiveth the
mark of his name.
12 Here is the patience of
the ſaints: here *are* they that
keep the commandments of
God, and the faith of Jeſus.
13 And I heard a voice from
heaven ſaying unto me, Write,
Bleſſed *are* the dead which die
in the Lord from henceforth:
Yea, ſaith the Spirit, that they
may reſt from their labours;
and their works do follow
them.
14 And I looked, and, behold,
a white cloud, and upon the
cloud *one* ſat like unto the Son
of man, having on his head a
golden crown, and in his hand
a ſharp ſickle.
15 And another angel came
out of the temple, crying with
a loud voice to him that ſat on
the cloud, Thruſt in thy ſickle,
and reap: for the time is come
for thee to reap; for the harveſt
of the earth is ripe.
16 And he that ſat on the
cloud thruſt in his ſickle on
the earth; and the earth was
reaped.
17 And another angel came
out of the temple which is in
heaven, he alſo having a ſharp
ſickle.
18 And another angel came
out from the altar, which had
power over fire; and cried
with a loud cry to him that had
the ſharp ſickle, ſaying, Thruſt
in thy ſharp ſickle, and gather
the cluſters of the vine of the
earth; for her grapes are fully
ripe.
19 And the angel thruſt in his
ſickle into the earth, and ga-
thered the vine of the earth,
and caſt *it* into the great wine-
preſs of the wrath of God.
20 And the winepreſs was
trodden without the city, and
blood came out of the wine-
preſs, even unto the horſe bri-
dles, by the ſpace of a thouſand
and ſix hundred furlongs.

CHAP. XV.

The ſeven laſt plagues.

AND I ſaw another ſign in
heaven, great and mar-
vellous, ſeven angels having
the ſeven laſt plagues; for in
them is filled up the wrath of
God.
2 And I ſaw as it were a ſea
of glaſs mingled with fire: and
them that had gotten the victo-
ry over the beaſt, and over his
image, and over his mark, *and*
over the number of his name,
ſtand on the ſea of glaſs, having
the harps of God.
3 And they ſing the ſong of

Moſes the ſervant of God, and the ſong of the Lamb, ſaying, Great and marvellous *are* thy works, Lord God Almighty; juſt and true *are* thy ways, thou King of ſaints.

4 Who ſhall not fear thee, O Lord, and glorify thy name? for *thou* only *art* holy: for all nations ſhall come and worſhip before thee; for thy judgements are made manifeſt.

5 And after that I looked, and, behold, the temple of the tabernacle of the teſtimony in heaven was opened:

6 And the ſeven angels came out of the temple, having the ſeven plagues clothed in pure and white linen, and having their breaſts girded with golden girdles.

7 And one of the four beaſts gave unto the ſeven angels ſeven golden vials full of the wrath of God, who liveth for ever and ever.

8 And the temple was filled with ſmoke from the glory of God, and from his power: and no man was able to enter into the temple, till the ſeven plagues of the ſeven angels were fulfilled.

CHAP. XVI.

Of the vials full of wrath.

AND I heard a great voice out of the temple, ſaying to the ſeven angels, Go your ways, and pour out the vials of the wrath of God upon the earth.

2 And the firſt went, and poured out his vial upon the earth; and there fell a noiſome and grievous ſore upon the men which had the mark of the beaſt, and *upon* them which worſhipped his image.

3 And the ſecond angel poured out his vial upon the ſea; and it became as the blood of a dead *man:* and every living ſoul died in the ſea.

4 And the third angel poured out his vial upon the rivers and fountains of waters; and they became blood.

5 And I heard the angel of the waters ſay, Thou art righteous, O Lord, which art, and waſt, and ſhalt be, becauſe thou haſt judged thus.

6 For they have ſhed the blood of ſaints and prophets, and thou haſt given them blood to drink; for they are worthy.

7 And I heard another out of the altar ſay, Even ſo, Lord God Almighty, true and righteous *are* thy judgements.

8 And the fourth angel poured out his vial upon the ſun; and power was given unto him to ſcorch men with fire.

9 And men were ſcorched with great heat, and blaſphemed the name of God, which hath power over theſe plagues: and they repented not to give him glory.

10 And the fifth angel poured out his vial upon the ſeat of the beaſt; and his kingdom was full of darkneſs: and they gnawed their tongues for pain,

11 And blaſphemed the God of heaven, becauſe of their pains and their ſores, and repented not of their deeds.

12 And the ſixth angel poured out his vial upon the great river Euphrates: and the water thereof was dried up, that the way of the kings of the eaſt might be prepared.

13 And I ſaw three unclean ſpirits like frogs *come* out of the mouth of the dragon, and out of the mouth of the beaſt, and

out of the mouth of the false
prophet.
14 For they are the spirits of
devils working miracles, *which*
go forth unto the kings of the
earth, and of the whole world,
to gather them to the battle
of that great day of God Al-
mighty.
15 Behold, I come as a thief.
Blessed *is* he that watcheth and
keepeth his garments, lest he
walk naked, and they see his
shame.
16 And he gathered them
together into a place called in
the Hebrew tongue Arma-
geddon.
17 And the seventh angel
poured out his vial into the air;
and there came a great voice out
of the temple of heaven, from
the throne, saying, It is done.
18 And there were voices, and
thunders, and lightnings; and
there was a great earthquake,
such as was not since men were
upon the earth, so mighty an
earthquake, *and* so great.
19 And the great city was
divided into three parts, and
the cities of the nations fell;
and great Babylon came in re-
membrance before God, to give
unto her the cup of the wine of
the fierceness of his wrath.
20 And every island fled
away, and the mountains were
not found.
21 And there fell upon men
a great hail out of heaven,
every stone about the weight of
a talent: and men blasphemed
God because of the plague of
the hail: for the plague there-
of was exceeding great.

CHAP. XVII.

The scarlet whore.

AND there came one of the
seven angels which had
the seven vials, and talked with
me, saying unto me, Come hi-
ther, I will shew unto thee the
judgement of the great whore
that sitteth upon many wa-
ters:
2 With whom the kings of
the earth have committed for-
nication, and the inhabitants
of the earth have been made
drunk with the wine of her
fornication.
3 So he carried me away in
the spirit into the wilderness:
and I saw a woman sit upon a
scarlet coloured beast, full of
names of blasphemy, having
seven heads and ten horns.
4 And the woman was ar-
rayed in purple and scarlet co-
lour, and decked with gold and
precious stones and pearls, hav-
ing a golden cup in her hand
full of abominations and fil-
thiness of her fornication:
5 And upon her forehead
was a name written, MYS-
TERY, BABYLON THE
GREAT, THE MOTHER
OF HARLOTS, AND
ABOMINATIONS OF THE
EARTH.
6 And I saw the woman
drunken with the blood of the
saints, and with the blood of
the martyrs of Jesus: and when
I saw her, I wondered with
great admiration.
7 And the angel said unto me,
Wherefore didst thou marvel?
I will tell thee the mystery of
the woman, and of the beast that
carrieth her, which hath the
seven heads and ten horns.
8 The beast that thou sawest
was, and is not; and shall as-
cend out of the bottomless pit,
and go into perdition: and
they that dwell on the earth
shall wonder, whose names were

not written in the book of life from the foundation of the world, when they behold the beaſt that was, and is not, and yet is.

9 And here *is* the mind which hath wiſdom. The ſeven heads are ſeven mountains, on which the woman ſitteth.

10 And there are ſeven kings: five are fallen, and one is, *and* the other is not yet come; and when he cometh, he muſt continue a ſhort ſpace.

11 And the beaſt that was, and is not, even he is the eighth, and is of the ſeven, and goeth into perdition.

12 And the ten horns which thou ſaweſt are ten kings, which have received no kingdom as yet; but receive power as kings one hour with the beaſt.

13 Theſe have one mind, and ſhall give their power and ſtrength unto the beaſt.

14 Theſe ſhall make war with the Lamb, and the Lamb ſhall overcome them: for he is Lord of lords, and King of kings; and they that are with him *are* called, and choſen, and faithful.

15 And he ſaith unto me, The waters which thou ſaweſt, where the whore ſitteth, are peoples, and multitudes, and nations, and tongues.

16 And the ten horns which thou ſaweſt upon the beaſt, theſe ſhall hate the whore, and ſhall make her deſolate and naked, and ſhall eat her fleſh, and burn her with fire.

17 For God hath put in their hearts to fulfil his will, and to agree, and give their kingdom unto the beaſt, until the words of God ſhall be fulfilled.

18 And the woman which thou ſaweſt is that great city, which reigneth over the kings of the earth.

CHAP. XVIII.

The fall of Babylon.

AND after theſe things I ſaw another angel come down from heaven, having great power; and the earth was lightened with his glory.

2 And he cried mightily with a ſtrong voice, ſaying, Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils, and the hold of every foul ſpirit, and a cage of every unclean and hateful bird.

3 For all nations have drunk of the wine of the wrath of her fornication, and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich through the abundance of her delicacies.

4 And I heard another voice from heaven, ſaying, Come out of her, my people, that ye be not partakers of her ſins, and that ye receive not of her plagues.

5 For her ſins have reached unto heaven, and God hath remembered her iniquities.

6 Reward her even as ſhe rewarded you, and double unto her double according to her works: in the cup which ſhe hath filled fill to her double.

7 How much ſhe hath glorified herſelf, and lived deliciouſly, ſo much torment and ſorrow give her: for ſhe ſaith in her heart, I ſit a queen, and am no widow, and ſhall ſee no ſorrow.

8 Therefore ſhall her plagues come in one day, death, and mourning, and famine; and ſhe

ſhe ſhall be utterly burned with
fire: for ſtrong *is* the Lord God
who judgeth her.

9 And the kings of the
earth, who have committed
fornication and lived deli-
ciouſly with her, ſhall bewail
her, and lament for her, when
they ſhall ſee the ſmoke of her
burning,

10 Standing afar off for the
fear of her torment, ſaying,
Alas, alas that great city Baby-
lon, that mighty city! for in one
hour is thy judgement come.

11 And the merchants of the
earth ſhall weep and mourn
over her; for no man buyeth
their merchandiſe any more:

12 The merchandiſe of gold,
and ſilver, and precious ſtones,
and of pearls, and fine linen,
and purple, and ſilk, and ſcar-
let, and all thyine wood, and
all manner veſſels of ivory,
and all manner veſſels of moſt
precious wood, and of braſs,
and iron, and marble,

13 And cinnamon, and
odours, and ointments, and
frankincenſe, and wine, and
oil, and fine flour, and wheat,
and beaſts, and ſheep, and
horſes, and chariots, and ſlaves,
and ſouls of men.

14 And the fruits that thy
ſoul luſted after are departed
from thee, and all things which
were dainty and goodly are
departed from thee, and thou
ſhalt find them no more at all.

15 The merchants of theſe
things, which were made rich
by her, ſhall ſtand afar off for
the fear of her torment, weep-
ing and wailing,

16 And ſaying, Alas, alas
that great city, that was cloth-
ed in fine linen, and purple,
and ſcarlet, and decked with
gold, and precious ſtones, and
pearls!

17 For in one hour ſo great
riches is come to nought. And
every ſhip maſter, and all the
company in ſhips, and ſailors,
and as many as trade by ſea,
ſtood afar off,

18 And cried, when they ſaw
the ſmoke of her burning, ſay-
ing, What *city is* like unto this
great city!

19 And they caſt duſt on their
heads, and cried, weeping and
wailing, ſaying, Alas, alas that
great city, wherein were made
rich all that had ſhips in the
ſea by reaſon of her coſtlineſs!
for in one hour is ſhe made de-
ſolate.

20 Rejoice over her, *thou*
heaven, and *ye* holy apoſtles
and prophets; for God hath
avenged you on her.

21 And a mighty angel took
up a ſtone, like a great milſtone,
and caſt *it* into the ſea, ſaying,
Thus with violence ſhall that
great city Babylon be thrown
down, and ſhall be found no
more at all.

22 And the voice of harpers,
and muſicians, and of pipers,
and trumpeters, ſhall be heard
no more at all in thee; and no
craftſman, of whatſoever craft
he be, ſhall be found any more
in thee; and the ſound of a
milſtone ſhall be heard no more
at all in thee;

23 And the light of a candle
ſhall ſhine no more at all in
thee; and the voice of the
bridegroom and of the bride
ſhall be heard no more at all in
thee: for thy merchants were
the great men of the earth;
for by thy ſorceries were all
nations deceived.

24 And in her was found the
blood

blood of prophets, and of ſaints,
and of all that were ſlain upon
the earth.

C H A P. XIX.

The marriage of the Lamb.

AND after theſe things I
heard a great voice of
much people in heaven, ſaying,
Alleluia; Salvation, and glory,
and honour, and power, unto
the Lord our God:
2 For true and righteous *are*
his judgements; for he hath
judged the great whore, which
did corrupt the earth with her
fornication, and hath avenged
the blood of his ſervants at her
hand.
3 And again they ſaid, Alleluia.
And her ſmoke roſe up
for ever and ever.
4 And the four and twenty
elders and the four beaſts fell
down and worſhipped God that
ſat on the throne, ſaying,
Amen; Alleluia.
5 And a voice came out of
the throne, ſaying, Praiſe our
God, all ye his ſervants, and ye
that fear him, both ſmall and
great.
6 And I heard as it were the
voice of a great multitude, and
as the voice of many waters,
and as the voice of mighty
thunderings, ſaying, Alleluia:
for the Lord God omnipotent
reigneth.
7 Let us be glad and rejoice,
and give honour to him: for
the marriage of the Lamb is
come, and his wife hath made
herſelf ready.
8 And to her was granted
that ſhe ſhould be arrayed in
fine linen, clean and white:
for the fine linen is the righteouſneſs
of ſaints.
9 And he ſaith unto me,
Write, Bleſſed *are* they which
are called unto the marriage
ſupper of the Lamb. And he
ſaith unto me, Theſe are the
true ſayings of God.
10 ¶ And I fell at his feet to
worſhip him. And he ſaid unto
me, See *thou do it* not: I am thy
fellowſervant, and of thy brethren
that have the teſtimony
of Jeſus. Worſhip God: for
the teſtimony of Jeſus is the
ſpirit of prophecy.
11 And I ſaw heaven opened,
and, behold, a white horſe;
and he that ſat upon him *was*
called Faithful and True, and
in righteouſneſs he doth judge
and make war.
12 His eyes *were* as a flame of
fire, and on his head *were* many
crowns: and he had a name
written, that no man knew,
but he himſelf.
13 And he *was* clothed with
a veſture dipped in blood: and
his name is called, The Word
of God.
14 And the armies *which*
were in heaven followed him
upon white horſes, clothed in
fine linen, white and clean.
15 And out of his mouth
goeth a ſharp ſword, that with
it he ſhould ſmite the nations:
and he ſhall rule them with
a rod of iron: and he treadeth
the wineprefs of the fierceneſs
and wrath of Almighty God.
16 And he hath on *his* veſture
and on his thigh a name
written, KING OF KINGS,
AND LORD OF LORDS.
17 ¶ And I ſaw an angel
ſtanding in the ſun; and he
cried with a loud voice, ſaying
to all the fowls that fly in the
midſt of heaven, Come, and
gather yourſelves together unto
the ſupper of the great
God;

18 That

18 That ye may eat the fleſh of kings, and the fleſh of captains, and the fleſh of mighty men, and the fleſh of horſes, and of them that ſit on them, and the fleſh of all *men, both* free and bond, both ſmall and great.

19 And I ſaw the beaſt, and the kings of the earth, and their armies, gathered together to make war againſt him that ſat on the horſe, and againſt his army.

20 And the beaſt was taken, and with him the falſe prophet that wrought miracles before him, with which he deceived them that had received the mark of the beaſt, and them that worſhipped his image: theſe both were caſt alive into a lake of fire burning with brimſtone.

21 And the remnant were ſlain with the ſword of him that ſat upon the horſe, which *ſword* proceeded out of his mouth: and all the fowls were filled with their fleſh.

CHAP. XX.

Firſt and laſt reſurrection.

AND I ſaw an angel come down from heaven, having the key of the bottomleſs pit, and a great chain in his hand.

2 ¶ And he laid hold on the dragon, that old ſerpent, which is the Devil, and Satan, and bound him a thouſand years,

3 And caſt him into the bottomleſs pit, and ſhut him up, and ſet a ſeal upon him, that he ſhould deceive the nations no more, till the thouſand years ſhould be fulfilled: and after that he muſt be looſed a little ſeaſon.

4 And I ſaw thrones, and they ſat upon them, and judgement was given unto them: and *I ſaw* the ſouls of them that were beheaded for the witneſs of Jeſus, and for the word of God, and which had not worſhipped the beaſt, neither his image, neither had received *his* mark upon their foreheads, or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Chriſt a thouſand years.

5 ¶ But the reſt of the dead lived not again until the thouſand years were finiſhed. This *is* the firſt reſurrection.

6 ¶ Bleſſed and holy *is* he that hath part in the firſt reſurrection: on ſuch the ſecond death hath no power, but they ſhall be prieſts of God and of Chriſt, and ſhall reign with him a thouſand years.

7 And when the thouſand years are expired, Satan ſhall be looſed out of his priſon,

8 ¶ And ſhall go out to deceive the nations which are in the four quarters of the earth, Gog and Magog, to gather them together to battle: the number of whom *is* as the ſand of the ſea.

9 And they went up on the breadth of the earth, and compaſſed the camp of the ſaints about, and the beloved city: and fire came down from God out of heaven, and devoured them.

10 ¶ And the devil that deceived them was caſt into the lake of fire and brimſtone, where the beaſt and the falſe prophet *are*, and ſhall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.

11 And I ſaw a great white throne, and him that ſat on it, from whoſe face the earth and the heaven fled away; and there was found no place for them.

12 And

12 ¶ And I ſaw the dead, ſmall and great, ſtand before God; and the books were opened: and another book was opened, which is *the book* of life: and the dead were judged out of thoſe things which were written in the books, according to their works.

13 And the ſea gave up the dead which were in it; and death and hell delivered up the dead which were in them: and they were judged every man according to their works.

14 And death and hell were caſt into the lake of fire. This is the ſecond death.

15 And whoſoever was not found written in the book of life was caſt into the lake of fire.

CHAP. XXI.

New Jeruſalem deſcribed.

AND I ſaw a new heaven and a new earth: for the firſt heaven and the firſt earth were paſſed away; and there was no more ſea.

2 And I John ſaw the holy city, new Jeruſalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her huſband.

3 And I heard a great voice out of heaven, ſaying, Behold, the tabernacle of God *is* with men, and he will dwell with them, and they ſhall be his people, and God himſelf ſhall be with them, *and be* their God.

4 And God ſhall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there ſhall be no more death, neither ſorrow, nor crying, neither ſhall there be any more pain, for the former things are paſſed away.

5 And he that ſat upon the throne ſaid, Behold, I make all things new. And he ſaid unto me, Write: for theſe words are true and faithful.

6 And he ſaid unto me, It is done. I am Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. I will give unto him that is athirſt of the fountain of the water of life freely.

7 He that overcometh ſhall inherit all things: and I will be his God, and he ſhall be my ſon.

8 But the fearful, and unbelieving, and the abominable, and murderers, and whoremongers, and ſorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, ſhall have their part in the lake which burneth with fire and brimſtone; which is the ſecond death.

9 And there came unto me one of the ſeven angels which had the ſeven vials full of the ſeven laſt plagues, and talked with me, ſaying, Come hither, I will ſhew thee the bride, the Lamb's wife.

10 ¶ And he carried me away in the ſpirit to a great and high mountain, and ſhewed me that great city, the holy Jeruſalem, deſcending out of heaven from God,

11 Having the glory of God: and her light *was* like unto a ſtone moſt precious, even like a jaſper ſtone, clear as cryſtal;

12 And had a wall great and high, *and* had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are *the names* of the twelve tribes of the children of Iſrael:

13 On the eaſt three gates; on the north three gates; on the ſouth three gates; and on the weſt three gates.

14 And

14 And the wall of the city had twelve foundations, and in them the names of the twelve apoſtles of the Lamb.

15 And he that talked with me had a golden reed to meaſure the city, and the gates thereof, and the wall thereof.

16 And the city lieth four-ſquare, and the length is as large as the breadth: and he meaſured the city with the reed, twelve thouſand furlongs. The length and the breadth and the height of it are equal.

17 And he meaſured the wall thereof, an hundred *and* forty *and* four cubits, *according to* the meaſure of a man, that is, of the angel.

18 And the building of the wall of it was *of* jaſper: and the city *was* pure gold, like unto clear glaſs.

19 And the foundations of the wall of the city *were* garniſhed with all manner of precious ſtones. The firſt foundation *was* jaſper; the ſecond, ſapphire; the third, a chalcedony; the fourth, an emerald;

20 The fifth, ſardonyx; the ſixth, ſardius; the ſeventh, chryſolite; the eighth, beryl; the ninth, a topaz; the tenth, a chryſopraſus; the eleventh, a jacinth; the twelfth, an amethyſt.

21 And the twelve gates *were* twelve pearls; every ſeveral gate was of one pearl: and the ſtreet of the city *was* pure gold, as it were tranſparent glaſs.

22 And I ſaw no temple therein: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb are the temple of it.

23 ¶ And the city had no need of the ſun, neither of the moon, to ſhine in it: for the glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb *is* the light thereof.

24 ¶ And the nations of them which are ſaved ſhall walk in the light of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory and honour into it.

25 And the gates of it ſhall not be ſhut at all by day: for there ſhall be no night there.

26 And they ſhall bring the glory and honour of the nations into it.

27 And there ſhall in no wiſe enter into it any thing that defileth, neither *whatſoever* worketh abomination, or *maketh* a lie: but they which are written in the Lamb's book of life.

CHAP. XXII.

The water and tree of life.

AND he ſhewed me a pure river of water of life, clear as cryſtal, proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb.

2 ¶ In the midſt of the ſtreet of it, and on either ſide of the river, *was there* the tree of life, which bare twelve *manner of* fruits, *and* yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree *were* for the healing of the nations.

3 And there ſhall be no more curſe: but the throne of God and of the Lamb ſhall be in it; and his ſervants ſhall ſerve him:

4 And they ſhall ſee his face; and his name *ſhall be* in their foreheads.

5 ¶ And there ſhall be no night there; and they need no candle, neither light of the ſun; for the Lord God giveth them light: and they ſhall reign for ever and ever.

6 And he ſaid unto me, Theſe

Theſe ſayings *are* faithful and
true: and the Lord God of
the holy prophets ſent his an-
gel to ſhew unto his ſervants
the things which muſt ſhortly
be done.
7 Behold, I come quickly:
bleſſed *is* he that keepeth the
ſayings of the prophecy of this
book.
8 And I John ſaw theſe things,
and heard *them*. And when I
had heard and ſeen, I fell down
to worſhip before the feet of
the angel which ſhewed me
theſe things.
9 ¶ Then ſaith he unto me,
See *thou do it* not: for I am
thy fellowſervant, and of thy
brethren the prophets, and of
them which keep the ſayings
of this book. Worſhip God.
10 And he ſaith unto me,
Seal not the ſayings of the pro-
phecy of this book: for the
time is at hand.
11 He that is unjuſt, let him
be unjuſt ſtill: and he which is
filthy, let him be filthy ſtill:
and he that is righteous, let
him be righteous ſtill: and he
that is holy, let him be holy ſtill.
12 And, behold, I come
quickly; and my reward *is* with
me, to give every man accord-
ing as his work ſhall be.
13 I am Alpha and Omega,
the beginning and the end, the
firſt and the laſt.
14 Bleſſed *are* they that do
his commandments, that they
may have right to the tree of
life, and may enter in through
the gates into the city.
15 For without *are* dogs, and
ſorcerers, and whoremongers,
and murderers, and idolaters,
and whoſoever loveth and
maketh a lie.
16 I Jeſus have ſent mine
angel to teſtify unto you theſe
things in the churches. I am
the root and the offspring of
David, *and* the bright and
morning ſtar.
17 And the Spirit and the
bride ſay, Come. And let him
that heareth ſay, Come. And
let him that is athirſt come:
and whoſoever will, let him
take the water of life freely.
18 ¶ For I teſtify unto every
man that heareth the words of
the prophecy of this book, If
any man ſhall add unto theſe
things, God ſhall add unto him
the plagues that are written
in this book:
19 And if any man ſhall take
away from the words of the book
of this prophecy, God ſhall take
away his part out of the book
of life, and out of the holy
city, and *from* the things which
are written in this book.
20 He which teſtifieth theſe
things ſaith, Surely I come
quickly. Amen. Even ſo, come
Lord Jeſus.
21 The grace of our Lord
Jeſus Chriſt *be* with you all.
Amen.